# WAR PENSIONS
## AND ALLOWANCES

SIGILLVM · VNIVERSITATIS · CALIFORNIENSIS
FIAT LVX
MDCCCLXVIII
EX LIBRIS

R208

# WAR PENSIONS AND ALLOWANCES

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/thewarpensionsallow00hoggrich

# War Pensions and Allowances

BY

J. M. HOGGE, M.P.

AND

T. H. GARSIDE

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

HODDER AND STOUGHTON

LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

MCMXVIII

U.B375
S'CH6

# PREFACE

THE useful history of British War Pensions dates from January 30, 1915, when the Special Report from the Select Committee on Naval and Military Services was published as a White Paper. The scale of pensions set out in that memorandum was rejected by the House of Commons and a Committee was elected to draw up another. It reported on April 14, 1915. The scheme which it adumbrated remained in force until the New Warrants were published. There was also set up a Statutory Committee to deal with circumstances outside the range of the Select Committee's scheme.

Eventually an agitation arose for unification, resulting in the creation of a Ministry of Pensions, since when the Statutory Committee has also been incorporated as the Special Grants Committee of the Ministry.

Improvements are still being made upon the scheme of award and administration of pensions, but there is much to be done yet before the nation can say that it has receipted the account rendered to it in the devotion of its fighting men and their dependants.

This volume is an attempt to place the public in possession of the facts which will enable them to find their way through the intricacies of the Warrants, Orders and Instructions.

We desire to express our appreciation of the valuable assistance given to us by Miss Gladys Ralston, especially in the preparation of the index.

J. M. HOGGE.
T. H. GARSIDE.

387154

# CONTENTS


| | PAGE |
|---|---|
| PREFACE | 5 |
| CONTENTS | 7 |
| INTRODUCTION | 9 |
| NEEDED REFORMS | 16 |
| SEPARATION ALLOWANCES: ARMY—WIVES | 31 |
| SEPARATION ALLOWANCES: DEPENDANTS | 67 |
| SEPARATION ALLOWANCES: NAVY | 80 |
| ARMY PENSIONS, ETC. | 92 |
| NAVAL AND AUXILIARY PENSIONS, ETC. | 155 |
| COLONIAL PENSIONS, ETC. | 201 |
| NURSES, ETC. | 226 |
| SPECIAL ALLOWANCES | 233 |
| CIVIL LIABILITIES, GRANTS AND SUPPLEMENTARY ALLOWANCES | 247 |
| TREATMENT AND TRAINING | 276 |
| INSURANCE | 303 |
| HOSPITAL STOPPAGES AND DEDUCTIONS | 321 |
| PAY, SPECIAL RATES, ETC. | 329 |
| METHOD OF DEALING WITH MEN ENLISTED AT SPECIAL RATES OF PAY | 341 |
| MUNITION WORKERS, | 344 |

PAGE

Bounties; N.R. and other Reserve Units. . . 348

Retentions and Re-engagements . . . . 372

Medals and Distinctions . . . . . 379

War Legislation and Special Regulations . . 386

War Organization and Committees . . . . 401

Paymasters, etc. . . . . 419

Appendix I: The Royal Air Force . . . . 429

Appendix II: The Amended Warrant . . . 431

Appendix III . . . . . 438

Appendix IV . . . . . 440

Appendix V . . . . . 443

Appendix VI . . . . . 445

Appendix VII . . . . . 449

Index . . . . . 453

# INTRODUCTION

**Chelsea.** State grants in aid of disabled soldiers date from the reign of William III. A temporary Act was passed in the year 1662, under the terms of which provision was made for the relief of wounded soldiers who had served in the wars of Charles I and II. This measure, however, threw the burden of provision upon the Local Poor Rate, an incidence that has not been materially altered even to-day.

The necessity for some permanent means of relief and support became so strikingly apparent and finally urgent in the days of the Stuarts, to which there were no doubt many contributory causes, that at length the erection of a hospital at Chelsea was decided upon, and the foundation stone was laid on March 12, 1682. The structure was erected upon an estate vested in the Crown, but the cost of the building and its upkeep was met by a deduction from the pay of every soldier, a practice that was only discontinued in the year 1847.

**The Chelsea Commissioners.** The Chelsea Commissioners are appointed by the Crown, and the Board by which its affairs are managed was first constituted by patent under the seal of William and Mary, March 3, 1691.

The Commissioners were given Statutory authority in 1754, but the general law under which they act is set forth in George IV. c. 16, which 'consolidated the law, and placed the payment of pensions, allowances, and relief granted to disabled, invalid, and discharged soldiers—including the out-pensioners of Kilmainham—under the management, control and authority of the Chelsea

Commissioners, and empowered them to make rules and regulations thereto " (Clode, v. 2, 281).

**The Chelsea Pensioners.** When first the Hospital at Chelsea was established, the intention was to house all soldiers placed upon pension within its walls, and maintain them out of poundage: the other sources of income were added later, but the number increased so rapidly and to such proportions that this was found to be impossible.

In the year 1689 there were 579 men on the pension list, but as the Hospital could only accommodate 472, the remainder had to be placed in out-quarters, and provided for as out-pensioners (Clode, v. 2, p. 277). Some idea of the growth of the pension list may be gathered from the fact that in 1689 the cost was £6,087 17*s.* 11*d.*, while in the year 1713 it had risen to £61,464 5*s.* 7*d.* This sum was for out-pensioners alone. In the latter year a flat rate of pension was adopted of fivepence per day, except in the case of ' letter men,' that is, serjeants of the Army appointed by the Commissioners (Clode, v. 2, p. 279).

The Army Council and the Chelsea Commissioners act in unison, as will be apparent from a clause in the Royal Pay Warrant for 1914, which states that ' it shall rest with our Commissioners of Chelsea to recommend for the approval of our Army Council ' (Par. 1210). And again, ' Our Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital may, with the consent of our Army Council ' (Par. 1214).

**The Ministry of Pensions.** Until the passage of the Ministry of Pensions Act, 1916 (6-7 Geo. V.) the responsibility for the issue of pensions rested entirely with the Chelsea Commissioners, which Body was appointed by the Crown. This Act transferred to the Ministry of Pensions—

(*a*) ' The Powers and Duties of the Admiralty with respect to Pensions and Grants to persons who had served as officers or men and to their widows, children, and other dependants, and to persons who have been employed in the nursing service of any of H.M. Naval Forces other than Service pensions, so far as such Pensions and Grants are payable out of funds provided by Parliament and not

provided for exclusively for the purpose of Greenwich Hospital.

(*b*) 'The Powers and Duties of the Commissioners of the Royal Hospital for soldiers at Chelsea with respect to the grant and administration of disability pensions and grants other than "in" pensions.

(*c*) 'The Powers and Duties of the Army Council and the Secretary of State for the War Department with respect to Pensions and Grants to persons who have served as officers or soldiers and to their widows, children and other dependants, and to persons who have been employed in the nursing service of any of H.M. Military Forces other than Service pensions.'

'Service pension' is defined by the 'Act' as meaning 'any pension or award in respect to age, length of service or of special service or attached to any medal or other decoration whether payable to persons who have been officers or men or their widows, children or other dependants,' and the expression 'pension' in relation to officers other than Naval and Marine officers means 'retired pay.' The authority then for the issue of Pensions rests entirely with the Ministry of Pensions with the limitations as set forth in the Act quoted.

**The Statutory Committee.** This body was constituted by the Naval and Military War Pensions, etc., Act, 1915 (5 and 6 George V. c. 83).

The general object of the Act was to make certain provisions 'relating to pensions, grants and allowances made in respect of the present war to officers and men in the Naval and Military services of His Majesty, and their wives, children and other dependants, and the care of officers and men disabled in consequence of the present war.'

The functions of the Committee as set forth in the Act included the payment 'out of funds at their disposal and in accordance with regulations framed by them to supplement pensions and grants and separation allowances payable out of public funds where, owing to the exceptional circumstances of the case, the amount payable out of the public funds seems to them inadequate; out of

funds at their disposal to make grants or allowances in cases where no separation allowances or pensions are payable out of public funds.'

It is provided also that the Committee shall make provision for the care of disabled officers and men after they have left the service, including provision for their health, training and employment; make grants in special cases for the purpose of enabling widows, children and other dependants of deceased officers and men to obtain training and employment; decide any question of fact on the determination of which the amount of a pension or grant payable out of public funds to a dependant, other than a widow or child, may depend; and out of funds at their disposal to make advances on account of pensions or grants or separation allowances due to any persons out of public funds during any interval before the payment thereof actually commences, or during which the payment thereof has been accidentally interrupted.

**The Local Committees.** Local Committees are established in certain counties and county boroughs, which have sub-committees for any special purpose or area.

The functions of these Local Committees are subject to the authority and sanction of the Central Committee. The Local body may inquire into any case, collect and furnish information, distribute funds, etc., on behalf of the Central authority; beyond this its powers are strictly limited.

**Joint Committees.** The Ministry of Pensions on May 19, 1917, suggested the formation of Joint Committees in accordance with Section 2 (8) of the Naval and Military War Pensions, etc., Act, 1915.

The model scheme suggested requires the representation of each constituent Local Committee, and also representation of labour and employers, of the medical profession and of technical instruction in such proportion to the total membership as may be determined.

The functions of the Joint Committee are—

'To ascertain the institutions and other facilities existing within the area to which discharged disabled men may be sent for treatment or training.

'To furnish Local Committees within their area with information as to such institutions or facilities.

'To ascertain the needs for additional institutions or facilities for treatment within their area, and to make representations to the proper Local Authorities or other bodies.

'To concert schemes of training for industries special to their area, and for this purpose to consult any Trade Organization, or Association of Employers, or Local Education Authorities, with a view to the provision of suitable training and the subsequent employment of the men.

'To make arrangements for treatment and training when so requested by any Local Committee within the area of the Joint Committee.

'To exercise any other powers which may by resolution be delegated to them from time to time by their constituent Local Committees, e.g., appointment of hospital visitors, arrangements for housing of persons under treatment or training away from their homes, etc.'

**The Special Grants Committee.** The Naval and Military War Pensions, etc. (Transfer of Powers) Act simply transfers the powers and functions of the Statutory Committee to a Special Grants Committee, acting directly under the authority and jurisdiction of the Ministry of Pensions; as a matter of fact, the New Committee is simply the Statutory Committee under another name.

The functions of the Local Committees with respect to the alternative pension scheme set up in Article 3 of the New Royal Pay Warrant are detailed in special instructions issued by the Ministry of Pensions. It is the duty of the Local Committee to refer any application for an alternative pension to the Inquiry Officer, who must report to the Committee, who shall either decide upon the application or refer it to the Ministry of Pensions.

The Local Committee may offer treatment or training, as the case may be, to the applicant, and if not accepted, shall refer the case to the Ministry of Pensions, and in arriving at a decision, 'shall in all suitable cases, where an applicant is in, or is suited for employment, consult the

Advisory Wages Board, if such a board has been constituted in their area, and in all other cases shall consult persons representing the occupation in which the person is or will be engaged ' (Instructions for the Assessment of Alternative Pensions, p. 16).

The award is made in all cases by the Ministry of Pensions.

With regard to treatment or training given at the expense of the Ministry of Pensions, all arrangements are referred to and are under the control of the Disablement Sub-Committee, appointed by the Local Committee, or failing such appointment, of the Local Committee directly.

The Local Committee in all cases determines the period for which treatment may be given in the first instance, but if the period is likely to exceed six months, the case must be referred to the Minister of Pensions. No payment may be made by the Local Committee for treatment not sanctioned by it.

It will be apparent from the foregoing that the Local Committees are simply advisory and consultative bodies with no power of initiative or determination except within strictly defined limits.

In the South African War privates received as much as 2*s*. a day for partial disablement, and 2*s*. 6*d*. a day for total disablement. In 1901 the grant of pensions was extended to the widows and children of N.C.O.'s and men dying through War service within twelve months of their removal from duty. In 1903 cases of death from injury were included. The pensions ranged according to rank from 5*s*. to 10*s*. weekly for widows and 1*s*. 6*d*. to 2*s*. for each child. Various voluntary funds existed, but the State made no attempt to replace disabled soldiers in civil life, or even to give them pensions enabling them to live under something like their previous conditions.

**The Present War.** Early in the autumn of 1914, a Cabinet Committee drew up a new scale of separation allowances and pensions. Parliament thought these proposals inadequate, and in November appointed a Select Committee, under Mr. Lloyd George, to make

further recommendations. Their proposals were adopted in a Royal Warrant, May 21, 1915.

In November, 1915, Parliament passed the Naval and Military War Pensions Act. In this measure the State recognized for the first time its responsibility for the treatment and care of discharged soldiers. This duty was delegated to the Statutory Committee of the Royal Patriotic Fund, which also issued supplementary grants voluntarily provided.

**The Present Administration.** On January 10, 1917, a new scale of increased separation allowance was published, and on February 28, the draft of a new Royal Warrant increasing the scale of pensions was issued.

During March the House of Commons had before it on several days (*a*) the new Royal Warrant and Order in Council, and (*b*) the War Pensions Bill, which mainly provides for the administrative expenses of Local Committees. The measures establish a pensions scheme which is spoken of by the Government's principal critics in these matters as "a considerable advance."

The Naval and Military War Pensions (Transfer of Powers) Bill was read a third time on July 17. This measure provided for the dissolution of the Statutory Committee and the apportionment of the duties of that body between the Ministry of Pensions and the Special Grants Committee, its duty being to supplement pensions, etc., and £500,000 has been allotted to it.

## NEEDED REFORMS

**The New Pay Warrant** is in many respects a vast improvement upon its predecessor.

The amendment that has been made was long overdue, and is only the first instalment of common justice and simple equity to the service power of the country.

With respect to the increase in the amount of Awards, it will be readily admitted that they were necessary.

Speaking of the scale of pensions in force at the beginning of the War, Major-General Crutchley, Lieut.-Governor of the Chelsea Hospital, very pointedly remarks that ' during the past fifty years the standard of comfort among the general population has undoubtedly risen, and the purchasing power of money has declined. The rates of pension, therefore, do not represent to-day a benefit equivalent to that provided when the scale was fixed in 1864.'

No one with the least knowledge of the subject will attempt to question this judgment, and the new scale, though in many respects inadequate, may be taken as an attempt to meet the very obvious inequity, and, at the same time, a recognition of the improved social conditions of the period in which we live.

**The New Warrant** has gone a step farther. Hitherto pensions have been granted to and for the man himself, that is to say he has been the only person whose claims have been taken into consideration, the necessities of his family and dependants were conditional upon him. This is the case to-day to a degree, but, on the other hand, the family and dependants of the man are of themselves considered, by the fact of the services of the man, entitled

to be taken into account. The pension of to-day is intended to embrace not only the man himself within its benefits, but also his dependants, no matter the degree of relationship, and to provide for his and their future, to the extent which might perhaps have been realized had he lived, or, if living, retained the full possession of his powers and faculties.

To ensure this is the clear duty of the nation, and the nation has made up its mind that, no matter where the money comes from, it must and shall be provided in amount sufficient to secure to the disabled soldier and his dependants, and to the dependants of our glorious dead, an honourable livelihood, free from every suspicion or taint of charity. This is the least the nation can do. This is our common heritage. Mr. Bonar Law has expressed the mind of the people by saying, 'However great may be the demands caused by the War on the financial resources of the country, the men who are giving up their lives in her service, and their dependants, come first, . . . in what we give them there must be no suggestion that we are not treating them really in a way that the heart and conscience of the country will regard as just and generous' (House of Commons, May 18, 1915).

If this means anything at all, it is that the nation is under an obligation which cannot be denied or whittled away, but which must be carried willingly and cheerfully so long as it exists, no matter the weight of the burden.

There can be, if this language expresses the mind of the nation, no insuperable difficulty to the provision of the funds required, and these as set forth by Sir Alfred Watson make up a huge total. Sir Alfred estimates that the maximum annual charge in 1918–19, or in the year following, should the war be prolonged, will be £25,000,000, made up as follows—

| | £ |
|---|---|
| To disabled men . . . . . | 14,100,000 |
| To widows and orphans. . . . . | 8,200,000 |
| To other dependants . . . . . | 2,700,000 |

In the following year the charge will be £23,000,000, and in future years the cost will gradually diminish.

The estimated capital value of the liability on a 4 per cent. basis is £396,000,000—

| | £ |
|---|---|
| To disabled men . . . . . | 225,000,000 |
| To widows and orphans . . . | 121,000,000 |
| To other dependants . . . . | 50,000,000 |

**The New Proposals** represent an increase of liability over that of the present scale of £6,500,000 a year at the maximum, or an additional capital value of £130,000,000. To this must be added at least another £10,000,000 per annum for the first few years after the War, as disablement gratuities issuable to men discharged as medically unfit for service, 'such unfitness being neither attributable to nor aggravated by Military service.'

It is as well to inquire at once: What is the purpose of pensions? Has it in any measure been achieved? Can it be achieved by the Authorized Scale of Awards under the Regulations which govern their issue?

The inquiry is pertinent, for we are even now learning that we must not make of the men who come back broken a class of idlers.

The necessity for self-support is hammered into the heart and brain of the helpless indigent, and they are fed *ad nauseam* with platitudes about a dinner of herbs earned by the sweat of the brow.

The purposes of pensions has been stated in clear and concise terms.

With regard to the pensions issuable to widows and other dependants, the Select Committee upon Naval and Military services (Pensions and Grants) held the view that the purpose of pensions and allowances should be 'to secure to the dependants, so far as may be possible, approximately the benefit which they received from the deceased during his lifetime, subject to the proviso that the amount awarded shall not in the case of any dependant exceed the amount of the widow's pension.' The equity of the principle involved is clear from the proviso stated.

The Committee was further of the opinion that pensions to dependants cannot be settled by fixed rules, but must, to a large extent, be dealt with on the merits of each

individual case. With regard to widows' pensions, a fixed scale was decided upon, as were the rates for children, including illegitimate and motherless children, and for widows on re-marriage.

It is utterly impossible in the vast majority of cases to secure to a dependant even approximately the benefit lost by the death of the man in respect of whom the pension is issued; this is indisputable. It is simply trifling with the nation to attempt to impose upon its credulity the idea that the scale awards can begin to approximate the loss.

**The Old Scale** was admittedly inadequate, as is proved by the increased awards of the New Scale. These will, however, fail to meet the need, and primarily because the issue of pension is a matter of bounty and not of right, and is contingent upon circumstances which may have only a remote relationship to the facts of the case. The New Royal Warrant will fail to meet the objective of pension issue simply because of the arbitrariness of the authority by which it is administered.

**There are three outstanding requirements** requisite in the award and issue of pensions—

1. The necessity for a statutory right on the part of every service man.

2. The necessity for Medical Courts of Appeal, dissociated from Army Authority; and—

3. The recognition of a fixed principle by which the adequacy of pensions may be determined.

**The question as to the legal right of a soldier or sailor** to a pension was first mooted in the year 1806, when Mr. Wyndham introduced a measure into the House of Commons, the purpose of which was to make better provision for soldiers by 'securing to invalid, disabled and discharged soldiers such pensions and allowances as they might become entitled to by reason of their service, or they having become invalid or disabled.' The measure further provided that 'Every soldier . . . should become legally entitled to receive such pension, allowance or relief.' Unfortunately, this legislation was repealed in the year 1826.

Mr. Wyndham's object was twofold: first to relieve the soldier from dependence upon the bounty of the Crown, confirmed by the Vote of Supply in Parliament; and in the second place, to protect him from the caprice of his superior officers. These purposes were no doubt achieved by Mr. Wyndham's Bill, but its misuse made its repeal necessary. The position to-day is that pensions and allowances are granted of the grace and bounty of the Crown. The soldier and sailor have no legal right to them; they are granted under Regulations issued in the Royal Warrant, and these are the sole authority upon which the Ministry of Pensions acts.

At the present time, then, all 'Pensions and Gratuities are not paid or continued as a matter of right, but are granted in the discretion of the Army Council, having in view the soldier's service, and merit of applicants.'

Article 789 of the Pay Warrant of 1914 is also very definite. It states that 'a pension to the widow of a deceased Warrant Officer shall not be claimed as a matter of right; it shall not be granted when applicant is shown to be unworthy of our Royal favour; nor shall it be granted unless the Warrant Officer's service has been such as, in the opinion of our Army Council, to justify the Award.'

Article 657, which article is retained in the New Warrant, specifies that 'a pension to the widow or other relation of a deceased officer shall not be claimed as a right.' And Article 1244 of the same Warrant, which is also retained in the New Warrant, provides that 'pension to the widows and children of soldiers shall not be given as a reward of service, and subject to the condition hereafter set forth, they shall not be claimed as a right.'

It will be clear from the above, that any soldier or sailor is entirely in the hands of the Ministry of Pensions. He has no Court of Appeal, and can, even if appeal be granted, only state his case for re-investigation to the body against whose decision he is appealing.

**The Royal Pay Warrant of 1914** is the basis upon which the structure of the existing pension arrangement rests, and although certain well-defined amendments have been

made in the regulations governing specific cases, the Authority of the Warrant remains untouched. This will be evident from Clause 25 of the Draft laid before Parliament, February 26, 1917 (Cd. 8485), which says—

'The provisions enumerated in the Second Schedule to this Our Warrant for the Pay, etc., of the Army, 1914, and of the subsequent Warrants specified, shall remain in force as regards pensions and grants on account of disablement or decease, except as modified herein, and by the substitution, so far as these pensions and grants are concerned, of Our Minister of Pensions for Our Army Council, and for Our Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital.

'The provisions of Our Warrants for the Pay, etc., of the Army, 1914, and of any of Our subsequent Warrants dealing with the disability pensions and with the pensions to the families and dependants of other soldiers than those dealt with in this Our Warrant shall remain in force pending the issue by us of any new Warrant in the matter, and nothing in this Our Warrant shall be held to affect the existing Warrants or Regulations in regard to service pensions or other grants the administration of which continues to be vested in Our Army Council, or in our Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital.'

The powers and duties of the Admiralty were transferred officially to the Ministry of Pensions on February 15, 1917, by an Order in Council bearing the date of February 6, 1917.

If further evidence is necessary to prove the absoluteness of the authority of the Pensions Minister it may be found in the preamble of the draft amendment of the New Warrant which is copied from the preamble of the Warrant of 1914, which, with the necessary changes in wording, is retained, and which sets forth very clearly that not only is the Pay Warrant the sole authority upon the matters to which it refers, but that the Minister of Pensions, having taken over the functions of the Army Council, is the sole administrator and interpreter of the Warrant and its provisions, and is empowered to issue such detailed instructions in reference thereto as may from time to time be necessary. Not only is the power

of issue in the hands of the Pensions Minister but power of variation rests absolutely with him and is specifically provided for in the Warrant.

The essential to adequate pensions and equity in their issue is the establishment of statutory title, for if a man has, while rendering service to the State, lost his life or has been rendered incapable or less capable of such support, his title and that of his dependants is indisputable. It is not a matter of bounty, but of right.

The State is under a distinct moral obligation to such a man and his dependants, which obligation cannot and must not be set aside, but which on the contrary should be recognized by statutory enactment. The obligation is not disputed at the moment. Everybody is willing and ready to recognize it; the country is bubbling over with its desire to give recognition. That, however, is neither sufficient nor is it desirable. Sentiment is a poor substitute for a legal status. The soldier is or is not a servant of the State as much as any other servant, whether he be Prime Minister or Judge upon the Bench. The difference is one of degree. It is the fact of service, no matter the character of such service, which creates the obligation.

It is this fact that the State persistently and illogically refuses to recognize by making its award an act of grace and not of right. If the pensions awarded may be accepted as tokens of the recognition of moral obligation, they are evidence either of the littleness of the service rendered or a density of conception as to its value. So far as this War is concerned at any rate the service rendered cannot be measured by words. The conception of the value of that service is yet an unknown quanitty, but if the present scale of pensions and the scope of their award is to be taken as a measurement of that conception, much remains to be done to awaken in the minds of the great mass of the people a keener sense of equity.

**The creation of a Ministry of Pensions** proves that the obligation has been recognized, and yet, as a matter of fact, there is no obligation, since the persons eligible have no status upon which to rest their claim; nor can they

enforce their claim, or secure redress if suffering is entailed by loss consequent upon neglect. They are bound hand and foot by regulations formulated by a department, administered and interpreted by the men who formulated them, and consequently any award that may be made cannot be in compliance with the terms of an obligation.

A civilian employee has a title to compensation in case of injury, for which the employer is responsible, and if the employee dies as a result of that injury, his dependants have a title to claim compensation. No such obligation rests upon the State as the employer of the sailor or soldier ; no such title rests with the sailor or soldier as the servant of the State.

It has been contended that the honour of service should not be measured in cash terms. That may or may not be true. Accepting it as a dictum it may with equal force be retorted that the honour of the State may be measured by its recognition of the men, women, and children who have by their services, given directly or indirectly, sustained such disability or loss as renders them incapable, or less capable, of self-maintenance.

It follows logically that if the right to pension be made statutory, all pensions must be provided by the State and be payable only from State funds. There can be no place for private benefactions and no account can be taken of charitable contributions. This is a matter not only of right but of necessity, as will be apparent from the following considerations : The soldier is degraded in the eyes of the nation, and consequently in his own, if he is made the recipient of public or private contributions towards his maintenance or welfare other than payments directly from State funds. Soldiers and sailors are the servants of the State. This cannot be disputed, nor is their relationship to the State affected by the fact that they are under Military rule and authority. If pensions for services rendered or disability incurred while rendering such services are a recognized institution, then the soldier and sailor are equally entitled to the payment of such pensions from State funds as any other servant

of the State. It is idle for Mr. Hayes Fisher to say that he cannot 'understand why a man should feel it honourable to live on money forced by taxation from people whether they live to pay it or not, but would feel it dishonourable to maintain himself by the voluntary offerings of those who were most anxious to pay something to help him' (House of Commons, August 8, 1916). If this is Mr. Hayes Fisher's honest conclusion, no exception can be taken to the application of it to pensioners upon the State funds of any and every character. It is to be feared, however, that the suggestion would not commend itself to many State dignitaries, nor is it palatable to the soldier or sailor who, in every respect, is, unless the utterances of public men during the past two years have been the veriest hypocrisy, more entitled to recognition than the more highly placed servants of the public.

No matter how unpleasant the word may be, we are attempting to provide for the fighting men of our nation and his dependants by charity. Nothing can possibly be more degrading and repugnant than the collections in aid of this and that fund; the placarding of trams with pitiful appeals to sentiment. These may seem to provide channels for the ostentatious display of patronage, but they are evidences of charity nevertheless, and there would be less ground for compunction in accepting the chilly provisions of the workhouse.

Perhaps the principal difficulty in assessing the amount of pension to be awarded lies in the medical reports. The procedure is set forth in Article 1189 of the Pay Warrant, which reads as follows—

'In no case shall a soldier be pensioned for disability until his case has been reported upon by some medical authority in addition to that of the officers in medical charge of the regiment, battalion, or corps to which he belongs. The Deputy-Director of Medical Services, or surgeon attached to the staff who has had the soldier under treatment at the general hospital and by whom the soldier shall be personally examined, shall state his professional opinion of the case for the guidance of our

Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital in deciding upon the claim to pension.'

The words 'Ministry of Pensions' is substituted for 'our Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital' in the new Warrant. This is of no importance, however, as it does not affect the procedure.

It will be apparent that the appellant for pension is entirely in the hands of the Army Medical Authorities, who comprise a class and a caste isolated and distinct from their civilian brethren of the scalpel. With no desire in the world to disparage this class, it is not difficult to conceive circumstances under which their judgment may be entirely wrong. The history of a man's case begins with the first attention it receives, and often accumulates voluminously, until when laid before the final Medical Board for the purposes of assessment, it becomes little more than a chapter of repetition. A senior officer may endorse the report of his junior, or he may refuse to endorse it. But an Army Medical Board examining a man's case in May is very likely to be guided and prejudiced by the report of a Medical Board held in October of the previous year. Again, it does not follow that Medical Boards are composed always of new men; that is to say, one man or two sitting on a Board in October, passing judgment upon the case of Private John Smith, may sit upon a Board in the following May and pass judgment upon the case. It is hardly likely that Dr. Brown in May will repudiate his verdict in October, and it is very probable that even if Dr. Brown does not sit upon the same Board, Dr. Smith, who is a colleague of Dr. Brown, may have some hesitancy in disputing Dr. Brown's judgment. The point is that there is no appeal against the judgment and decision of the Army Medical Authorities.

**Reference to Section 7,** sub-section 2, of the draft of the new Pay Warrant makes it clear that the procedure at present in vogue is to be continued. This sub-section reads: 'A soldier discharged as medically unfit for further service, such unfitness being neither attributable to nor aggravated by Military service.' Who should decide whether the condition is attributable to or has been

aggravated by Military service? If the Army Medical Authorities decide that it is not so attributable, and has not been so aggravated, the applicant for pension cannot appeal; he must accept the dictum as final.

**Section 9** points out that a man may be granted a pension if disabled owing to disease 'certified as contracted or commencing while on active service, or as having been substantially aggravated by active service.' Who is to decide what substantially aggravated means? Men have been passed into the ranks with the scantiest and scrimpiest of medical examination. Men suffering from phthisis, heart disease, hernia, have been classified A1, and passed fit for general service. If these men are discharged disabled as a result of any of these diseases, is the judgment of the Army medical man to be accepted as final if it contradicts the judgment of the medical man which passed the man into service? Who is to say, and how is it to be determined, whether a man known to be suffering from disease prior to attestation has died as a result of that disease aggravated by Military service? Upon what basis is pension to be awarded? Of what value is the Army Medical Board's judgment in such cases? If the pension of a widow under Section 11 of the draft Warrant is to depend upon the conclusions arrived at by the Army Medical Board, the probability is that it will be in danger because that Board cannot possibly have such knowledge of the case as will entitle its decision to value.

A man discharged from the Army suffering from wounds or disease aggravated by service may die two, three, four, nine or ten years after discharge, as a direct result of such wounds or disease. Is the Army Medical Board to be the sole authority as to whether death is due to such wounds or such disease? The Board may be sympathetic, but granting the most angelic purity of its motives, its verdict is of secondary value compared to that of the humble practitioner who has been in constant attendance upon the man perhaps from the date of his discharge. The verdict of an Army Medical Board should not be accepted arbitrarily if in conflict with civilian medical testimony and

a man's pension, or the pension of a widow and allowances for children, should not be contingent upon the unchallenged word of one or another set of men simply because of their Military status.

In each locality or district there should be constituted a civilian Medical Board having no responsibility to, or connection with, the Military or Naval Authorities. To this Board every man, or the dependant of a man, should have the right to appeal, and the judgment of this Board should, if at variance with that of the Medical Board, be laid before a joint National Medical Board, composed of service and civilian medical men, whose judgment should be accepted as final. The service man would be encouraged to have confidence in the decisions of these Tribunals, and he would certainly know that the medical man who perhaps attended him in boyhood and who subsequent to his discharge had been by his side, could place his knowledge of the case before a constituted authority. These Boards of appeal would at least render less numerous the scrappy examinations and faulty decisions to which the country has been accustomed *ad nauseam*, and there would be a general certainty that any award made upon the considered judgment evolved would be *just and equitable.*

The adequacy of pensions and other allowances is a question yet to be dealt with, in spite of the increases made in the pensions scale. The flat-rate principle has to a great extent been abolished, and provision has been made for greater elasticity, and yet it is open to question as to whether the amendments proposed meet the requirements.

It may be admitted at once that the obligations of the State towards these disabled sailors and soldiers, and also their dependants, is not met altogether when a pension has been awarded. Take first the case of a disabled man: if totally disabled, no money award can be adequate that does not enable him to live comfortably, and without fear of the future, and at the same time make such provision for those dependent upon him as he would in all probability have been able to make had he not

been so disabled. In the case of a partially disabled man the necessity is equally great, but with this difference, that such a man may be able to (*a*) earn some portion of his own livelihood and make some provision for his dependants by following his pre-War occupation; or (*b*) if prevented by his disablement from following his pre-War occupation, he may be able to follow some other occupation by which to secure equal maintenance and provision.

His capacity to secure such maintenance and provision cannot equitably be the measure by which any pension or allowance may be awarded. Such an award can have no reference to his probable earnings or earning capacity, and in fact should have no relation to it. The pension, if awarded at all, must be issued on account of any loss sustained while rendering service to the State, and that alone is the just basis of any award of pension. The loss sustained by the amputation of a leg cannot be measured by inches of flesh and bone. A postman who has lost his legs is in a worse position than a clerk who has also lost his legs, and whose daily avocation can be followed sitting upon a stool; but a postman who has lost his arms is relatively no worse off than a clerk who has lost his legs, for the loss of a postman's arms would probably not affect his following his old employment any more than the loss of a clerk's legs would affect him.

**The increasing disability due to advancing age** makes it necessary that any award of pension must be subject to revision on account of age. Revision too must take place in the case of single men disabled, who would most probably marry and bring families into the world. Any pension awarded them which does not take into consideration their probable future requirements cannot be considered adequate.

In the case of widows and children, the adequacy of pension cannot be determined by a flat scale, nor can any award justly be considered final. The young widow may for health reasons remain a widow, in which case the amount of pension must in many cases be regarded as a pittance. If a widow, however, has children, the requirements of the family will increase with the years,

and unless the children of the men who have made the great sacrifice are to be suppliants until they arrive at manhood and womanhood, any pension awarded must be sufficient to meet those requirements, whatever they are, and the issue of such pension cannot be decided upon any flat scale.

To say that a child whose father prior to his enlistment intended for some profession must, because of the lack of means, be debarred from that profession, is to penalize the child for the benefit of the State, and to betray the man who gave his life for the country. The State must, if the pensions awarded are to be adequate, make such provision as will enable the widow and her children to live as they would have lived had the husband and father remained at home and enable the children to follow out the purposes of the parents and to enter into the struggle of life equipped as they would have been equipped had the father remained to them.

Pensions issued to the parents of soldiers, even upon the scale provided under the terms of the new Warrant, are far from adequate. The maximum is 15*s.* per week; the minimum is 3*s.* 6*d.*, and between the two are varying amounts issued according to the estimate of dependency made by men and women who very often have no knowledge of the circumstances.

**The potential value of a son** to his parents cannot be fixed by any scale, nor can it be determined by any arbitrary set of rules. The man and wife of fifty may be able to worry along, but ten years later their needs will be greater and their powers to supply those needs infinitely less. No pension awarded to dependants other than wives and children can be considered adequate unless it means the immediate cash loss in full, and provision by revision for any increasing loss occasioned by lessened powers of self-support. To ask a father and mother who have lived in a well-appointed cottage to migrate to one room in a slum is not only an insult to the son who has died, but a dishonour to the nation on whose behalf he died. To be adequate these pensions must provide for the present, and be subject to revision in re-

spect of the future ; immediately they should give to the recipient in money an equivalent to the loss sustained so far as that loss can be met by money and also, having regard to future requirements, be subject to such increases as will meet increasing requirements.

In this connection the example of New Zealand may advantageously be followed—

The War Pensions Amendment Act, 1916, No. 1, provides :

Section 7 (1) 'Notwithstanding anything to the contrary in the principal Act, the Board may at any time grant a pension of such amount as it thinks fit, to the father or mother of a member of the Board, if the Board is satisfied that the applicant for a pension under this section has not adequate means of support.

(2) 'This section shall apply notwithstanding that the applicant may or may not be a dependant within the meaning of the principal Act.'

The democratic instinct receives recognition in Section 15 of the same measure by providing that—

'Every person who feels himself aggrieved by the refusal of the Board to grant a pension on either of the grounds mentioned in this section may apply to the Board to submit the matter to a Stipendiary Magistrate for investigation, and thereupon the Board shall, by writing under the hand of the Chairman, submit the matter to a Stipendiary Magistrate accordingly.'

The Mother of Parliaments may in time learn the lesson of wisdom and common justice from her children.

## SEPARATION ALLOWANCES: ARMY

**To Whom Issued.** Separation allowance is issued to the wives and children of soldiers, and to a woman who has been dependent upon a soldier for her maintenance and regularly supported by him upon a permanent domestic basis, and also children of his household permanently maintained by him, when separated from him for reasons of public service.

The nature of the separation depends upon the impossibility of the soldier, while serving, obtaining suitable accommodation where stationed. If such accommodation is obtainable, family allowance is issued, and if an unmarried soldier lives temporarily at his own home with a dependant other than a dependant Class B, he draws allowances personal to himself which may be assessed as if issued to dependants.

Separation allowances are issued at the discretion of the Army Council. The object of these allowances is to provide, in so far as it is possible, for the maintenance of the soldier's home, the support of such members of his family as were in any degree dependent upon him, and to assist in maintaining his dependants, other than wife and children, in the same degree of comfort as were enjoyed by them as the result of his contributions before he joined the forces. They are intended 'to provide for the maintenance of the family of the soldier when he is unavoidably separated from them by the exigencies of the public service, or to assist in maintaining the dependants of the soldier in the same degree of

comfort as they enjoyed prior to August 5, 1914, or to enlistment if later.

**Allotment Necessary.** On enlistment or mobilization every man, whether married or unmarried, should state whether he wishes to make any allotment from his pay to his family or dependants.

In the case of a married man who was immediately prior to his enlistment living with his family, allotment is compulsory and allowance is automatically issued. If a married man has been living apart from his wife, the fact should be stated on A.F.D. 418a, which is completed on attestation. In the case of a married man, provisional payment of separation allowance with allotment of pay is at once issuable. In the case of an unmarried man, he should complete A.F.O. 1838, which will be handed to him by the Attestation Officer.

**Birth Certificates.** If, in the case of a married man, any difficulty arises in obtaining the certificates of marriage or of the birth of his children, the War Office will, upon receipt of particulars as to time and place, take steps to verify the statement, but the production of these documents or verification of the facts is absolutely necessary (A.O. 319/387/1914).

**Units Entitled.** The units that are entitled to the standard British allowances are such units of the regular army whose depôt is in the United Kingdom, units of the Territorial Forces and such other units as may be specially authorized by the War Office. Special rates of separation allowances are issued to the wives and children of British soldiers resident in certain colonies at the time of the soldier's enlistment or prior to the War if he was serving at the outbreak of War. These allowances are paid so long as the wives and children continue to reside there.

**The Married Establishment.** There is no distinction made between men on or off the married establishment for the purposes of separation allowance.

No other privileges of the married establishment are, however, extended to the wives and families of soldiers not entered upon the married roll (A.O. 319/1914).

**The Pre-War Scale.** Separation allowances were issued prior to the outbreak of the present War, but the advantages were restricted to married soldiers and to such as were upon the married roll of the establishment. The allowances issuable were as set forth in the Regulations as follows—

| | At Home. | | Abroad. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | With quarters or lodging money. | Without quarters or lodging money. | With rations and quarters or lodging money. | Without rations and quarters or lodging money. |
| | *s. d.* | *s. d* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Wife of a soldier in Class 15 | 0 4 | 2 3 | 0 4 | 2 3 |
| Wife of a soldier in Class 16 | 0 4 | 2 1 | 0 4 | 2 1 |
| Wife of a soldier in Class 17 or 18 . . . . | 0 4 | 1 4 | 0 4 | 1 4 |
| Wife of a soldier in Class 19 or 20 . . . . | 0 4 | 1 1 | 0 4 | 1 1 |
| Each girl under 16 years or boy under 14 years . . | 0 1½ | 0 2 | 0 1½ | 0 2 |
| Ditto, if motherless . . | 0 4 | 0 4 | 0 4 | 0 4 |
| Ditto, if the allowance is not issuable for the mother. | | | | |
| If in charge of the mother, and the O.C. is satisfied that the issue will be in the interest of the children . . | — | 0 2 | 0 1½ | 0 2 |
| If in charge of any other person approved by the O.C. . . . . | 0 4 | 0 4 | 0 4 | 0 4 |

**Present Scale.** Considerable changes were made in the scale of allowances in October and November, 1914, and again in February, 1915, but in March of the latter year

the scale of allowances was issued as is now in force. Additional allowances for children were made to take effect on January 15, 1917.

The classification under which allowances are issued may be given as follows—

| | |
|---|---|
| Warrant Officer, Class I (Regimental Serjeant-Major) . . . . . | Class 1 |
| Warrant Officer, Class II (Company-Serjeant-Major) . . . . . | Class 2 |
| Company-Quartermaster-Serjeant . . . | Class 3 |
| Serjeant . . . . . | Class 4 |
| Corporals and Privates . . . . | Class 5 |

The following tables show the amount of the allowance inclusive of allotment.

### Wife and Children, where there are no Children over 14

| Allotment. | *s.* *d.* 3 6 | *s.* *d.* 5 10 | *s.* *d.* 5 10 | *s.* *d.* 5 10 | *s.* *d.* 5 10 |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| No. of Children under 14. | Private or Corporal. | Serjeant. | Company-Quartermaster Serjeant. | Company-Serjeant-Major. | Regimental Serjeant-Major. |
| | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* |
| 0 | 12 6 | 15 0 | 16 6 | 22 0 | 23 0 |
| 1 | 19 6 | 22 0 | 22 0 | 27 0 | 28 0 |
| 2 | 24 6 | 27 0 | 27 0 | 30 6 | 31 6 |
| 3 | 28 0 | 30 6 | 30 6 | 32 6 | 33 6 |
| 4 | 31 0 | 33 6 | 33 6 | 34 6 | 35 6 |
| 5 | 34 0 | 36 6 | 36 6 | 36 6 | 37 6 |
| 6 | 37 0 | 39 6 | 39 6 | 39 6 | 39 6 |
| 7 | 40 0 | 42 6 | 42 6 | 42 6 | 42 6 |

and so on, with 3*s.* for each additional child under 14.

## Motherless Children

| Rate in force up to January 14, 1917. | For each child, 5*s*. |
|---|---|
| Rate in force from January 15, 1917. | Under 14 : For any child living singly, 7*s*. Where two or more children of the same family live together, 7*s*. for the first and 6*s*. for each other child.<br>Over 14 : For each child, 5*s*. |

The above increases also apply to dependants (*Class B*), with effect from January 16, 1917.

There is *no alteration* in the rates for dependants (*Class A*).

The following table shows the rates issuable for wife and children where there are children over 14 years of age—

| | Pte. | | Sjt. | | C.Q.M.S | | R.Q.M.S R.S.M. C.S.M. (W.O. Class II). | | R.S.M. (W.O. Class I). | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* |
| Wife only . . . | 12 | 6 | 15 | 0 | 16 | 6 | 22 | 0 | 23 | 0 |
| Wife & 1 child under 14. | 19 | 6 | 22 | 0 | 22 | 0 | 27 | 0 | 28 | 0 |
| Wife & 1 child over 14 . | 17 | 6 | 20 | 0 | 21 | 6 | 27 | 0 | 28 | 0 |
| Wife & 1 child under 14 & 1 over 14 . . . | 23 | 0 | 25 | 6 | 25 | 6 | 30 | 6 | 31 | 6 |
| Wife & 1 child under 14 & 2 over 14 . . . | 25 | 0 | 27 | 6 | 27 | 6 | 32 | 6 | 33 | 6 |
| Wife & 2 children under 14 | 24 | 6 | 27 | 0 | 27 | 0 | 30 | 6 | 31 | 6 |
| Wife & 2 children over 14 | 21 | 0 | 23 | 6 | 25 | 0 | 30 | 6 | 31 | 6 |
| Wife & 2 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 26 | 6 | 29 | 0 | 29 | 0 | 32 | 6 | 33 | 6 |
| Wife & 2 children under 14 & 2 over 14 . . | 28 | 6 | 31 | 0 | 31 | 0 | 34 | 6 | 35 | 6 |
| Wife & 3 children under 14 | 28 | 0 | 30 | 6 | 30 | 6 | 32 | 6 | 33 | 6 |
| Wife & 3 children over 14 | 23 | 0 | 25 | 6 | 27 | 0 | 32 | 6 | 33 | 6 |
| Wife & 3 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 30 | 0 | 32 | 6 | 32 | 6 | 34 | 6 | 35 | 6 |

| | Pte. | | Sjt. | | C.Q.M.S | | B.S.M. C.S.M. (W.O. Class II). | | R.S.M. (W.O. Class I). | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Wife & 3 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | s. 32 | d. 0 | s. 34 | d. 6 | s. 34 | d. 6 | s. 36 | d. 6 | s. 37 | d. 6 |
| Wife & 4 children under 14 | 31 | 0 | 33 | 6 | 33 | 6 | 34 | 6 | 35 | 6 |
| Wife & 4 children over 14 | 25 | 0 | 27 | 6 | 29 | 0 | 34 | 6 | 35 | 6 |
| Wife & 4 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 33 | 0 | 35 | 6 | 35 | 6 | 36 | 6 | 37 | 6 |
| Wife & 4 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 35 | 0 | 37 | 6 | 37 | 6 | 38 | 6 | 39 | 6 |
| Wife & 5 children under 14 | 34 | 0 | 36 | 6 | 36 | 6 | 36 | 6 | 37 | 6 |
| Wife & 5 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 36 | 0 | 38 | 6 | 38 | 6 | 38 | 6 | 39 | 6 |
| Wife & 5 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 38 | 0 | 40 | 6 | 40 | 6 | 40 | 6 | 41 | 6 |
| Wife & 6 children under 14 | 37 | 0 | 39 | 6 | 39 | 6 | 39 | 6 | 39 | 6 |
| Wife & 6 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 39 | 0 | 41 | 6 | 41 | 6 | 41 | 6 | 41 | 6 |
| Wife & 6 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 41 | 0 | 43 | 6 | 43 | 6 | 43 | 6 | 43 | 6 |
| Wife & 7 children under 14 | 40 | 0 | 42 | 6 | 42 | 6 | 42 | 6 | 42 | 6 |
| Wife & 7 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 42 | 0 | 44 | 6 | 44 | 6 | 44 | 6 | 44 | 6 |
| Wife & 7 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 44 | 0 | 46 | 6 | 46 | 6 | 46 | 6 | 46 | 6 |
| Wife & 8 children under 14 | 43 | 0 | 45 | 6 | 45 | 6 | 45 | 6 | 45 | 6 |
| Wife & 8 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 45 | 0 | 47 | 6 | 47 | 6 | 47 | 6 | 47 | 6 |
| Wife & 8 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 47 | 0 | 49 | 6 | 49 | 6 | 49 | 6 | 49 | 6 |
| Wife & 9 children under 14 | 46 | 0 | 48 | 6 | 48 | 6 | 48 | 6 | 48 | 6 |
| Wife & 9 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 48 | 0 | 50 | 6 | 50 | 6 | 50 | 6 | 50 | 6 |
| Wife & 9 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 50 | 0 | 52 | 6 | 52 | 6 | 52 | 6 | 52 | 6 |
| Wife & 10 children under 14 | 49 | 0 | 51 | 6 | 51 | 6 | 51 | 6 | 51 | 6 |
| Wife & 10 children under 14 & 1 over 14. . . | 51 | 0 | 53 | 6 | 53 | 6 | 53 | 6 | 53 | 6 |
| Wife & 10 children under 14 & 2 over 14. . . | 53 | 0 | 55 | 6 | 55 | 6 | 55 | 6 | 55 | 6 |

If there are five children in a family, two 14 years of age and over, and three under 14 years of age, the two

elder children will receive allowances on the old scale. The practice is to issue increased allowance to the third child as if that child was the eldest, to the fourth child as if it was the second, and the fifth child as if it was the third. The eldest child then becomes fourth, and the next fifth. Consequently, the two elder children receive allowances on the old scale applicable to the fourth and fifth children.

**Civil Servants.** Civil servants, with the exception of postal employees attached to the Royal Engineers, do not benefit by the increase, because the amount of the increase is deducted from the proportion of pay received from the Paymaster-General supplementary to the flat-rate separation allowance, which really means that it is given by one hand and taken away by the other.

**When Issued.** Separation allowances are usually issued to wives and children within five days after the man's enlistment or mobilization.

If four weeks from the date of enlistment or mobilization no allowance has been issued and no notification of rejection received, inquiry should be made of the Regimental Paymaster, or if the soldier is a Territorial, of the Secretary of the Territorial Association concerned.

**Rate-aided Institutions.** Separation allowance will not ordinarily be issued in respect of a child who is an inmate of a reformatory or industrial school (other than a day industrial school); or a soldier's wife or dependant who is an inmate of an inebriate reformatory, and compulsory stoppages are not made under such circumstances.

1. Under the terms of Army Order 70/1918, arrangements have been made for payment by the Local War Pensions Committee of an allowance in lieu of, but at the same rate as, separation allowance, during the institutional treatment of the soldier's wife, and for the continuance of separation allowance at the usual rate, notwithstanding the admission to such an institution of a child or a dependant other than the soldier's wife.

2. Paragraph 78 of the Separation Allowance Regula-

tions is cancelled, and the new Order came into force March 1, 1918.

The substituted regulation provides for the issuance of Separation Allowance in cases where a soldier, prior to mobilization or enlistment, made regular payments for the maintenance of a wife, child, or other dependant already in a rate aided institution by reason of sickness, or accident, or bodily or mental infirmity, the separation allowance, if any, which would otherwise be issuable to or for such person, may be issued up to the actual amount previously paid by the soldier. If such payment is made in respect of the soldier's wife, and there are children of the soldier who are being privately maintained, the allowance for such children will be issuable at the motherless rate; in these cases the maximum issuable for the wife will be the balance of the total rate which would normally be issuable for the family as a whole, after deducting the increased payments for the children.

It should be observed that the new regulations—

(*a*) Include the "Workhouse" among rate-aided institutions.

(*b*) Include in the amount issuable the amount of allotment payable by the Government under the terms of A.O. 1/1918, and

(*c*) excludes from the amount payable any sum previously paid in respect of the dependant to any rate-aided institution.

(*d*) Provides for the payment of this allowance in cases where the dependant is maintained in a rate-aided institution on account of sickness.

4. It is important to note that payment is administered and is at the discretion of the Local Committee, and that on the admission of the wife of a soldier to a rate-aided institution the issue of separation allowance (and allotment, if any) will cease, but an equivalent amount will be issued and administered by the Local War Pensions Committee, who will—

(1) Defray the current standing charges of the home (rent, insurances, etc.);

(2) Arrange and pay for the maintenance of the children (if any); and

(3) Pay to the wife any unexpended balance on her discharge.

5. This regulation is applicable to dependants Class B, but the admission of a child or dependant (Class A) to a rate-aided institution will not affect the issue of separation allowance, which will be continued by the paymaster as before such admission.

6. With regard to children who become chargeable to the Poor Law authority it is provided that if a child under the age of 16 years, in respect of whom separation allowance is issuable, becomes chargeable to the Poor Law authority, and is boarded-out, or maintained in an institution provided exclusively for the reception and maintenance of children, separation allowance may be issued to such authority towards the cost of maintenance.

In this connection there is no material change in the regulations.

**In Case of Misconduct.** The issue of separation allowance to wives, or dependants, of soldiers is liable to be stopped on account of serious misconduct.

If separation allowance for a wife is stopped on account of misconduct, the allowance for the children will be continued at ordinary rates if they remain in charge of the mother, or motherless rate if they are placed in charge of another person.

**London Allowance.** Payment of the London allowance may be made to the

(1) Wives of soldiers on the married establishment who were on the lodging list in the London Postal Area prior to mobilization.

(2) Wives of soldiers not on the married establishment, Army Reservists, Special Reservists, and serving T.F. soldiers who were residing in the London Postal Area on the date of mobilization, and already married to the soldier.

(3) Wives of soldiers enlisted during the War who were residing in the London Postal Area at the date of enlistment if then married, or, at the date of marriage if married after enlistment, and dependants, under Classes

A and B, of soldiers enlisted during the War who were residing in the London Postal Area at the date of enlistment.

This allowance is issuable only while the family continues to reside in the London Postal Area, and is not again issuable to a family on removing from that area, or in the event of the family returning. It may continue for casual periods of temporary absence if the payee *maintains* his or her home in London.

A payment which has ceased on the payee leaving London may be resumed when the payee returns, on production of satisfactory evidence of a continuous bona fide payment during the whole period of absence for either rent or storage of furniture in the London Postal Area.

The period of temporary absence has been ruled as three months.

While a soldier is on family allowance the London area allowance is dependent upon whether his station is in the London district.

**On the death of a payee,** payment of allowance in respect of the deceased person ceases forthwith.

Any allowance (including allotment) due at the death of a payee will be disposed of as follows—

WIFE. Charges on account of funeral or sickbed expenses have the first claim. The balance will be paid to the person in charge of the soldier's children. Any sum not disposed of will be credited to the soldier's pay account.

CHILD. The balance will be paid to the mother or guardian.

DEPENDANT. Provided eligibility for separation allowance has been established before death, charges on account of funeral or sickbed expenses will have the first claim, and the balance, if any, may be paid in satisfaction of charges due for the support of the deceased. In cases where transfer of payment is approved, any balance will be issued to the new payee.

**Forms of Application.** On enlistment, or on joining from the Army Reserve, Army Form D. 418b or Army Form O. 1838a will be filled up for every recruit.

Army Form D. 418b is applicable to—

Married men (ordinary cases).

Widowers with legitimate children, for whom separation allowance is issuable unless separation allowance is also claimed for the person having the care of such children, when Army Form O. 1838a should be used.

Married men separated from their wives, except when Army Form O. 1838a is used.

Army Form O. 1838a is applicable to—

All unmarried men.

Widowers, except when Army Form D. 418b is used.

Married men, separated from their wives, who wish and are entitled to claim separation allowance for a dependant.

If difficulty arises in obtaining the certificates of marriage or of birth, the Paymaster will forward such particulars as may be necessary for verification.

The production of certificates or verification is necessary in all cases.

If the claim for separation allowances is refused, the amount of the allotment will be paid to the person named, and the soldier will be informed that although a grant of separation allowance is refused, the allotment is being issued in accordance with his request.

**Intention to Marry.** A soldier who intends to get married is required to inform his Commanding Officer of the fact two weeks in advance of the event, and to state at the same time whether separation allowance is being paid to any of his dependants, and if so, to whom.

If the soldier omits to give the required notice, separation allowance will only be issued from the date following that to which separation allowance has been paid to his dependant (if any) instead from the date of marriage.

**Belated Claims.** A soldier who has not claimed separation allowance for a dependant, may submit a claim through his Commanding Officer on Army Form O. 1838. Arrears of separation allowance can in no case be granted.

A claim made more than one month after the soldier's

enlistment is marked ' belated claim ; strict investigation necessary.'

Claims made by a dependant may be considered—

(1) If the soldier is serving abroad, but no payment will be made until Army Form O. 1838, duly completed, has been received from the soldier.

(2) If the soldier is a prisoner of war, but no payment will be made unless and until the soldier agrees to make the necessary allotment ; but any case where there is difficulty in communicating with the soldier may be submitted to the War Office for consideration.

(3) If the soldier has been reported missing or is dead. In these cases it will be assumed that the soldier would have agreed to make the necessary allotment, but the continuation period will reckon from the date on which notification of the casualty was first sent to the next-of-kin.

The allowance, if admitted, will run from the date on which the claim was received from the dependant, or from the date from which allotment is recovered from the soldier, whichever is later.

Any appeal against an award may be made on Army Form O. 1840a.

**In Case of Disagreement.** If there is disagreement between the Pension Officer and the Pension Committee, the case will be sent to the War Office Appeals Committee for decision.

Payment of separation allowance is made as follows—

Payee residing at home, Regular Army, New Army, and Special Reserve : by the Paymaster at the Record Office station of the unit to which the soldier belongs.

Permanent Staff of the Territorial Force : by the Paymaster at the Record Office station of the Non-commissioned Officer's regular unit.

Territorial Force, except permanent staff : by the Territorial Force County Association administering the unit to which the soldier belongs.

**On the Birth of a Child.** In the case of a child being born to the soldier, the amount of the increase due to the end of the current payment period will be paid by Army

money order to the mother. No recovery will be made should the child not survive.

**Overpayments.** Recovery of overpayments will be effected by deduction from weekly payments. The broad rule to be followed will be that, in cases coming under 1–4, the rate of recovery will ordinarily be 25 per cent. of the normal weekly payment, but in cases under Class 5, the rate may be fixed as low as 15 per cent. In no case, however, will the recovery be spread over a period of more than twenty-six weeks, except under special authority from the War Office.

Advances made on behalf of the War Pensions, etc., Statutory Committee, and recoverable from separation allowance, will be dealt with as follows—

In the case of advances made to wives, if the whole amount advanced cannot be recovered from arrears, recovery of any balance will be effected at the rate of 15 per cent. of the normal weekly allowance for corporals and privates, and 25 per cent. for higher ranks.

In the case of advances made to dependants other than wives, Army Form W. 3020 will be forwarded to the Paymaster on the day that the advance is made.

Payment of arrears will be withheld for seven days after the date on which the weekly payments of separation allowance commence, and if the whole amount advanced cannot be recovered from arrears, recovery of any balance will be effected at the rate of 15 per cent. of the normal weekly allowance.

**Allotments.** Married soldiers who are separated from their wives and families must contribute a portion of their pay towards their maintenance at the following daily rates—

| | For Wife. |
|---|---|
| Soldiers not below the rank of serjeant . . . | 10*d.* |
| Soldiers below the rank of serjeant . . . | 6*d.* |

No compulsory allotment is required in respect of children.

An Army Order issued December 4, 1917, provides that the issue of separation allowance shall, from Sep-

tember 29, 1917, and for the remaining period of the present War, cease to be contingent upon the soldier making an allotment from his pay.

Where the wife or dependant of such soldier was in receipt of separation allowance on the day preceding the issue of the Order or subsequently becomes entitled to receive an allowance with effect from that or an earlier date, the whole sum which the soldier was allotting, including any excess allotment up to a total of 10*d*. per day for a soldier of the rank of serjeant or higher rank, or 6*d*. for a soldier below the rank of serjeant, shall be issued from public funds as separation allowance, and shall not be deducted from the soldier's pay.

Where the wife or dependant of such a soldier becomes entitled to separation allowance with effect from the date of the Order, or a subsequent date, the usual procedure for assessing the allowance shall be followed and the whole amount to which the payee is entitled shall be issued from public funds as separation allowance; but in these cases, any allotment voluntarily made by the soldier will be a charge against his pay.

The foregoing does not apply to cases where allotment only and no separation allowance is being paid except in the case of an allotment made to secure a special separation allowance from the funds administered by the special Grants Committee of the Ministry of Pensions, in regard to which separate instructions are issued by the Ministry. Stoppages in respect of separated wives or illegitimate children will be made as hitherto from the pay of soldiers, as required by Sections 138 and 145 of the Army Act, and the benefit granted is therefore not applicable to cases in which separation allowance is being issued where there is an order of Court. The Order does, however, apply to all other cases where separation allowance is being issued with allotment including allotments for motherless children actually in payment or authorized by the soldier on or before the day preceding the date of this Warrant.

With reference to the above Army Order (I of December 4, 1917) it is notified that, as from September 29,

1917, the weekly rates of family allowance now issuable in the case of (*a*) a soldier who lives and messes at his own home, and (*b*) who, although living at his own home, necessarily messes away from his home on duty will, except in the case of a soldier with wife only, be increased by 5*s.* 10*d.* per week in the case of soldiers above the rank of corporal, and 3*s.* 6*d.* a week in the case of soldiers below that rank.

A soldier with wife only, including an Army schoolmaster, will receive the following rates of family allowance—

| Class 15. | Class 16. | Classes 17 and 18. | Class 19. | Class 20. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 30*s.* | 29*s.* | 23*s.* 6*d.* | 22*s.* | 20*s.* 6*d.* |

The amendment made to paragraph 185, Separation Allowance Regulations, by Army Order 141 of 1917 is cancelled and the following substituted—

> 'Except in the case of a soldier of class 20 (5) with wife only, when the deduction will be 13*s.* 6*d.* a week, and not the rate of separation allowance (12*s.* 6*d.*).'

Allotments in excess of the rates shown above may be made if the soldier desires. Voluntary allotments may also be made to any relative or dependant, whether in receipt of dependants' allowance or not, provided that the total allotment does not exceed three-fourths of the soldier's total pay.

When a soldier wishes to commence, increase, reduce, stop or transfer an allotment of pay, except in certain cases, Army Form O. 1796a should be completed and forwarded to the Paymaster.

A soldier may desire to allot at higher rates or make objection to paying the standard allotment. No objection will be allowed unless the wife has income or earnings which, without the soldier's allotment, or with a reduced allotment, will secure to her a total income not less than the standard rate of combined separation allowance and allotment laid down for the family of a soldier of his rank.

If a soldier is prepared to state definitely that his wife has sufficient other income or earnings he may appeal against the standard allotment.

On receipt of the application from the Commanding Officer, the issuing officer will ask the wife to furnish a statement of her income from all sources other than separation allowance and allotment, and if the statement shows that her income without the allotment, or with the reduced allotment, is equal to the standard rate, future payments will be made accordingly, unless there are special circumstances in the case. The wife will be informed of the reduction, and that it is open to her to apply for consideration of the question at a future date if her circumstances render it necessary.

If her statement shows that she has no other income or earnings, the case will be forwarded to the War Office for decision. Pending a decision by the War Office, the allotment will continue to be issued to the wife at the standard rate, and a corresponding charge will be made against the soldier.

If an allotment is cancelled or reduced and the wife afterwards applies to have the question reconsidered, she will be asked to furnish particulars of her income from all sources, excluding separation allowance and allotment. If the soldier agrees, arrangements will be made for reissue accordingly. If the soldier objects, the case will be referred to the War Office for decision, and, pending a decision, payment will continue to be made at the rate of allotment, if any, already being issued (A.O. 475/1914).

**Stoppages Authorized by the Army Act.** When the issue of separation allowance to a soldier's wife (or dependant of Class B) is stopped under paragraph 79, on account of the misconduct of the recipient, the issue of allotment of pay will also cease unless the soldier signifies his desire that the allotment should continue.

Stoppages from a soldier's daily pay may be made as follows—

If the soldier is a Warrant Officer (Class I) not holding an honorary commission—in respect of a wife or children, one shilling and sixpence, and in respect of a bastard child, one shilling.

Where the soldier is a Warrant Officer (Class II) not holding an honorary commission, or a non-commissioned

officer who is not below the rank of serjeant—in respect of a wife or children, one shilling, and in respect of a bastard child, sevenpence.

In the case of any other soldier—in respect of a wife or children, sixpence, and in respect of a bastard child, fourpence.

In the case of soldiers serving abroad or under orders for service overseas no order of the court for maintenance stoppages is operative unless the summons has been served before the soldier was under orders for service beyond the seas.

Arrear charges and costs against the soldier under the magistrate's order may be recovered provided the maximum daily rate of stoppage specified is not exceeded.

In the event of a child, for whose maintenance an order has been made, dying or reaching the age at which payments under the order are no longer due, the stoppage will be continued until all arrears of maintenance and costs have been paid off.

If a soldier liable to a stoppage for maintenance forfeits his pay, the stoppage will remain as a charge against him and be recoverable from any pay or other army emoluments to which he may afterwards become entitled.

**Soldiers Discharged or Missing.** In the case of soldiers discharged as 'no longer physically fit for War service,' separation allowance and allotment is continued two weekly payments after the date of discharge.

**Missing Men.** In the case of a soldier of whom no official information has been received within four weeks from the date on which official notification was given to the person to whom separation allowance was payable that he was missing, separation allowance and allotment will continue to be paid for twenty-six weeks from the pay-day immediately following that on which the four weeks expire, that is to say that thirty weekly payments will be made, reckoning from the date on which it was officially notified to the person to whom the payments were issuable that he was missing. If, however, before the period of four weeks

has expired the soldier's death is proved, the twenty-six weekly payments will begin from the date upon which official notification of the fact was given (A.O. 93/1915).

If the family of the soldier becomes eligible for separation allowance during the period of the thirty weeks, the allowance will not be continued beyond that period, reckoning from the date of the official notification.

If voluntary allotments only are being paid, they will continue for four weeks only after the date of the official notification that the soldier was missing. If at any time within that period the soldier's death is proved, the payment will ordinarily cease when such proof is admitted. If, however, a claim for separation allowance is pending, the payment of the allotment may be continued until a decision has been arrived at (A.O. 93/1915).

It has been found that the issue of notification at the end of four weeks, with a view to pension or gratuity, has frequently led the recipient to believe that definite information of the soldier's death has been received. It has, therefore, been ordered that this notice shall not be issued until eight weekly payments of the separation allowance and allotment has been made, subsequent to the notification of the fact that the soldier is missing (A.O. 132/1916).

**Wives and Legitimate Children (or Step-Children).** Separation allowance is issuable for a soldier's wife and for his legitimate children (or step-children) under 16 years of age.

If a child is born to a soldier whose family is already in receipt of separation allowance the increased rate takes effect from the next weekly payment day after birth.

If a child is by arrangement living apart from its parents, the rule is that the allowances for the children will be assigned in order of ages.

Except where specially provided, separation allowance is not issuable in respect of any one who is already maintained at the public expense.

Separation allowance may be issued to a soldier's children suffering from mental or physical infirmity up to the

age of 21. The issue is allowed for a certified period of temporary infirmity.

Separation allowance is admissible for young persons between the ages of 16 and 21, on a certificate from the Local Education Authority, while the young person is an apprentice receiving only a nominal wage or is a day pupil at a secondary school, technical school, or university. The certificate of the Local Education Authority will cover the issues for the remainder of the quarter in which it is given. In each subsequent quarter the certificate of the employer, or of the head of the school or university, must be obtained.

The term apprentice may be interpreted as in the case of secondary education, that the lad or girl is learning a trade.

**Motherless Children.** When separation allowance is being issued for mother and children and the mother dies, the motherless rate for the children is issued from the payment day following the date of death of the mother.

If the mother is in prison the motherless rate of separation allowance is issued for the children.

The motherless rate of separation allowance is issuable concurrently with the issue of the consolidated allowance to the father.

**Wives Separated from their Husbands.** Where a husband made his wife a regular allowance before mobilization or date of enlistment, she will be treated as a dependant up to the amount previously paid by the soldier, but not exceeding the limit for a wife.

Separation allowance is issuable at the ordinary rates for children without contribution by the soldier.

Where the husband made no payment under an Order of Court or otherwise, before mobilization or enlistment, no issue of separation allowance to the wife is made, but allowance is issuable for the children at the motherless rate, whether they are living with the mother or not.

Where there is an Order of Court against the soldier for his wife's maintenance, under which payment has been regularly made up to the time of mobilization or enlist-

ment, the stoppage from his pay and separation allowance may be issued up to the amount previously paid by the soldier.

In the case of a soldier who is living apart from his wife and is liable for her maintenance under an Order under Section 143, Army Act, his ability to comply with the Order is not affected by his going on active service, and no issue of separation allowance is made.

In the cases of soldiers killed in action or dying of wounds received in action, form of application for pension should be issued to the widow or guardian immediately on the receipt of notification of death (A.C.I. 1409/1916).

**Children.** If a mother in receipt of separation allowance has been confined in a public Institution for health reasons the allowance issued in respect of her ceases, but the allowance issued in respect of her children is increased to the motherless rate.—Mr. Forster, House of Commons, October 31, 1916 (*see* Rate-aided Institutions, p. 37).

The allowances provided under Army Order 212/1915 and subsequent Warrants for children born six months after discharge are continued to children over the age of 16 and under 21 years incapable, through physical or mental infirmity, which has existed since the age of 16.

Grants to children over the age of 16 cease if provided for in public or charitable Institutions.

Separation allowance is discontinued in respect of child removed to a public Institution on account of disease.—Mr. Forster, House of Commons, November 21, 1916.

**Increased Separation Allowances.** These are not issued in respect of the children of a deceased soldier whose widow is in receipt of a separation allowance for the twenty-six weeks prior to issue of pension. These increases are not issuable in the case of the children of a deceased soldier whose mother has re-married.

**Maintenance Order.** If a woman was not supported by her husband prior to enlistment or mobilization, she is not entitled to separation allowance under the regula-

tions, but may make application for order of Court for compulsory stoppage of the man's pay for her own support or benefit. If there is satisfactory evidence of the intention of the man and his wife to cohabit in future and after the War, separation allowance may be granted.

If a husband and wife have been legally separated and a maintenance order has been regularly complied with, the wife will receive the amount of the order providing that it is not in excess of the wife's separation allowance, and to which the husband must allot the maximum amount.

If a husband has made no payment under an order of Court, no separation allowance is issuable, but separation allowance is payable for the children at the motherless rate whether living with the mother or not.

If a maintenance order has been made out against a soldier, and payment is made entirely out of the soldier's pay without any contribution from the State, he may in addition earn a separation allowance for another dependant. He may also make an allotment to, and thus secure a separation allowance for, the dependant if after meeting the order his pay enables him to do so.

No order of the Court is operative against a soldier serving or under orders to serve abroad, for maintenance stoppages, unless judgment was obtained before the soldier was under orders for such service.

When there is an affiliation order issued against a married man whose rank is below that of serjeant, the maximum stoppage that can be made from his pay in respect of such order is fourpence per day.

A wife separated from her husband prior to enlistment or mobilization, and in receipt of a regular allowance from him, may be regarded as a dependant, and an allowance issued, which with allotment does not exceed the amount previously paid by the soldier.

If the soldier made no payment, no separation allowance is issuable. If there is an Order of Court against a soldier for his wife's maintenance, under which payment has been made prior to his enlistment or mobiliza-

tion, the stoppage made from his pay in liquidation may be the maximum to which may be added an allowance as for a dependant, which including the stoppage may not exceed the amount previously paid by the soldier subject to the limit of the wife's scale.

The issue of separation or dependants' allowances, and ration allowance in respect of the first seven days after return to civilian employment will not apply to Civil servants, and/or Government civilian employees, transferred to Class W, W (T) or T of the Reserve (A.C.I. 775/1917).

1. No separation allowance will be issued to a wife and to any other dependant on account of the same soldier.

2. No separation allowance is issuable in respect of the same soldier to more than one household.

3. If two or more members of the same household—other than the soldier's children—were dependent upon him, the allowance payable is that which would be paid if the first dependant were a wife and the other children, but the amount contributed by the Government will not exceed the amount contributed by the soldier to the expense of the household over and above the cost of his own maintenance.

## CHILDREN

The motherless rate of separation allowance is issuable concurrently with the issue of the consolidated allowance of 2*s*. per day for lodging and rations to the father, or if messed regimentally, with the lodging allowance.

After death of father, a claim for dependant's allowance will, if admitted, be paid only to end of thirty weeks from death, starting at time of birth or date of claim.

If a child is born after the death of its father and

separation allowance is being issued to the mother, or if a dependant's claim is admitted after death, payment will cease at the end of twenty-six weeks from the known or presumed date of death, no matter the date of the birth of child or date of claim.

On the death of a wife, child, or dependant, the payment of the allowance ceases forthwith.

Children removed from the care of the mother because of her misconduct are regarded for the purposes of the allowance as being motherless, and the motherless rate is issuable in respect of them, but the mother's allowance is discontinued.

The allowance made for children ceases ordinarily when the child has reached the age of 16 years, but it may be continued if the child is attending a secondary school, technical school, or university, or if the child is an apprentice receiving only a nominal wage (A.O. 100/1915).

A certificate from the employer, or the head of the school or university as the case may be, is requisite (A.O. 100 and 298/1915).

The children's allowance may be continued until the age of 21, also, if the child is suffering from mental or physical infirmity (A.O. 492/1914).

When the son of a soldier serving, in respect of whom separation allowance is issued to wife (mother of soldier), makes an allotment to brother or sister in the same household, the increased allowance is not issuable to such child because the allowance already issued is not issued as to a child.

Suppose there are five children in the family, two over 14 in respect of whom the old allowance scale is issued, the practice is to issue increased allowance to the next eldest—third child—than to continue allowance on old scale to the remaining two or fourth and fifth child respectively.

**Men in Hospital.** The allowance is also granted when a soldier is separated from his family by admission to hospital and subjected to a hospital stoppage (unless he is suffering from an illness occasioned by his own misconduct). The allowance will be issuable

regimentally in arrear from the fifth day (inclusive) from the date of the soldier's admission to hospital, and will be limited for the entire family to the amount of the hospital stoppage. In cases in which the full stoppage is remitted, no separation allowance will be issuable, and if the stoppage is partly remitted, the allowance will be the unremitted portion of the stoppage. If, however, the family was in receipt of the allowance prior to the soldier's admission to hospital, it will continue as before.

**While on Furlough.** Separation allowance may also be issued during furlough (' working furlough ' excepted) if the family was previously in receipt of it, except where the separation originated by the admission of the soldier into hospital.

**Furlough.** Separation allowance may continue to be issued during ordinary furlough and sick furlough. It is not issuable except with special authority to a man given working furlough with a view to discharge.

In the case of extended sick furlough, the allotment portion of the separation allowance is not issuable.

Men granted furlough to engage in work on their own farms are not eligible for the issue of separation or family allowance (A.C.I. 1973/1916).

Separation allowance is issuable to a man allocated to farm work including allotment. If family allowances are issued the normal amount is paid.

**On Promotion.** When a soldier is promoted to a rank which entitles his family to a higher rate of separation allowance, the higher rate will be admissible from the date of the promotion.

If a soldier is reduced in rank, any reduction in the rate takes effect from the end of the week in which notification is received by the Paymaster.

If a soldier is promoted to commissioned rank, payment of allotment and allowance ceases from the date of promotion.

**S.A. Wives, India.** The wives and families of soldiers serving with units in India become eligible for separation allowance as from February 1, 1915, whether on the married establishment or not (A.O. 100/1915).

In the case of dependants eligible under A.O. 440/1914, separation allowance is issuable from the date of application only; but men who left India prior to the date of that order (December 3, 1914) may receive issue as from October 1, 1914, or the date of the embarkation of the soldier from India if later, providing application was received from the dependant before December 20, 1914 (A.O. 1/1915.)

If a soldier is in hospital, and his family or dependants were in receipt of separation allowance when he entered, the payments will be continued, no matter the cause which necessitated his being sent there (A.O. 126/1915).

Separation allowance and allotment continue to be paid during periods for which a soldier may be punished for an offence under the Army Regulations, providing the period is less than seven days, the amount of the allotment being recoverable from the soldier's pay (A.O. 126/1915).

If the period of punishment is above seven days, the amount of the separation allowance less the allotment is paid (A.O. 126/1915).

If the punishment carries with it discharge from the Army, all payments cease as from the date of discharge.

A soldier who is absent without leave for a period of twenty-one days is, after allowing a reasonable time in which to report himself, regarded as a deserter, and the issue of separation allowance ceases (A.O. 126/1915).

When a soldier rejoins from desertion, the issue of separation allowance may be resumed from the date when he rejoins.

When soldiers living at home are admitted to hospital, family allowance is continued. Issue is subject to the reduction of the amount of allotment if admission to the hospital becomes necessary by any offence against the Army Act.

**Invalided Soldiers.** Separation allowance and allotment is continued for two weekly payments after the date of discharge. This regulation does not apply where allotments only are being paid (A.O. 354/1916).

**Reserve Units.** Men transferred to Classes W (T.) P and (P.T.) and T, under Army Orders 203 and 355 of 1916, are not entitled to the issue of separation allowance.

If a man is transferred to C.W. Reserve for substitution he is not entitled to pension, pay, or other emolument from the Army funds, nor are his wife or dependants entitled to separation allowance. Suppose the man's home was in Stratford, and he was sent as a substitute to Leicester, his wife and children are not entitled to separation allowance, unless he obtains a certificate from his employer that no housing accommodation is available in proximity to his employment.

**Civil Employment.** Where men are transferred to civil employment under A.O. 205/1915, and are in consequence separated from their families or dependants, allowance less allotment is issuable under the usual conditions, in addition to any other earnings or emoluments of the soldier (A.C.I. 445/1916).

The amount of any separation allowance issued will be deducted from the amount of civil pay issuable to civil servants and other Government employees under the terms of A.O. 338/1914.

## ADVANCES

A soldier or sailor on enlistment or mobilization should declare an allotment, and at the same time make a claim for separation allowance. He may make an allotment without making a claim, and should be careful that if an allowance is desired, the form should be completed.

The Local Committee does not usually make advances in cases of partial dependency where there are other sources of income, it being considered that the allotment made is sufficient to meet the needs of the family pending the issue of separation allowance.

Advances do not usually exceed the anticipated amount of separation allowance excluding allotment, and are not made for longer period than six weeks without the special authorization of the Local Committee, nor beyond a period of thirteen weeks without especial sanction.

No advance will be made under any circumstances if the soldier or sailor fails to make an allotment.

In the case of an unmarried wife, an advance sufficient to meet her immediate needs may be made on proof that the man has made an allotment of 3*s.* 6*d.* per week, and that the woman is eligible for separation allowance under the regulations.

No advances are made to the wives and dependants of men who are deserters or who have failed to rejoin within seven days of the expiration of their leave or furlough.

Advances made to seamen are recovered either directly from the dependants or by deduction from subsequent payment of the separation allowance. No recovery of advances may be made from arrears of separation allowance, but only by deduction from future issues.

Men employed by the Admiralty or War Office on Government work not connected with the War at civil or weekly rates of pay, are not within the scope of the Regulations, and no allowance, grant, or advance may be issued by the Special Grants Committee to such men or their wives or widows and dependants. Compensation for or in respect of such men in the event of death or injury is provided for under the 'Injuries in War Compensation Acts, 1914/15.'

Separation Allowance. Rates for Families A.O. 299/1917) in Public Quarters, with effect from January 15, 1917) :—

| Class. | 15 | | 16 | | 17 and 18 | | 19 | | 20 | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Where there are no children over 14 years of age. | Separation Allowance. | Total, including Allotment. | Separation Allowance. | Total, including Allotment. | Separation Allowance. | Total, including Allotment. | Separation Allowance. | Total, including Allotment. | Separation Allowance. | Total, including Allotment. |
| For— | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. |
| Wife only . . . | 3 2 | 9 0 | 3 2 | 9 0 | 3 2 | 9 0 | 3 2 | 9 0 | 3 0 | 6 6 |
| „ 1 child . . | 10 2 | 16 0 | 10 2 | 16 0 | 10 2 | 16 0 | 10 2 | 16 0 | 10 0 | 13 6 |
| „ 2 children . | 15 2 | 21 0 | 15 2 | 21 0 | 15 2 | 21 0 | 15 2 | 21 0 | 15 0 | 18 6 |
| „ 3 children . | 18 8 | 24 6 | 18 8 | 24 6 | 18 8 | 24 6 | 18 8 | 24 6 | 18 6 | 22 0 |
| „ 4 children . | 21 8 | 27 6 | 21 8 | 27 6 | 21 8 | 27 6 | 21 8 | 27 6 | 21 6 | 25 0 |
| „ 5 children . | 24 8 | 30 6 | 24 8 | 30 6 | 24 8 | 30 6 | 24 8 | 30 6 | 24 6 | 28 0 |
| „ 6 children . | 27 8 | 33 6 | 27 8 | 33 6 | 27 8 | 33 6 | 27 8 | 33 6 | 27 6 | 31 0 |
| „ 7 children . | 30 8 | 36 6 | 30 8 | 36 6 | 30 8 | 36 6 | 30 8 | 36 6 | 30 6 | 34 0 |
| | And so on, with 3s. for each additional child under 14. For children over 14—as under. | | | | | | | | | |

From March 1, 1917, Civil servants and Government civilian employees serving in the Army and entitled to the balance (if any) of civil pay from their Civil Department, will not be eligible on discharge or transferred to Class P or P T of the Reserve, for the temporary allowance for themselves or for the continuation of separation allowance to their families or dependants under A.O. 354/1916, or family allowance under A.O. 397/1916 (A.C.I. 479/17).

The mother of a soldier who remarries after application for separation allowance is not entitled to pension.

Any allotment made in excess of the required amount should be added to the total issue, the Government allowance is not affected.

Payment is made to the wives of men married whilst interned in a neutral country, with effect from the date of marriage.

**Advances upon Separation Allowance: Army.** Advances are not made in excess of the amount of the separation allowance and allotment, and usually for not more than two weeks. Advances are restricted to the depen-

dants of unmarried men, and a married soldier is so classed, providing that no separation allowance is issuable for the wife or any legitimate children not in the care of the dependant. Advances are not usually made in the case of persons partially dependent only upon a soldier. In these cases it is considered that the amount of the allotment (3*s.* 6*d.*) will be sufficient pending the issue of separation allowance.

Instruction 454/1917 is amended, and it is now provided that local committees will not make weekly advances except as authorized by the Officer in Charge of Records.

Local Committees are not authorized to make advances to men transferred to C.W. on or after February 1, 1917. If on medical examination a man is retained in C.W., no further advances are to be made after the date of such notification.

If the man is transferred to C.P., the Local Committee may make three weekly advances of 14*s.* in respect to the three weeks following the date of the Medical Board's decision (A.C.I. 685/1917).

Children in care of guardian who is not their mother are eligible for motherless allowance. The dependency of the woman is assessed by deducting the amount previously paid as maintenance for the children. The man is required to pay the scale allotment.

Separation allowance is issuable for any child a soldier may have maintained in his own household (100/15).

Separation allowance is not issuable for the illegitimate child of an unmarried man if separation allowance is issued to a dependant of that man and the child is not in the care of that dependant.

**Family Allowances.** Provision is made by A.O. 32/1917 for the increase of separation allowances in certain cases for children under 14 years of age, provided for ordinarily by A.O. 55/1917, under the rates issued as family allowance, as set forth in paragraph 175a of the separation allowance regulations, 1916. The increase is as follows : 2*s.* for the first child, 1*s.* 6*d.* for the second

and third, and 1*s.* for each additional child under the age of 14 years. The increase took effect from January 15, 1917, and is applicable only to the children of soldiers of classes of 4 and 5, that is men below the rank of serjeant. A soldier of any class with a wife and no children is not effected. In the case of a man holding the rank of a serjeant, or above that rank, the allowance issuable under paragraph 175a of the separation allowance regulations, or the rate for a private soldier or corporal with a similar family, will be issued, whichever is the highest. The increases effect also the children of soldiers living with their families in public quarters under the same conditions. This allowance is issuable for the period of the War only, and it takes the place of all other allowances, lodging, fuel and light, ration and separation allowances, except as otherwise provided for.

It will not be admissible in the case of specially enlisted soldiers whose pay and allowances were definitely arranged to take the place of civil emoluments previously drawn.

The weekly rate of family allowance is as follows—

When a soldier lives and messes at his own home:

| | Class 15. | Class 16. | Classes 17 and 18. | Class 19. | Class 20. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Soldier with— | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Wife only { winter | 28 7 | 25 8 | 21 7 | 20 5 | 20 5 |
| Wife only { summer | 26 3 | 23 11 | 21 0 | 19 10 | 19 10 |
| Wife and 1 child | 29 2 | 28 2 | 22 8 | 21 2 | 21 0 |
| Wife and 2 children | 32 8 | 31 8 | 26 2 | 24 8 | 24 6 |
| Wife and 3 children | 34 8 | 33 8 | 28 2 | 26 8 | 26 6 |
| Wife and 4 children | 36 8 | 35 8 | 30 2 | 28 8 | 28 6 |

For each additional child, 2*s.*

'Winter' will be interpreted to mean the months from October to May, inclusive; 'Summer,' June to September.

For an Army Schoolmaster (Class 16) with wife only,

an addition of 1*s.* 9*d.* per week in winter and 1*s.* 2*d.* in summer will be made to the above rates.

Soldiers living at their own homes and coming up for regular daily duty, as in peace, come under this order if otherwise entitled.

When the soldier, although living at his own home, necessarily messes away from his own home on duty, he will be rationed in kind or will draw the usual ration allowance, and in respect of his family, he will draw family allowance at the rates for separation allowance without allotment.

When the soldier and his family are in public quarters, he will himself be rationed in kind or receive usual ration allowance, the family allowance will be issued in respect of any children of the soldier at the uniform rates of 5*s.* for the first child, 3*s.* 6*d.* for the second child, and 2*s.* for each additional child.

Family allowance will be subject to the conditions for the issue of separation allowance, so far as these are applicable. The family allowance will be increased by the amount of the usual London allowance, but the qualification for the additional sixpence per day in the London postal area depends on the station, not the residence of the soldier.

The issue of family allowance will continue when the soldier is temporarily sent away from his home on duty, for a period not exceeding a month, or is admitted to hospital. For longer periods, the Officer commanding may arrange with the Paymaster for the issue of separation allowance in lieu, if admissible.

In the case of soldiers who die whilst serving, family allowance at the usual rates of separation allowance with allotment will be continued for twenty-six weeks to the wife, under the ordinary conditions for the continuation of separation allowance.

In the case of a recruit who, on attestation, is temporarily sent to his home for a few days, separation allowance is issuable.

Family allowance is not to be issuable to soldiers for

periods of civil employment, under Army Order 205 of 1915.

The deductions to be made in respect of family allowance from the civil pay of civil servants and Government employees serving in the Army will be at the rate prescribed for separation allowance.

Soldiers living with a dependant (Class B), whose title to separation allowance has been admitted, are eligible for allowances under this section.

If a man forfeits his pay by reason of absence or is sent to detention for a short period, family allowance is issuable, subject to separation allowance regulations, and separation allowance may be issued for longer periods at the discretion of the Commanding Officer (A.O. 210/1915, 285/1915).

When a soldier who has been in receipt of family allowance ceases to draw that allowance, and becomes entitled to separation allowance, the first payment of separation allowance would be made by the Paymaster of the new corps in case of transfer.

**The Rates of Consolidated Family Allowance** are considerably varied by recent changes as follows—

Army Order 2/1918 applies only to those soldiers who are in receipt of the ordinary rates of pay as laid down in the warrant of 1914 and subsequent warrants.

It does not apply to men in receipt of special rates of pay, i.e., men who enlisted under the terms of Army Orders 282 and 283/1914. This means that the increased rates of allowance are only issuable to the men in receipt of the ordinary rates of pay (Army Order 3/1918).

Certain changes have also been made in the classifications.

A soldier above the rank of private and below that of serjeant is classed as a private for allowance purposes and now receives 21*s.* 6*d.* a week, and not 20*s.* 6*d.* as shown in the appropriate column, nor 21*s.* 2*d.* as shown in Army Order 3/1918 (Army Order 39/1918).

A soldier holding the rank of serjeant receives 23*s.* 6*d.*, and not 22*s.* 6*d.* (Army Order 3/1918).

Paragraph 185 of the Separation Allowance regulation

provides that deduction should be made from the Civil pay of Civil servants and Government employees at the rate of the separation allowance issued.

This paragraph was amended by Army Order 141 of 1917, which provides that the deduction should be, in the case of a private soldier, 13*s.* 5*d.* per week from October to May, and 12*s.* per week from June to September. This amendment has now been cancelled by Army Order 2/19 1918, which provides that the deduction shall be 13*s.* 6*d.*

It should be noted that these figures are applicable only in the case of a private soldier, corresponding rates are applicable to men of higher rank.

When a soldier is living at home but messes necessarily away from his home, the rates issuable in the case of the soldier and wife only, continue to be those as previously issued in paragraph 175 (B) of the Separation Allowance regulation.

**Colonial.** The following tables show the special weekly rates of separation allowance (*exclusive of allotments from the soldier's pay*) issuable to families of British soldiers who were residing in the undermentioned Dominions at the time of the soldier's enlistment (or before the war, if he was serving when the war began), so long as they continue to reside there:—

CANADA

| | Rank of Soldier | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Corpl. and Pte. 1. | | Serjt. 2. | | Col. Serjt. 3. | | Regt. Q.M. Serjt. 4. | | Warrant Officer Class 1. 5. | |
| | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* |
| Wife | 11 | 1 | 11 | 1 | 12 | 10 | 18 | 1 | 19 | 3 |
| Wife and 1 child | 14 | 7 | 15 | 2 | 16 | 11 | 22 | 2 | 23 | 4 |
| Wife and 2 children | 18 | 1 | 19 | 3 | 21 | 0 | 26 | 3 | 27 | 5 |
| Wife and 3 children | 21 | 7 | 23 | 4 | 25 | 1 | 30 | 4 | 31 | 6 |
| Wife and 4 children | 24 | 6 | 26 | 3 | 28 | 0 | 33 | 3 | 34 | 5 |

With an additional 2*s.* 11*d.* per week for each additional child. Motherless children 5*s.* per week for each child.

### New Zealand

| | Rank of Soldier. | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Corpl. and Pte. 1. | | Serjt. 2. | | Col. Serjt. 3. | | Regt. Q.M. Serjt. 4. | | Warrant Officer Class 1. 5. | |
| | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* |
| Wife | 9 | 4 | 9 | 4 | 11 | 1 | 16 | 4 | 17 | 6 |
| Wife and 1 child | 14 | 4 | 14 | 4 | 16 | 1 | 21 | 4 | 22 | 6 |
| Wife and 2 children | 17 | 10 | 17 | 10 | 19 | 7 | 24 | 10 | 26 | 0 |
| Wife and 3 children | 19 | 10 | 19 | 10 | 21 | 7 | 26 | 10 | 28 | 0 |
| Wife and 4 children | 21 | 10 | 21 | 10 | 23 | 7 | 28 | 10 | 30 | 0 |

With an increase of 2*s.* per week for each additional child. Motherless children 5*s.* per week for each child.

### Australia

| | Rank of Soldier. | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Corpl. and Pte. 1. | | Serjt. 2. | | Col. Serjt. 3. | | Regt. Q.M. Serjt. 4. | | Warrant Officer Class 1. 5. | |
| | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* |
| Wife | 9 | 11 | 9 | 11 | 11 | 8 | 16 | 11 | 18 | 1 |
| Wife and 1 child | 14 | 11 | 14 | 11 | 16 | 8 | 21 | 11 | 23 | 1 |
| Wife and 2 children | 18 | 5 | 18 | 5 | 20 | 2 | 25 | 5 | 26 | 7 |
| Wife and 3 children | 20 | 5 | 20 | 5 | 22 | 2 | 27 | 5 | 28 | 7 |
| Wife and 4 children | 22 | 5 | 22 | 5 | 24 | 2 | 29 | 5 | 30 | 7 |

With an increase of 2*s.* per week for each additional child. Motherless children 5*s.* per week for each child.

SOUTH AFRICA

| | Rank of Soldier. | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Corpl. and Pte 1. | | Serjt. 2. | | Col. Serjt. 3. | | Regt. Q M Serjt. 4. | | Warrant Officer Class 1. 5. | |
| | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* | *s.* | *d.* |
| Wife . . . . . | 14 | 7 | 14 | 7 | 16 | 4 | 21 | 7 | 22 | 9 |
| Wife and 1 child . . | 19 | 10 | 20 | 5 | 22 | 2 | 27 | 5 | 28 | 7 |
| Wife and 2 children . | 25 | 1 | 26 | 3 | 28 | 0 | 33 | 3 | 34 | 5 |
| Wife and 3 children . | 30 | 4 | 32 | 1 | 33 | 10 | 39 | 1 | 40 | 3 |
| Wife and 4 children . | 35 | 0 | 36 | 9 | 38 | 6 | 43 | 9 | 44 | 11 |

With an increase of 4*s*. 8*d*. per week for each additional child. Motherless children 5*s*. per week for each child.

The wives and children of men serving in Colonial forces are not paid allowances by the Imperial Government, but by their respective Governments.

**Where Payment is Made.** Payment of separation allowance and allotment to wives, children, and dependants, residing outside the United Kingdom, will be made as follows—

| Place of Residence. | Paying Officer. |
|---|---|
| India . . . . | Controller of Military Accounts of the Command in which the payee is residing. |
| Australia— | |
| New South Wales. . | State Treasurer, Sydney. |
| Queensland . . . | ,, ,, Brisbane. |
| South Australia . . | ,, ,, Adelaide. |
| Victoria . . . | ,, ,, Melbourne. |
| Western Australia. . | ,, ,, Perth. |
| Tasmania . . . | ,, ,, Hobart. |
| New Zealand . . . | Paymaster-General, Wellington. |
| Canada<br>Newfoundland . . | Officer Paying Pensions, Ottawa. |
| West Indies (except Bermuda and Jamaica). | The Treasurers of the respective Islands. |

| Place of Residence. | Paying Officer. |
|---|---|
| Bermuda . . . | Command Paymaster, Bermuda. |
| Jamaica . . . | ,, ,, Jamaica. |
| South Africa / East Africa . . . | ,, ,, Pretoria. |
| Ceylon . . . | ,, ,, Ceylon. |
| China . . . | ,, ,, Hong-Kong. |
| Straits Settlements . | ,, ,, Singapore. |
| Gibraltar . . . | ,, ,, Gibraltar. |
| Malta . . . | ,, ,, Malta. |
| Egypt . . . | ,, ,, Cairo. |
| St. Helena . . . | Acting Paymaster, St. Helena. |
| Protectorates in Africa . | The Treasurers of the Protectorates. |
| Continent of Europe (Allied and Neutral Countries). | Home Paymaster where practicable (by foreign money order). |
| Other places outside H.M. Dominions . . | H.M. Consular Officers. |

# SEPARATION ALLOWANCES: DEPENDANTS

## SEPARATION ALLOWANCES ISSUABLE TO DEPENDANTS OTHER THAN WIFE AND CHILDREN

**Dependants.** (*a*) 'Dependants' means such members of the soldier's family (other than wife and legitimate children or step-children) as were wholly or in part dependent upon his earnings at the time of his enlistment or mobilization. The 'soldier's family' includes his father, mother, step-father, step-mother, grandson, granddaughter (including illegitimate children of whom the soldier is a grandfather), and the illegitimacy of the soldier himself will not affect the position of his parent or grandparents.

It also includes a woman who has been entirely dependent upon the soldier for her maintenance, as well as the children of the soldier in charge of such woman (A.O. 440/1915).

By A.O.176/1915, the dependants of soldiers other than wives and children as defined in A.O. 440/1914, were also made eligible as from March 1, 1915.

The definition has been extended to "include any person who is found as a fact to have been dependent on the soldier for a reasonable period before mobilization or enlistment if later. When the soldier has been living in the same house, the assistance given by him must have been given on a bona-fide domestic basis Cases in which he merely paid for services rendered (e.g., by a landlady or a paid housekeeper) are not included (A.O. 101/1915).

An unmarried soldier means a widower, and dependants upon such a soldier may include his dependent sons and daughters over the age up to which separation allowance is usually issuable (A.O. 440/1915).

Dependants are dealt with under two classes :—

A. The soldier's father and mother or any other person whom he had supported on account of the ties of natural affection.

The conditions of issue are as follows :—

There must be proof of actual dependence prior to mobilization or enlistment.

Except where otherwise provided separation allowance is only issuable while the soldier makes an allotment.

Ordinarily the combined total of separation allowance and allotment issued in respect of any one soldier must not exceed the amount which the soldier had contributed in the past.

The limit of separation allowance and allotment is ordinarily the standard rate for a wife only; but when more persons than one were dependent on the same soldier, the maximum is that which would be payable if the first dependant had been a wife and the other had been children.

A soldier may make a higher allotment, which will be added to the total issuable, but no additional separation allowance will be added in consequence.

No allowance is issuable to a dependant, Class A, if an allowance is issuable to a dependant, Class B.

A dependant, Class A, may receive separation allowance in respect of a man temporarily living at home, whether on duty or sick furlough and drawing a consolidated allowance for lodging and rations or, while messed regimentally, is drawing lodging allowance.

In the case of a dependant, Class B, the conditions of issue are :—

1. That there must be proof that the woman has been dependent for her maintenance on the soldier, and has constantly, through a reasonable period prior to mobilization or enlistment of the soldier, been supported by him.

It will be understood that it is only necessary to establish the fact of regular and bona-fide support, and not its degree.

2. An allotment of pay must be made by the soldier, whether at home or abroad, at the full rate for the wife.

3. The rates will be as for soldiers' wives and children in ordinary circumstances, including the London allowance where admissible (A.O. 2/1916).

**Children.** If the children of the soldier are living in charge of a dependant who is neither their mother nor drawing separation allowance as a dependant, Class B, the motherless rate is admissible and the allowance to the dependant in charge of the children and of any other dependants in the household will be assessed separately. But in assessing the degree of dependence a deduction will be made from the total sum formerly paid by the soldier, to represent the expenditure on the children.

Separation allowance is issuable for the illegitimate child of a married soldier provided the child is a member of his household. It is also issuable for adopted children, if the case is thoroughly substantiated.

Separation allowance is not issuable for the illegitimate child of an unmarried soldier if separation allowance is being drawn by a dependant of that soldier and the child is not in the care of that dependant. If, however, no separation allowance is being issued to the dependant, then separation allowance is issuable in respect of the illegitimate child at the motherless rate without any contribution by the soldier if the child was fully maintained by him in the house in which he lived prior to mobilization or enlistment, or if not living with the soldier, up to the amount of the prior maintenance within the limit of the motherless rate, provided in the latter case that the soldier first contributes the required allotment from his pay as in B. If the soldier's prior maintenance of the child was made under an Order of Court, the contribution required towards the amount of the prior maintenance will be the usual stoppage under Section 145, Army Act, as follows :—

Where the soldier is a Warrant Officer, Class 1, not holding an honorary commission, in respect of a wife or children, 1*s.* 6*d.*, and in respect of a bastard child, 1*s.*

Where the soldier is a Warrant Officer, Class 2, not holding an honorary commission, or a Non-commissioned Officer who is not below the rank of serjeant, in respect to wife or children, 1*s.*; in respect to a bastard child, 7*d.*

In the case of any other soldier, in respect of wife or child, 6*d.*; in respect of bastard child, 4*d.*

It is further provided in the same section that no proceedings instituted shall be valid against a soldier of the regular forces if serving, after such soldier is under orders for service beyond the seas. Section 138 of the Army Act authorizes the deduction of the above sums from the ordinary pay of the soldier in question.

If separation allowance is being issued in respect of a wife or legitimate children separated from the soldier prior to his enlistment, no allowance is payable to any other dependant.

Separation allowance is payable for any children whom a soldier may have maintained as his own; that is to say, his illegitimate children, step-children, or children he may have adopted (A.O. 100/1915).

**Maintenance Order.** A maintenance order in favour of the wife or children may be met entirely from the soldier's pay, consequently separation allowance may continue to be issued in favour of the dependant. If, however, he is not able, after satisfying the maintenance order, to pay the required allotment requisite to secure allowance in favour of a dependent, Class B, no allowance will be issued to that dependant. In such cases, the dependency is assessed as under the regulations governing the issue of allowance to dependants, Class A, and the allowance is contingent upon the required allotment. In order that separation allowance may be issuable in respect of the illegitimate child of a married man, that child must be a member of his household.

It should be carefully noted that in all cases the pre-

enlistment basis of dependence is strictly adhered to in the assessment of separation allowances; subsequent changes are not taken into account in order to increase the allowance, nor will any claim to an allowance because of dependence which has arisen after the date of enlistment or mobilization be considered.

The amount of the allowance is decided by the Pension Officer and Pension Commitee after investigation of the statements in declarations made by the parties concerned (A.C.I. 632/1916).

**Allotments.** It is commonly understood, though erroneously, that the Government allowance to dependants equals the extent of pre-enlistment cash dependency. The fact is that the gross issue supposed to represent the extent of dependency is made up of allotment plus allowance. Suppose the man has been allowing his mother £1 per week, the cost of his maintenance may be estimated at 10*s*., dependency would then be assessed at 10*s*. To secure this sum inclusive of allotment, the soldier's contribution must be 2*s*. 11*d*., to which the Government will add 7*s*. 1*d*. If, however, the man allots 5*s*., the difference between the required allotment 2*s*. 11*d*. and 5*s*., which is 2*s*. 1*d*., should be added to the 10*s*., making a total of 12*s*. 1*d*. This is not the practice in a great many cases. On the contrary, the Government reduces its contribution from 7*s*. 1*d*. to 5*s*., making a total issue of 10*s*.

When the extent of the dependence has been decided upon, the soldier must allot from his pay, and the Government will contribute the amounts in accordance with the following scale weekly :—

PRIVATES OR CORPORALS

| If the soldier paid to the household over and above the cost of his own support | | | | | | He must allot | | | | The Government pays | | | | Total. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| *s.* | *d.* | | *s.* | *d.* | | *s.* | *d.* | | | *s.* | *d.* | | | *s.* | *d.* |
| | | up to | 3 | 0 | .. | 0 | 7 | per week | .. | 2 | 5 | .. | | 3 | 0 |
| 3 | 0 | ,, | 5 | 0 | .. | 1 | 3 | ,, | .. | 3 | 10 | .. | | 5 | 0 |
| 5 | 0 | ,, | 7 | 6 | .. | 1 | 9 | ,, | .. | 5 | 9 | .. | | 7 | 6 |
| 7 | 6 | ,, | 9 | 6 | .. | 2 | 4 | ,, | .. | 7 | 2 | .. | | 9 | 6 |
| 9 | 6 | ,, | 11 | 6 | .. | 2 | 11 | ,, | .. | 8 | 7 | .. | | 11 | 6 |
| 11 | 6 | ,, | 12 | 6 | .. | 3 | 6 | ,, | .. | 9 | 0 | .. | | 12 | 6 |

### Serjeants

Where the dependence upon the soldier did not exceed :

| | s. | d. | | | s. | d. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | 2 | 6 | weekly, the allotment must be | | 0 | 7 | per week. |
| Exceeding | 2 | 6 | but not exceeding | 4 0 .. | 1 | 2 | ,, |
| ,, | 4 | 0 | ,, ,, | 5 6 .. | 1 | 9 | ,, |
| ,, | 5 | 6 | ,, ,, | 7 0 .. | 2 | 4 | ,, |
| ,, | 7 | 0 | ,, ,, | 8 6 .. | 2 | 11 | ,, |
| ,, | 8 | 6 | ,, ,, | 10 0 .. | 3 | 6 | ,, |
| ,, | 10 | 0 | ,, ,, | 11 6 .. | 4 | 1 | ,, |
| ,, | 11 | 6 | ,, ,, | 13 0 .. | 4 | 8 | ,, |
| ,, | 13 | 0 | ,, ,, | 14 6 .. | 5 | 3 | ,, |
| ,, | 14 | 0 | ,, ,, | 14 6 .. | 5 | 10 | ,, |

If a person has been dependent upon more than one soldier, the required allotment may be contributed jointly by the soldiers in question, but the total weekly sum payable will not exceed the amount which the dependant would receive as the sole dependant upon the soldier highest in rank of the soldiers in question.

**Joint Allotment.** If two or more dependants were jointly dependent upon two or more soldiers, the total allowance payable will not exceed the wife's rate for each dependant equal to the number of soldiers; the children's rate will be issued to additional dependants whether they be children or adults.

Two or more soldiers may nominate the same dependant, each making his proportionate share of the allotment required, in which case a composite payment may be made.

Separation allowance may be issued for the child of a soldier brother or brothers who contributed to the support of the household in lieu of a child's allowance in respect of the father, or if above the age of 16 years, and therefore not eligible for such allowance (A.O. 216/1916).

**Transfer or Death of Payee.** If a dependant, Class A, dies whilst in receipt of separation allowance, such allowance, with allotment, may be transferred to another member of the same family, residing in the same household. The applicant must complete Army Form

O. 1839 B, which may be obtained from the paymaster of the soldier's regiment. If the home is being maintained, and the applicant otherwise eligible, separation allowance will be issued less the amount of one share, such amount being arrived at by dividing the weekly dependence as originally determined (not including any excess allotment) by the number of members of the original household. Such deduction will in no case exceed the amount shown in the following table :—

| Original Number in Household. | Maximum weekly Deductions where the Allowance is in respect of One Soldier. | Two Soldiers. | Three Soldiers. |
|---|---|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* |
| 2 persons . . | 5 0 .. | 12 6 .. | 12 6 |
| 3 ,, . . | 3 6 .. | 5 0 .. | 12 6 |
| 4 ,, . . | 2 0 .. | 3 6 .. | 5 0 |
| 5 ,, . . | 2 0 .. | 2 0 .. | 3 6 |
| 6 ,, . . | 2 0 .. | 2 0 .. | 2 0 |

These maxima represent generally the amount that would be paid in respect of the last child, in a household of the same number of persons consisting of mother and children.

If the share is less than 1*s.*, no deduction is made.

If the home is broken up, a continuance of the allowance will only be made—

(*a*) Where the soldier did not live in the home before mobilization or enlistment, but made a regular money allowance.

(*b*) In very exceptional cases in which a soldier who lived in the home before enlistment would in all probability, in spite of the home being broken up, have continued to assist certain members of the household who, through age, youth, or infirmity, are in need of such assistance.

If the soldier is serving at home, no payment will be made unless he has notified on Army Form O. 1841 B his consent to transfer his allotment.

If the soldier is serving abroad, payment will be made provisionally to the claimant, but will be suspended unless a reply is received from the soldier within one month in

addition to the time ordinarily taken for the double journey in the transmission of correspondence to and from the station at which the soldier is serving, but if after payment has been suspended Army Form O. 1841 B is received consenting to the transfer of allotment, payment will be resumed, but only from the date of receipt by the paymaster.

If the soldier is a prisoner of war, payment will not be suspended pending further instructions.

If the soldier is missing or dead, it will be assumed that he would have consented to transfer his allotment.

The reduced allowance will be issuable as from the date of cessation of the original payment, provided that the application for transfer was received within one month of the original payee's death, otherwise it will be issuable from the date of application.

**Issue in respect of Son if Father is serving.** If a soldier is serving in respect of whom separation allowance is being issued to his wife, who is also the mother of a soldier serving, a member of the same family and residing in the same household prior to enlistment, the son may make an allotment to a member of his family residing in the same household, and claim an allowance including with allotment proportionate to extent of cash dependency prior to enlistment. The increased separation allowance is not issued to such a child, because the allowance already issued in respect of that child is issued as if the child were an adult, and consequently not considered to be entitled to the children's increase, in other words, it is a dependant, Class A.

**S.A. Claims.** The time limit for making an application for separation allowance as set forth in A.O. 1/1916 was abolished by A.O. 310/1916, published on September 1 of that year. This order provides that the soldier may, through his Commanding Officer, submit a claim on A.F.O. 1838. If the claim is made more than one month after the soldier's enlistment, it is marked ' belated claim, strict investigation necessary.' Claims may be made by a dependant if—

(*a*) The soldier is serving abroad, in which case

A.F.O. 1838 must be completed by the soldier and compared with the declaration made by the dependant.

(*b*) Claim will be received if a soldier is a prisoner of war, but no payment will ordinarily be made unless and until a soldier makes the necessary allotment. If there are difficulties in the way of communicating with the soldier, the case will be submitted for special consideration (A.O. 383/1914).

(*c*) If a man is reported missing or dead, a claim may be made, when it will be assumed that he would have agreed to make the necessary allotment. If the claim is held to be good, the continuation period of thirty or twenty-six weeks will reckon from the date on which notification of death was first sent to the next of kin. After this period has expired, claims will be dealt with under Army Council instruction to A.O. 85/1916, which provides that separation allowance may be paid for four clear weeks before the date on which the issue of separation allowance will expire.

If allotment and allowance has been paid in the case of a dependant, Class A, the regulations provide that it should issue for twenty-six weeks following the known date of the soldier's death. It is within the discretion, however, of the Ministry of Pensions to award a gratuity at any time before the expiration of this period. If a gratuity be awarded no cognizance is taken of the expired portion of the twenty-six weeks ; that is to say, if an allowance and allotment has been paid for ten weeks and a gratuity of £30 be awarded, the amount of allowance and allotment that would have been paid for ten additional weeks is not added to the amount of the gratuity.

A man on enlistment may make an allotment from his pay in favour of a dependant, say mother, and claim allowance on her behalf. Considerable time, say from six to eight weeks, is required for the purpose of investigation as to the extent of dependency. The allotment is deducted from the man's pay immediately, and should be issued at once to the dependant. If the application form for allowance is mislaid or lost, as is often the case,

and at the end, say of six months, a new application form is required, no arrears of allowance are issuable and no allowance is issued when granted ordinarily prior to the date of the second application.

If the claim is refused, the amount of the allotment will be paid to the person named, and the soldier will be informed of the fact.

The procedure for dealing with dependant's claim not returned by the Pension Officer in reasonable time assumes that four weeks should be accepted as the normal period which may be expected to elapse before a claim is returned—

At the end of five weeks from date of despatch of F. 1839 to the Pension Officer he will be written to, if the claim has not been returned and no correspondence has ensued which will explain the delay. At the end of seven weeks a reminder will be sent him.

If at the end of two calendar months the claim has not been received back and the paymaster has not been informed of the cause of delay, a report will be made to the War Office. Such reports should be made monthly on the 15th of each month, and will include—

(*a*) Cases which have exceeded the above two months' limit since the date of the prior return.

(*b*) Cases, if any, reported in the prior return and which are still outstanding.

In order to guard against cases being erroneously reported to the War Office, or the Pension Officer being erroneously reminded, it is of the greatest importance that the dependants' registers should be kept most accurately and strictly up to date.

If owing to delay in assessing the claim, no payment has been made at the end of four weeks from the date of application, payment of the amount of the allotment for that period will be made providing that no advance has been made by the Local Committee or other recognized society.

If the claim is admitted and the dependant is not satisfied with the amount awarded, an appeal may be made to

have the award re-determined, upon Form 1840 A, which may be obtained at any Post Office.

Applications for separation allowance from the dependants of soldiers residing abroad are submitted to the Army Council for approval. Pending investigation, the allotment offered by the soldier is deducted from his pay. If the claim is found to be inadmissible, the amount of the allotment is paid to the dependant named; but if the claim is admitted, the pay officer concerned will make provisional payments until the case has been officially recognized.

In the case of a soldier serving abroad, no separation allowance will be issued until the necessary form has been completed.

If the soldier or sailor is a prisoner of war, no allowance will be issued until his consent has been received to the necessary allotment.

If a soldier is reported dead or missing he will be presumed to have agreed that an allotment should be made, and an allowance will be issued, but only for the continuation period from the date of notification (A.O. 1/1916).

By the provisions of Army Order 329/15, published on August 25, 1915, it was decided to issue while investigation of a dependant's claim was being made, the amount of the allotment offered by a soldier on Army Form 1838.

Men who are already in the service and who are about to marry are requested to inform their commanding officer of the fact not less than two weeks before the date set for the marriage; and at the same time to state whether separation allowance is being paid and to whom.

This precaution is necessary to secure the immediate payment of the allowance to the wife; if this is not done the wife will only receive the allowance from the pay day following the last payment to any other dependant, if such payment is being made (A.O. 157/1916).

Separation allowance is issued to a dependant other than a wife or child as from the date on which the claim to an allowance is made by the soldier, if made within ten days of enlistment otherwise from date of application.

The fact that there is necessarily some delay in assessing the amount payable does not affect the total amount paid. The arrears of the allowance are paid as soon as the assessment is decided, and subsequent weekly payments are made in the usual way.

In order to obviate hardship while the assessment is under consideration Local War Pensions Committees are authorized where necessary to make advances to the dependants, and these advances are deducted by the War Office from arrears and repaid direct to the Local Committee.

'Under War Office regulations, separation allowance issued to a dependant other than a wife or child as from the date on which his claim to an allowance is made by the soldier.'

In cases where the husband made no payment before mobilization or enlistment, allowances are issued for the children, if any, at the motherless rate, whether living with the mother or elsewhere.

In A.O. 101/1915 it is laid down that 'A dependant otherwise eligible is not in any case barred by the possession of income from other sources' from receiving separation allowance.

In the case of a wife, however, Mr. Foster, replying in the House of Commons on March 29, 1916, to a question by Mr. Watt as to whether 'separation allowance to the wife of a soldier is not granted where at the time of enlistment she had a business of her own from which an income was derived, and that no separation allowance is paid during the whole currency of the War in the case where the wife's business has been ruined by the exigencies of the War,' said, 'The answer is in the negative.'

**Dependent Mother.** A dependent mother who loses her separation allowance and allotment in consequence of the marriage of her son, is eligible for a special separation allowance under 8 Reg. p. 11, of an amount not exceeding the sum which the son might have contributed to his mother's support had he married prior to his enlistment.

**Appeals.** Any dependant dissatisfied with the allowance issued may appeal on A.F.O. 1840*a*, which may be obtained at any Post Office.

When a decision has been given by the Appeals Committee, no further appeal will be entertained unless facts and evidence not previously considered are adduced. The form of appeal should be sent direct to the Paymaster of the unit in which the soldier concerned is serving, who will forward the papers to the Secretary, Appeals Committee, 119, Victoria Street, London, S.W.1.

# SEPARATION ALLOWANCES : NAVY

## SEPARATION ALLOWANCES FOR THE WIVES, CHILDREN, AND OTHER DEPENDANTS OF SAILORS AND MARINES, ETC.

These are an entirely new State provision, and are estimated to cost no less a sum than £2,250,000 per year during the continuance of the War.

It will be noticed that the amount of the grants is lower than that granted to men in the Army. The reason for this is—

1. The sailor's pay is better, generally speaking, than that of the soldier of corresponding rank.
2. The sailor has open to him opportunities of earning non-substantive pay not available to the soldier; and
3. The sailor has greater opportunities of promotion than the soldier.

For the period of the War, separation allowance is being paid to men of all Naval ratings, Marines, and Reservists borne on the books of H.M. ships, provided that the man in each case makes an allotment of not less than 5*s.* per week in favour of his wife, and the Admiralty has power, under the Naval Discipline Act, 1866 (29/30 Vic.), to enforce an allotment not in excess of 7*s.* per week in the case of Petty Officer ratings, and 3*s.* 6*d.* per week in that of lower ratings, in cases of bastardy, to which no government allowance is issuable.

## Men

**Wives and Children.** For the period of the present War, separation allowance is being paid to the wives and families of Naval ratings, Marines and Reservists, borne on the books of H.M. ships, provided that in each instance the man voluntarily declares an allotment of at least 5*s.* a week in favour of his wife.

The weekly rates of allowance for wives and children are as follows—

### Scale A

| Ratings. | Wife, per week. | Children, per week. |
|---|---|---|
| *Sailor.* | | |
| Class I— | | |
| Ordinary Seaman . . | *s. d.* | 1st child, 4*s.* |
| Able Seaman . . | 6 0 | 2nd ,, 3*s.* |
| Leading Seaman . . | | 3rd ,, 2*s.* |
| 2nd Class Petty Officer and equivalent ratings. | | 4th and subsequent children, 1*s.* each. |
| Class II— | | |
| Petty Officer . . | 7 0 | Ditto. |
| Petty Officer, 1st Class, and equivalent ratings | | |
| Class III— | | |
| Chief Petty Officer and equivalent ratings . | 8 0 | Ditto. |

| *Marine on Ship's Books.* | | |
|---|---|---|
| Class I— | | |
| Private . . . . | *s.* *d.* | 1st child, 4*s.* |
| Corporal . . . | 6 0 | 2nd ,, 3*s.* |
| Serjeant and equivalent ranks. . . . | | 3rd ,, 2*s.* |
| | | 4th and subsequent children, 1*s.* each. |
| Class II— | | |
| Colour-Serjeant and equivalent ranks . . | 7 0 | Ditto. |
| Class III— | | |
| Warrant Officer, Class II, Quartermaster - Serjeant and Staff Serjeant . . . . | 8 0 | 1st child, 4*s.*<br>2nd ,, 3*s.*<br>3rd ,, 2*s.*<br>4th and subsequent children, 1*s.* each. |
| Class IV— | | |
| Warrant Officer, Royal Marines (except Royal Marine Gunners). . | 9 0 | Ditto. |

Motherless children, 5*s.* a week each, irrespective of the father's rank.

In cases where there are children under 14, allowances in addition to those shown in the above scale may be paid for periods not earlier than January 18, 1917, the scale of the extra payment being as follows—

SCALE B

| No. of children under 14. | Class I. | Class II. | Class III. | Class IV. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* |
| 1 | 2 0 | 1 0 | — | — |
| 2 | 3 6 | 2 6 | 1 6 | 0 6 |
| 3 | 5 0 | 4 0 | 3 0 | 2 0 |
| 4 | 6 0 | 5 0 | 4 0 | 3 0 |
| 5 | 7 0 | 6 0 | 5 0 | 4 0 |
| 6 | 8 0 | 7 0 | 6 0 | 5 0 |
| 7 | 9 0 | 8 0 | 7 0 | 6 0 |
| 8 | 10 0 | 9 0 | 8 0 | 7 0 |

Motherless children, 2*s.* a week for the first child and 1*s.* a week for each other child under 14, irrespective of the father's rating or rank.

During the period of the War, separation allowance is issued in respect of Warrant Officers (not Commissioned Warrant Officers) of the Naval and Reserve Forces, and the allowance issued is governed by the ordinary separation allowance regulations. It is in no circumstances payable in respect of officers paid at a Mercantile rate of pay, and a minimum allotment of 20*s*. is required, to secure an allowance in the case of a wife.

The scale of payment is as follows—

8*s*. a week for the wife.
4*s*. for the 1st child.
3*s*. ,, ,, 2nd ,,
2*s*. ,, ,, 3rd ,,
1*s*. for each other child.

Additional allowances are payable when there are children under 14 years of age, namely 1*s*. 6*d*. per week where there are two children under 14; 3*s*. when there are three, and an additional 1*s*. a week for each child beyond that number.

The allowance for motherless children is 5*s*. a week with additions as under Scale B, for children under 14 years of age.

The allowances for dependants are determined by—

1. The degree of pre-War or pre-entry dependence;
2. The amount of allotment; and
3. The allowance for wife and children if there are more dependants than one.

All ratings must clearly understand that these allowances are intended not as a means of relieving them of any part of their obligations to their wives and children, or other dependants, but as an additional provision which should free men from anxiety on their relatives' behalf during the period of the War. In this connection it is especially desirable that Commanding Officers should see that allotments are not reduced without sufficient reason.

On a child attaining the age of 14 the extra allowance ceases, but the normal rates continue until the age of 16 is reached.

The payment in respect of children is made ordinarily for those under 16 years of age, but may be granted beyond

that age on the recommendation of the Local Education Authority. Allowances under Scale B (paragraph 2) are not payable for these children in any circumstances.

Allowance is made for children adopted prior to the War subject to the production—

1. Of the deed of adoption, or—

2. Of a statutory declaration to the effect that the child was, and is, permanently maintained as a member of the man's family.

Separation allowance is not issuable for—

1. Inmates of Asylums, Workhouses, or kindred Institutions, or for—

2. Wives living apart from their husbands, except that in the case of a reservist who, prior to his mobilization, was contributing for such a person's maintenance a sum larger than his Naval pay now admits of his paying, the question of the issue of some allowance could be considered, provided the man voluntarily allotted as much as his pay would allow. Women living apart from their husbands have no claim to payment for children living in their care.

When a man has declared an allotment of at least 5*s.* a week in favour of his wife, a form of application to enable her to apply for a Navy separation allowance is issued to her direct from the Admiralty (or in the case of a marine from the Marine Division to which he is attached).

The condition as to an allotment of at least 5*s.* a week is not insisted upon in the case of motherless children, but men are expected to allot to the guardians of their children. If the children are not all in the care of one guardian, two or more allotments may be made.

There is no provision for payment of Navy separation allowance on either the wives or dependant scale to a woman who is living apart from her husband for reasons not connected with the exigencies of the Naval service. A modified allowance, within the limits of the scale of separation allowances, can be granted if the man is unable to allot from his Naval wages a sum equal to that which he contributed regularly until he entered H.M. service.

In such a case, if the man allots as large an amount as his pay will reasonably permit, thus indicating his willingness to fulfil his obligations as far as his altered circumstances will allow, the difference between his allotment and his pre-entry contribution can be paid as separation allowance.

The instructions as to dependency issued by the Admiralty are very precise. The pre-enlistment basis of dependency is strictly adhered to as governing the entitlement of dependants to separation allowances. Subsequent changes for better or worse are, according to the instruction, to be ignored, and no separation allowance is issuable if the dependence arises subsequent to enlistment or mobilization.

If a husband and wife have been separated—legally or otherwise—and the man has regularly contributed towards the support of his wife and his children, if any were in her charge, the difference between the amount of his allotment and the sum he contributed toward their support will be provided by the Government, within the limits of the separation allowance rates.

Children by a former wife are not regarded as motherless if their step-mother is alive and in receipt of separation allowance.

The term 'dependant' is taken to include any person who is found as a fact to have been dependent upon a sailor, marine, or reservist before the War, or his entry into the service for the period of the War. Subject to proof of actual dependence, separation allowance is issuable to such dependant, providing the man makes the necessary allotment.

The scale of allowances in no case exceeds that for a wife, and within this amount the award is governed by the degree of dependence existing before the War, or before the man entered the service. If the sum paid by the man to his dependant included the cost of his own keep, this is taken into account in arriving at the amount of benefit derived by the dependant from the payment.

The amount of the allowance cannot exceed half the amount of the dependence within the maximum payable

to a wife, and to secure this the man must make an allotment equal to the amount of such dependence. That is to say, if a man allowed his mother 7*s.* a week before the War, the Government would add to that half the amount, 3*s.* 6*d.*

In the case of a reservist, if the man allots half the amount he paid before he entered the service, less the cost of his own support, if that was included, the Government will pay the other half as separation allowance. For instance, if a man contributed to the household 15*s.* per week, 10*s.* of which represented the cost of his own keep, 5*s.* is taken as the amount of dependence. If he makes an allotment of half this amount, 2*s.* 6*d.*, the Government will make an allowance of the other half.

It cannot be too clearly realized how essential it is that every facility should be afforded to new entries to declare allotments at the earliest possible opportunity after entry. Not only does delay in the matter keep the man's wife or other dependant without the support which he or she needs and has been accustomed to receive from him, but it involves delay in the grant of any separation allowance that may be payable—and, in fact, if the allotment is not declared within a month of the man's entry, arrears of separation allowance are forfeited.

## CONDITIONS UNDER WHICH ALLOWANCES TO DEPENDANTS OF DECEASED SEAMEN AND MARINES ARE AWARDED.

There must be proof of actual dependence, an unsupported statement will not be accepted. Contributions made towards the maintenance of a parent or other person on entry into the service, or on the outbreak of War by a man already in the service cannot be accepted as proving dependency.

Circumstances due to the War are not a ground for claim, nor can they be accepted as reasons for the award of an increased allowance.

As in the case of soldiers, any excess of allotment

above that required to secure the amount of assessed dependency will not be met by an increased Government allowance.

Subject to proof of actual dependence prior to the War, or prior to the man's entry if later, separation allowance is also issuable to dependants, provided the man himself makes an allotment to his dependant.

Separation allowance to a dependant does not exceed the scale for a wife. Within this maximum the allowance to be awarded is governed strictly by the extent to which dependence existed prior to the War, or prior to the man's enlistment, and cannot exceed half the amount of such dependence.

The maximum allowance is increased to the scale for a wife and children equal to the number of dependants when there are more than one upon a seaman. The rule is that one dependant shall receive an allowance in addition to one seaman, but a second or more dependants may receive an allowance as children. The maximum allowance issuable in the case of a person dependent on two or more men holding different ratings is that payable to the wife of a man holding the rating which carries the highest allowance. When allowances are issuable for additional dependants the scale upon which they are issued does not carry with it the increases given under Scale B.

Within the maximum of the rate payable to a wife the allowance to the dependant of an active service rating will equal half the amount of the dependence, as defined above, provided he continues to allot a sum equal to the amount of such dependence. If he allots a smaller sum the allowance will be proportionately reduced; but if he is able to allot more, the allowance will remain unaltered. Thus, in the case of an active service rating, the allowance granted will not exceed half the amount of the dependence, or half the amount of the current allotment, whichever is the less.

In the case of a Reservist, if he allots half the amount of the dependence, i.e., half the amount which he was in the

habit of paying in civil life (less the cost of his keep where that was included), the Admiralty will pay the other half as separation allowance. In this case also, if he allots a smaller sum, the allowance will be proportionately reduced; but if he is able to allot more, the allowance will remain unaltered. Consequently, in the case of a Reservist the allowance granted will not exceed half the amount of the dependence, or the amount of the current allotment, whichever is the less.

Men who have entered 'for hostilities' are regarded as Reservists, that being to the advantage of their dependants.

The allowance of an unmarried wife is awarded upon the scale for a wife and under the Regulations governing allowances for wives and children.

In addition to making an allotment, a man on entering the service should make a declaration on Form A.G. 11, claiming allowance in favour of any person dependent upon him prior to his entering into the service. If the allotment is made and form completed within one month after enlistment, the allowance is issuable from the Thursday following such enlistment. The form should be sent to the Admiralty, or, if the man enters the Marines, to the Marine Division to which he belongs. An appeal may be made against any award on Form A.G. 15, obtainable at any Post Office.

No allowance is issuable to a dependant if an allowance is being paid for wife and children in respect of the same man; nor can an allowance be issued to a dependant if motherless allowance is being paid in respect of the same seaman or marine.

If both a father and a son are serving, the wife may be granted a dependent allowance in respect of her son, in lieu of a child's allowance in respect of her husband, if to her advantage. A wife without a child or children in her care is ineligible for a Naval dependent allowance in respect of her serving son in addition to a wife's allowance in respect of her husband.

When some of the children are in the care of their mother and others in the care of some other person, the

total allowance issuable is the same as if they all lived together. The allowance is divided between the wife and the guardian, the highest rate being paid for the eldest child and then according to the ages of the children. If any of the children are maintained in a charitable Institution, they are considered to be in the mother's care, irrespective of their age.

Changes which have taken place in a dependant's circumstances since the outbreak of War, or since the man's entry, if later, cannot be taken into account in assessing separation allowance, that allowance being awarded solely by reference to pre-War or pre-entry conditions.

Separation allowance is issued in respect of boys with less than three months' service, it being anticipated that the boy will make an allotment in favour of his dependant when the regulations permit of him doing so.

Only in exceptional circumstances will an allowance be paid to a dependant resident outside the United Kingdom.

No allowance is issuable in respect of a deserter, but is payable in respect of men, irrespective of allotment, who are temporarily detained or in debt.

If separation allowance is in the course of issue at the time of the death of a seaman or marine, it is continuable with allotment for twenty-six weeks following the date of death. If the allotment only was paid, issue would cease four weeks from the date of the official announcement of death.

An additional sum of 3*s.* 6*d.* weekly is paid to dependants residing within the London Postal Area, subject to the limitations and conditions applicable to the soldier.

The regulations regarding extension of allowances to children beyond the age of 16 years, and to separation allowances payable to persons maintained in rate-aided institutions, applicable to soldiers, apply also to sailors; but the total separation allowance issuable to dependant may not exceed the scale for a wife, including the London allowance where applicable.

If there are several persons dependent on one seaman, the maximum is increased to the scale for a wife and a

number of children corresponding to the number of additional dependants, provided the total amount of dependants and rate of current allotment admit of such increase. If there are two seamen and three dependants, an allowance is issuable to each of the two dependants in respect of the two men. The third is regarded as children for allowance purposes. If a person was dependent on two or more men holding different ratings, the allowance awarded is that payable to the wife of the man holding the rating carrying the highest allowance.

**Advances on Separation Allowance: Navy.** (*a*) No advance is issuable to men who are in receipt of the Mercantile rate of pay.

No advance will be made in any circumstances until an allotment has been received.

All advances are recoverable, either directly from the dependant, or by subsequent deductions from the separation allowance.

## FAMILY ALLOWANCE—COASTGUARD

By a Statutory Rule dated August 8, 1917, it was provided that Chief Coastguard Officers who rank with Warrant Officers R.N. and also Coastguard ratings above the rank of Chief Officer may receive a family allowance in respect of their children under the age of 14 years, and in the event of being detached from their proper stations for duty elsewhere such family allowance may be paid to their families.

Allowances are issuable at the following rates—

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| One child under 14 years. . . . | 3*s.* 6*d.* | per week. |
| Two children under 14 years . . . | 7*s.* 0*d.* | ,, |
| For each additional child under 14 years . | 2*s.* 0*d.* | ,, |

If the officer or man is detached for duty from his station for a period of seven days or more the above rates may be increased by 3*s.* per week, provided that subsis-

tence allowance is not issued, and an allotment is made of not less than 20*s.* a week in the case of an officer and not less than 5*s.* per week in the case of a rating, such allotment to be made concurrently with the allowance.

# ARMY PENSIONS, ETC.

## PENSIONS FOR DISABLED OFFICERS, FOR OFFICERS' FAMILIES AND FOR NURSES

The following note has been issued from the Ministry of Pensions—

A new Royal Warrant has received His Majesty's sanction dealing with pensions of disabled officers, officers' families, and nurses. It is applicable to past as well as future cases arising out of the present War, but has effect as regards pensions from April 1, 1917. The Minister of Pensions wishes to impress on all concerned that the task of reconsidering and reassessing past cases under the terms of the new regulations is a large one and must necessarily take some time. He would therefore earnestly ask that his Department may be spared from having to deal with unnecessary letters.

Officers need *not* apply to have their retired pay reassessed. Retired pay current on or after April 1 will, if the new terms are more favourable to the officer, be reassessed *without application*, with effect from that date, or from the date of grant if later. It will be some time, however, before all cases can be dealt with.

Cases in which gratuities have been granted to officers or no grant has been made can only be reconsidered on application in writing to the Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, S.W.1. The regiment, the date of retirement, and the number and date of any official letter dealing with the case should be given. (The Ministry are not concerned with wound gratuities, or pensions which are dealt with by the War Office.)

The two preceding paragraphs apply, with the necessary modifications, to disabled Army nurses.

The pensions of widows and children of officers in any cases affected by the New Regulations will be reassessed *without application*. The review of past cases must, however, occupy several months. The cases of motherless children will also be taken up *without application* from their guardians. Claims to education allowances (the minimum age for which is reduced to 9) will be reconsidered on application.

Cases of other relatives of officers who have been refused pensions under previous regulations will be reviewed on application in writing to the Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, S.W.1., reference being made to any previous correspondence and the official registered number being quoted.

The Royal Warrant for the retired pay of officers disabled, and for the pensions of the families and relatives of officers deceased, and for the pensions of nurses disabled in consequence of the present War, was published as an appendix to Army Order 268 in September, 1917.

The warrant applies to all officers and their relatives whose claims to retired pay, pensions or grants, arising out of the present War, and to members of the Nursing services, and has effect from April 1, 1917. In the case of such persons whose claims to retired pay, pensions or gratuities have been dealt with, or arose under previous warrants, it may, if more beneficial to them, be applied with retrospective effect from the above date, on such dates as the Minister of Pensions may decide.

The retired pay of an officer or pension of a nurse who has served as such before the date of the warrant may be assessed under previous warrants regulating retired pay or pensions if more favourable to him or her, and no grant to an officer or to a member of the Nursing services may be reassessed to their disadvantage; and any widow, child, or dependant of an officer promoted from the ranks during the War shall not be less favourably treated than if the officer had continued to serve as a soldier.

Quartermasters, Assistant Paymasters, and Inspectors of Army Schools, retired for disability, are regarded as Lieutenants.

An officer holding a permanent commission in the regular forces may be granted either the retired pay or gratuity which would have been awarded to him under the warrant of 1914, with an addition as in the last column of the First Schedule of the warrant, or the retired pay which would have been awarded under that schedule to an officer holding only a temporary commission according to the degree of his disablement, whichever is more favourable.

If the officer is in receipt of a service pension as a soldier and does not hold a permanent commission in the regular forces, he may be granted either that pension with an addition for his disability as in the last column of the First Schedule, or the retired pay for which he is eligible under that schedule.

If a disabled officer is in receipt of wounds gratuity or pension, he is only eligible for retired pay at the rate and under the conditions laid down in the warrant of 1914 unless that retired pay and gratuity or pension together amount to less than the retired pay to which he would be entitled under the present warrant. In that case an amount equal to the deficiency may be added to his retired pay.

An officer who has lost the sight of both eyes as the result of wounds received in action is granted not less than £300 a year in wounds pension and retired pay together.

Subject to the above, if a disabled officer is already in receipt of pension or retired pay as a soldier or an officer, it will be suspended so long as he is receiving a higher rate under the present warrant.

If an officer on or after general demobilization, or after retirement, or relinquishing his commission, or transfer to or reversion to the Reserve, otherwise than for misconduct or at his own request, is certified to be disabled by wounds, injuries, or disease attributable to or aggravated by Military service in the present War, and not

due to his own serious negligence or misconduct, he may be granted retired pay or gratuity as if he had retired as medically unfit for further service.

## ALLOWANCES FOR CHILDREN OF DISABLED OFFICERS

In cases of pecuniary need, the Minister of Pensions may, at his discretion, grant to a disabled officer who is in receipt of retired pay an education allowance not exceeding £50 a year in respect of each child above the age of 9. The continuance of the allowance depends upon the continuance of the retired pay. It is not granted to an officer receiving an alternative pension.

If in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions it is necessary, the allowance may be administered under such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

An alternative award may be made when it is shown that the retired pay issued under the present warrant, together with any wound gratuity or pension of which he is in receipt, together with the average earnings (if any) of which he remains capable, are less than his pre-War earnings.

The award must not exceed his pre-War earnings up to a maximum of £300 a year, plus half any pre-War earnings between £300 and £600 a year, and may be granted temporarily or permanently in lieu of such retired pay, together with the wound gratuity or pension and the earnings (if any) of which he is judged capable.

If an officer's disablement is not permanent, the grant of retired pay and allowances is temporary, and will not be made permanent unless the permanency of the disablement is established.

When the retired pay has been made permanent, it will not be altered on account of any change in his earning capacity, whether resulting from training or other cause, neither will it be subject to review unless there has been a substantial increase in the extent of the disablement

due to the original cause, or when it would be more advantageous to issue an alternative pension.

The retired pay that may be awarded is liable to a reduction of 50 per cent. if the disabled officer refuses to undergo medical treatment in a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home or otherwise, and it is certified that such treatment is necessary in his interests.

An officer in receipt of retired pay may be granted in addition to that pay the difference between it and the maximum disablement pay for any period during which he is receiving special medical treatment, subject to a deduction towards the cost of his maintenance while in the institution where treatment is given.

He may also be awarded the medical and other expenses incidental to treatment in respect of the disability for which he was retired as the Minister of Pensions may determine, and also, if disabled in the highest degree, an allowance not exceeding £78 a year in any case where the constant attendance of a second person is necessary.

## GRANTS TO DISABLED OFFICERS UNDERGOING TREATMENT

An officer in receipt of retired pay may be granted in addition to that pay—

(*a*) The difference, if any, between that pay and retired pay at the rate for the highest degree of disablement for any period during which he is prevented from earning his living by undergoing training in a technical institution or otherwise which in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions would benefit him.

(*b*) An allowance to cover fees in respect of training as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

**Gratuities for Minor Disablements.** In any case where the degree of disablement is assessed at less than 20 per cent., or where it is considered to be more in the interests of the officer, a gratuity or temporary allowance may be granted in place of any retired pay under the warrant. The grant will not exceed £500 in amount, and will be

subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

If an officer retires, relinquishes his commission, or is placed in the Territorial Force Reserve on account of medical unfitness, such unfitness being neither attributable to nor aggravated by Military service, nor due to his serious negligence or misconduct, he may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance. In exceptional circumstances it may amount to a sum not exceeding £300.

## PENSIONS AND AWARDS TO THE DEPENDANTS OF A DECEASED OFFICER

The widow of an officer may be granted—

A pension as in the second column of the Second Schedule if the officer (*a*) is killed in action, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to War service, or is killed or dies of injuries sustained on flying duty or while being carried on duty in aircraft under proper authority, or dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received, or (*b*) dies from illness which is certified as directly traceable to fatigue, privation, or exposure incident to active operations in the field within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such illness, or (*c*) dies in consequence of injuries received in the performance of Military duty otherwise than under (*a*) within seven years after having been so injured.

A pension as in the third column of the Second Schedule if the officer (*a*) dies of disease attributable to or aggravated by Military service other than as above within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such disease, or (*b*) dies of injuries attributable to Military service other than as above, and not through his own serious negligence or misconduct, within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such injuries.

In addition to the foregoing, a gratuity as in the fourth column of the Second Schedule may be awarded if the

officer is killed in action or suffers a violent death due directly or wholly to War service.

If the officer suffers a violent death, etc., his widow may be granted a further allowance as in the fifth column of the Second Schedule, and a widow awarded a pension as in the third column of that schedule may receive an allowance as in the sixth column in respect of each child maintained by her.

These allowances to children may be granted or continued up to the age of 18 in the case of sons and up to the age of 21 in the case of daughters, and may be granted or continued after the age of 18 in the case of a son who is an apprentice receiving not more than nominal wages or is being educated at a secondary school, technical institute, or university.

They may also be granted or continued after the specified ages in very special cases in which it is shown that (*a*) the children became afflicted during the officer's lifetime with some mental or bodily infirmity rendering them dependent upon him and incapable of self-support; and (*b*) that such incapacity dates from a period before the children reached the limit of age; and also (*c*) that they are in distressed circumstances.

A gratuity of one-third of the amount laid down in the fourth column of the Second Schedule may be granted in addition to children's allowance for each child if the officer suffers a violent death, etc.

The widow of an officer who suffers a violent death, etc., may be granted an education allowance not exceeding £35 a year for each child above the age of 9. It is not granted if an alternative pension is issued.

In any case in which it may become necessary to secure the proper care of a child on behalf of whom allowances are payable, the allowances may be administered under such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

A widow pensioned under the conditions set forth above who shows that she was married to the officer before the commencement of the War or of his service, whichever was the later, and that her pension together with

children's allowances is less than one-half the retired pay that might have been awarded had he survived and been incapable of supplementing that retired pay by earnings, may be granted, in lieu of such pension and children's allowances, a pension which must not exceed one-half of such officer's retired pay.

The widow of an officer not eligible for pension may be granted a gratuity of not less than one and not more than three years' pay of the appointment held by the officer, provided that—

(*a*) The officer dies while on full pay, or during the War after removal from full pay from the injury or disease for which he was removed from full pay or some closely connected disease, and there is a continuous medical history of sickness ; and

(*b*) The widow is disqualified only through the insufficiency of the officer's service for an ordinary pension.

This may be paid in a lump sum or in instalments. In the event of the officer leaving motherless children, a similar grant may be made to them under such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

A pension granted to the widow of an officer ceases on her re-marriage ; but in the event of her again becoming a widow her pension may be restored, if she is otherwise qualified. Allowances for children may be paid after re-marriage.

The widow of an officer who was at the time of his death in receipt of retired pay in consequence of disablement of not less than £70 a year, but whose death does not render her eligible for a pension as above under these regulations, may, provided she was living with the officer at the time of his death, receive a pension of not more than one-half the deceased officer's retired pay on account of his disablement.

The child of an officer who suffered a violent death, etc., may be awarded a pension of £40 a year where the child is or becomes motherless, or is not or ceases to be under the control of its mother. In the event of two or more children being maintained by one person, the

amount will be reduced to £35 for each of the children after the first.

If the officer met with a violent death, etc., or dies of disease due to or aggravated by Military service as set forth above, and did not leave a widow, but daughter or daughters only, an annual allowance equal to the ordinary rate of widow's pension may be granted to the daughter or daughters collectively. This allowance may be continued until the daughter, or the last surviving daughter, becomes disqualified by marriage.

A pension may be granted to the parent or parents of an officer regard being had to pre-War dependence, if any, and to the age or infirmity of the parent or parents.

A pension may be granted in respect of each son.

A gratuity not exceeding the value of one year's widow's pension may be granted to the parent or parents jointly of an officer, in special cases.

A pension may be granted to the sister or brother (or sisters or brothers) of an officer, provided they were wholly or partially dependent on him for support. It will not be granted or continued to a brother after the age of 18, or to a sister after the age of 21, unless he or she is unfitted by age or infirmity to earn his or her living.

A pension under the conditions as above may be granted in respect of each brother.

The awards to relatives other than widows or children are subject to the following conditions—

(1) That the officer shall have suffered a violent death, etc.

(2) That the pecuniary or other circumstances of the relatives are such as justify the award.

(3) That it shall not, together with any other pension or similar provision from public funds, exceed the pension which has been or would have been awarded to the officer's widow as in the Second Schedule, and it shall not be transferable, except that where it is granted jointly to parents, or to two or more sisters or brothers, it may be continued, wholly or in part, to the survivors.

It shall cease on marriage or re-marriage.

If the above conditions are not fulfilled, a gratuity not exceeding one-half the value of one year's widow's pension may be granted to the sisters or brothers jointly.

The following definitions are important—

**Officer.** 'Officer' means a commissioned officer, whether holding a permanent or temporary or local commission, who has served and been in receipt of Military pay as such during some period of the present war, but does not include any officer of the Indian Army, or any officer of Dominion, Colonial, or Protectorate forces, whether raised for local or general service, unless the terms of his service have been made to include the pension rights of the Regular Army.

**Widow.** 'Widow' means the widow of an officer whose marriage took place before the receipt of the wound or injury which caused his death, or before his removal from duty on account of the contraction or aggravation of the disease which caused his death; provided that the widow of a permanent regular officer married after such date shall not forfeit pension or gratuity if he survives his marriage by at least one year or it can be shown that he was manifestly in good health at the date of his marriage.

**Child.** 'Child' means the legitimate child of an officer born before or within nine months after his retirement, relinquishment of his commission, or removal to the Territorial Force Reserve; it may include a step-child regularly maintained by him.

**Parent.** 'Parent' includes a grandparent or other person who has been in the place of a parent to an officer, and has wholly or mainly supported him for not less than one year at some time before the commencement of the war.

**Pre-War Earnings.** See page 270.

**Dependence.** 'Pre-War dependence' means the amount representing the annual value of the support afforded to or of benefits conferred upon a relative by an officer for a reasonable period immediately preceding the commencement of the War or of his Military service, if

later, exclusive of any increase due to circumstances arising out of the War, in the case of entry into service or commission subsequent to the commencement of the War, and includes the following—

(*a*) Amount regularly contributed by the officer if he received no material benefits in return therefor.

(*b*) Amount regularly contributed by the officer in excess of expenditure incurred on his account.

(*c*) Money value of any benefit conferred upon the relative by the officer.

Cases in which gratuities have been granted to officers, or no grant has been made may be reconsidered on application in writing to the Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, S.W.1.

## FIRST SCHEDULE.

### Retired Pay to Disabled Officers.

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage Degree of Disablement. | Retired Pay on account of Disablement. | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Officers not holding Permanent Commissions in Regular Forces. | | | | | | Officers holding Permanent Commissions in Regular Forces. |
| | | Major-General. | Brigadier-General. | Colonel. | Lieutenant-Colonel. | Major. | Captain, Lieutenant, or Second Lieutenant. | All Ranks. |
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) | (7) | (8) | (9) |
| | Per cent. | £ | £ s. | £ s. | £ | £ s. | £ s. | £ |
| 1 | 100 | 350 | 325 0 | 275 0 | 250 | 225 0 | 175 0 | 100 |
| 2 | 80 | 280 | 280 0 | 220 0 | 200 | 180 0 | 140 0 | 80 |
| 3 | 70 | 245 | 227 10 | 192 10 | 175 | 157 10 | 122 10 | 70 |
| 4 | 60 | 210 | 195 0 | 165 0 | 150 | 135 0 | 105 0 | 60 |
| 5 | 50 | 175 | 162 10 | 137 10 | 125 | 112 10 | 87 10 | 50 |
| 6 | 40 | 140 | 130 0 | 110 0 | 100 | 90 0 | 70 0 | 40 |
| 7 | 30 | 105 | 97 10 | 82 10 | 75 | 67 10 | 52 10 | 30 |
| 8 | 20 | 70 | 65 0 | 55 0 | 50 | 45 0 | 35 0 | 20 |

In addition to retired pay under Royal Warrant of 1st December, 1914.

## SECOND SCHEDULE.

### Pensions, Gratuities, and Allowances to Officers' Widows and Children.

| Rank. | Widow's Pension. | | Widow's Gratuity. | Children's Allowance. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Art. 11 (1). | Art. 11 (2). | Art. 11 (3). | Art. 12 (1). | |
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) |
| | £ | £ | £ | £ | £ |
| Field-Marshal . . | 800 | 600 | 3,500 | 30 | 25 |
| General . . . . | 600 | 450 | 3,000 | 30 | 25 |
| Lieut.-General . . | 500 | 375 | 2,000 | 30 | 25 |
| Major-General. . . | 400 | 300 | 1,100 | 30 | 25 |
| Brigadier-General. . | 300 | 225 | 900 | 30 | 25 |
| *Colonel . . . . | 200 | 150 | 600 | 24 | 20 |
| †Lieut.-Colonel . . | 180 | 135 | 450 | 24 | 20 |
| Major . . . . . | 140 | 105 | 300 | 24 | 20 |
| Captain . . . . | 100 | 75 | 250 | 24 | 20 |
| Lieutenant . . . | 100 | 75 | 140 | 24 | 20 |
| Second Lieutenant . | 100 | 75 | 100 | 24 | 20 |

* Colonel means a Colonel who has been employed as a substantive Colonel if a combatant officer, or in the rank of Colonel if a medical, veterinary, or departmental officer.

† Including a Colonel not employed as above.

## WOUND GRATUITIES.

These grants are made to officers who have been wounded in action occasioning the loss of an eye, limb, or the use of a limb.

### Scale

| | |
|---|---|
| Colonel . . . . . | £600 |
| Lt.-Col. . . . . | £450 |
| Major . . . . . | £300 |
| Captain . . . . . | £250 |
| Lieutenant . . . . . | £140 |
| Second Lieutenant . . . . . | £100 |

If the injury sustained is certified to be very severe, though not equivalent to the loss of a limb, a gratuity upon the scale as above may be awarded if the disablement is likely to last for a year.

In other cases, a proportionate gratuity may be awarded. No award may be made of an amount less than one-fourth the amount of the scale.

## GRATUITY

Under the terms of Article 497 of the Pay Warrant, 1914, officers at the close of the War receive a gratuity of 124 days' pay for the first year of service or part of such year, and sixty-two days' pay for each subsequent year or part of year. This does not apply to men called from retired pay; these receive only half the above awards.

**A.O. 303/1917. Gratuities to Officers.**—1. With reference to Army Order 406 of 1915, relating to the issue of the gratuity under Article 497 of the Pay Warrant, especially in regard to paragraph 4, which provides for the issue in cases of relinquishment on account of ill-health, War Office authority will be given for the issue of the gratuity to officers who are entitled to it under the conditions of the above-quoted Army Order and who relinquish their commissions, or are relegated to unemployment for causes other than ill-health, before the expiration of the period of the emergency, i.e., the gratuity to which an officer may be entitled will be paid on the termination of each period of service. The fact that a further period of employment during the emergency may be contemplated will not involve postponement of the issue of gratuity earned.

2. In the case of medical and veterinary students, approval may be given for the issue of the gratuity if they are permitted to resign in order to resume their studies, provided that not less than six months' commissioned service has been rendered. This will apply only to (*a*) those students who would be able to take their degree or licence within twenty-four months, and who are, therefore, allowed under the regulations to resume their studies, and (*b*) other students not so far advanced in their studies who, owing to unfitness for ser-

vice over-seas, may also be allowed, after consideration by the War Office, to resume their studies.

3. Officers who serve with the Forces administered by the Colonial Office or with the Egyptian Army will not be eligible for the gratuity in respect of the period of such service, and the gratuity to which they may be entitled in respect of their British service will not be issued until the termination of the present emergency. Similarly, any period for which an officer (for any reason whatsoever) does not draw Army rates of full pay under the Pay Warrant will not reckon in his period of service for which gratuity is admissible.

4. In the event of an officer being taken into employment for a further period of service during the emergency, the paying authorities will take steps to ascertain and record—

(*a*) Whether the gratuity has been issued in respect of any previous period of employment, or

(*b*) Whether any previous period of employment is to reckon towards the service on which the gratuity on termination of the further period of employment will be calculated.

In all cases under (*a*) the information will be obtainable from the agent or paymaster who finally paid the officer during his previous period of employment. As regards (*b*), in all future cases of relinquishment of commission or relegation to unemployment, in which no gratuity is issued at the time, if the service will reckon towards the final gratuity this will be notified by the War Office to the paying authority, and on re-employment this information will be obtainable from the same source as that under (*a*). As regards past cases under (*b*) reference should be made to the War Office.

5. If the inquiry under paragraph 4 (*a*) shows that a gratuity has been issued, a note will be made to secure that the amount paid is deducted when assessing the gratuity, if due, on termination of employment. This assessment will be based on the total paid service during the emergency, subject to the decision referred to in paragraph 4 (*b*), and will be calculated on the rate of pay

drawn on the last day of service. If in any case it is found that the amount so calculated is less than the amount previously issued in respect of previous periods of employment, no recovery will be made from the officer.

6. The following classes of officers will be allowed to reckon their total service if taken into employment for a second time during the emergency—

(*a*) Officers who relinquish their commissions on account of ill-health not caused by Military duty, and whose service was less than six months (para. 4 of Army Order 406 of 1915).

(*b*) Medical and veterinary students permitted to resign their commissions to continue their studies who do not qualify for the gratuity under para. 2 of this Army Order.

In all other cases, re-employed officers who are ineligible for the gratuity in respect of their first period of service will not reckon such service toward the period on which the final gratuity, if one is admissible, is based.

7. If the payment of a re-employed officer is transferred from one paying authority to another, the information referred to in paragraph 4 should accompany the last pay certificate.

8. Attention is directed to the fact that until the end of the War no gratuity under Article 497 of the Pay Warrant is issuable without War Office authority.

9. The following amendment will be made in Army Order 406 of 1915—

In line 2 of paragraph 2 (*k*), *for* ' or inefficiency, or for ' *substitute* ' such inefficiency or.'

## RETIRED PAY

The terms of Article 497 of the Pay Warrant of 1914 are by A.O. 406/1915 extended to retired officers re-employed, officers of the Special Reserve, the Territorial Force, the New Armies, and to officers holding temporary commissions generally, with the following exceptions—

The gratuity is not issuable to officers—

Re-employed before the War and who continue in their peace employment during the present emergency.

Granted commissions *pro forma*.

Serving under special contracts which provide for the issue of a gratuity.

Not in receipt of Army rates of pay as laid down in the Pay Warrant.

Not in receipt of pay from Army funds.

Transferred to permanent commissions in the Regular Army.

Of the Unattached List, Territorial Force (serving with the Officers' Training Corps), who have been in receipt of Army rates of pay for a period of less than nine months, whether continuous or otherwise.

Selected for continuous service in the Royal Flying Corps.

Who voluntarily resign their commissions or voluntarily revert to unemployment before the expiration of the period of emergency.

Whose services are dispensed with for misconduct or inefficiency, or for other causes, which, in the opinion of the Army Council, disqualify them for the grant of the gratuity.

The provisions made under Article 497 of the Pay Warrant of 1914, and Army Order 406/1915, are not applicable to officers of the Royal Marines, or Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve Force, serving in the Royal Naval Division.

They are applicable, however, to officers of the Army serving in the Royal Naval Division, which as at present constituted comprises an Army Brigade and also Royal Marine and Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve Battalions.

## OFFICERS RECALLED TO SERVICE

Under the terms of Article 518 of the P.W. 1914, a retired officer is liable to be recalled to service in the Regular Forces, Special Reserve, or Territorial Force, at a time of national emergency.

This regulation does not apply to an officer—

1. Retiring under Indian regulations;
2. On account of mental or physical incapacity; or
3. On account of misconduct.

Officers of the Special Reserve or Militia and the Territorial Force may also be employed, and civilians may receive Military positions in the Imperial Forces.

These officers are entitled to receive the same rates of pay and allowances as officers of corresponding Army rank in the same arm or branch of the service; or, if holding a command or employed on the Staff, the rates of consolidated pay laid down for the appointments.

In the case of retired officers, these rates are additional to any retired pay of which they may be in receipt, and irrespective of any gratuity they may have received on retirement.

Officers employed on above who have completed the period of their engagement, whether on conclusion of the emergency in respect of which they were employed or not, or in respect of whom a shorter period of service is approved by the Army Council, are entitled to a gratuity of—

1. Thirty-one days' pay for every year or any part of a year of service, in the case of an officer who retired with retired pay or gratuity; and
2. In the case of any other officer, 124 days' pay for the first year or any part of a year, and sixty-two days' pay for each subsequent year of service or part of a year.

For the purpose of this gratuity 'pay' means regimental, departmental and staff pay only.

The foregoing provisions are not applicable to officers who during a time of national emergency are eligible for retirement, nor to officers 'taken' into employment before the occurrence of a national emergency and retained in such employment during such emergency.

## RE-ENLISTED SOLDIERS' PENSION IF GRANTED A COMMISSION

If a soldier in receipt of disability pension re-enlists or joins the Navy, or is granted a commission, the extent of his disability may be reviewed and the pension awarded may be cancelled or reduced from the date of re-enlistment.

The only exception to this regulation is that of a man who when awarded pension had completed eighteen years' service or more. In this case he may continue to receive under Article 1158 of the P.W. 1914 'a rate of pension not less than the rate which our Commissioners of Chelsea Hospital would have awarded him for service alone when he was discharged for disability.'

The article referred to (1158) provides that 'a pensioner re-enlisted during a time of national emergency may draw his pension in addition to his pay during the period of his service, but he shall not receive any addition to his pension in respect of such service unless he becomes entitled to a higher rate under the provisions of Articles 1162 to 1166.'

A.O. 443/15 amends this article by taking away any portion of the man's pension awarded for service and continuing the issue only of the amount which would have been awarded had there been no claim to pension on account of service.

In the case of pensioners with less than eighteen years' service, this concession does not apply.

## OFFICERS' ALLOWANCES

STATEMENT SHOWING THE DAILY RATES OF ALLOWANCES ISSUABLE TO CAPTAINS, LIEUTENANTS AND 2ND LIEUTENANTS, SERVING WITH THE EXPEDITIONARY FORCE.

I. CAPTAINS, LIEUTENANTS AND 2ND LIEUTENANTS ON REGI-

MENTAL (UNCONSOLIDATED) RATES OF PAY, SERVING WITH THE EXPEDITIONARY FORCES.

| Allowances. | British Armies in France. | | Egyptian Expeditionary Force. | | Salonika Expeditionary Force. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Capts. | Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. | Capts. | Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. | Capts. | Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. |
| | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Field Allowance . | 3 0 | 2 6 | 3 0 | 2 6 | 3 0 | 2 6 |
| Lodging ,, . | 2 3 | 2 0 | 2 3 | 2 0 | 2 3 | 2 0 |
| Fuel and Light Allowance (average) . . . | 0 6 | 0 6 | 0 6 | 0 6 | 0 6 | 0 6 |
| Colonial Allowance. | — | — | 1 0 | 1 0 | — | — |
| Total . . | 5 9 | 5 0 | 6 9 | 6 0 | 5 9 | 5 0 |

II. CAPTAINS AND LIEUTENANTS OF DEPARTMENTAL CORPS ON ORDINARY UNCONSOLIDATED RATES OF PAY, SERVING WITH THE EXPEDITIONARY FORCES.

| Allowances. | British Armies in France. | | Egyptian Expeditionary Force. | | Salonika Expeditionary Force. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Capts. | Lieuts. | Capts. | Lieuts. | Capts. | Lieuts. |
| | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Field Allowance . | 3 6 | 3 0 | 3 6 | 3 0 | 3 6 | 3 0 |
| Lodging ,, . | 3 0 | 2 3 | 3 0 | 2 3 | 3 0 | 2 3 |
| Fuel and Light Allowance (average) . . . | 1 2 | 0 9 | 1 2 | 0 9 | 1 2 | 0 9 |
| Colonial Allowance. | — | — | 1 0 | 1 0 | — | — |
| Total . . | 7 8 | 6 0 | 8 8 | 7 0 | 7 8 | 6 0 |

III. Captains, Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants on the Staff on Unconsolidated Rates of Pay, serving with the Expeditionary Forces.

| Allowances. | British Armies in France. | | Egyptian Expeditionary Force. | | Salonika Expeditionary Force. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Staff Capts. | Staff Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. | Staff Capts. | Staff Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. | Staff Capts. | Staff Lieuts. and 2nd Lieuts. |
| | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Field Allowance . | 3 6 | 3 0 | 3 6 | 3 0 | 3 6 | 3 0 |
| Colonial „ . | — | — | 1 0 | 1 0 | — | — |
| Total . . | 3 6 | 3 0 | 4 6 | 4 0 | 3 6 | 3 0 |

IV. Daily Rates of Allowances issuable to Captains, Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants in the United Kingdom.

Officers in the United Kingdom do not receive cash allowances as a matter of course like those with the Expeditionary Forces. They are normally 'all found' with food, accommodation, etc.

**When allowances are issuable** the rates are as follows—

| | Field Allowance. | Lodging Allowance. | Average Fuel Light Allowance. |
|---|---|---|---|
| | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| 1. On Regimental (unconsolidated) rates of pay— | | | |
| Captain . . . . | 3 0 | 2 3 | 0 6 |
| Lieutenant and 2nd Lieutenant . . . | 2 6 | 2 0 | 0 6 |
| 2. Departmental Corps on ordinary unconsolidated rates of pay— | | | |
| Captain . . . . | 3 6 | 3 0 | 1 2 |
| Lieutenant . . . | 3 0 | 2 3 | 0 9 |
| 3. On the Staff . . . | — | — | — |
| Consolidated rates of pay . | — | — | — |

Field allowance is only issuable when an officer is under canvas, in temporary hutments, or in unfurnished buildings, temporarily hired. It is not issuable concurrently with lodging allowance; nor is fuel and light allowance issuable with it, but officers drawing Field allowance receive free fuel and light in kind. Lodging, fuel, and light allowances are only issuable if the officer is not accommodated at the public expense and has to find his own accommodation, being 'placed on the lodging list' for this purpose.

All officers on ordinary British pay receive rations in kind, or, if this is not practicable, a cash allowance, based on the value of the ration from time to time. At present this is 1*s.* 9*d.* per day.

Officers of the quartermaster class, when necessarily separated from their families by the exigencies of the service, receive lodging, fuel and light allowances for their families, in addition to their own provision.

**Fuel and Light. 2076/16.** Unless in camp, fuel and light or the allowance in lieu of are not issuable at home to officers who are in receipt of consolidated rates of pay (A.O. 337/1914, par. 6).

**Lodging, Fuel and Light Allowances for Officers promoted from the Ranks. Colonial Stations.** With reference to the last paragraph of Army Order 307 of 1915, it has now been decided that the provisions of that Army Order may be extended, with effect from June 4, 1915, and for the period of the War.

By the terms of A.O. 408/1915 the above concession is extended to similar officers stationed abroad in cases in which quarters or hired accommodation suitable for the officer and his family are not already available.

A.O. 307/1915 provides that in the case of a married officer promoted from the ranks, permitted to reside out of barracks, lodging, fuel and light allowances are issuable whether quarters are available or not.

This concession is operative from June 4, 1915, and will continue for the period of the War.

## OFFICERS—PRISONERS

British officers are credited with their pay while prisoners of war, subject to the deduction of the amount they may have received from the enemy.

Additional pay for special work is not issuable, but armament, engineer and corps pay is issued where regimental pay is due.

An officer serving overseas who is injured whilst taking part in properly organized Military games is entitled to compensation if his injury is classified by the Medical Board by whom he is examined as severe and permanent.

An officer who has lost a leg will not be returned as fit for general service. He may be retained in the service at the discretion of the Army Council. The loss of an arm or an eye will not be considered as constituting a bar to fitness for general service.

Retired officers recalled to service during a time of national emergency may be retained during the continuance of the emergency, although he may pass the age limit for recall during his employment.

## DEMOBILIZATION OF OFFICERS

An officer of the Special Reserve or Territorial Force (*a*) medically unfit for Military service and who has had all the sick leave to which he is entitled, or (*b*) who can be more usefully employed in a civil capacity, is demobilized, i.e., relegated to the unemployed list or to non-military employment.

An officer holding a temporary commission (e.g., a New Army officer) situated as in '(1)' is required to relinquish his temporary commission.

An officer of the regular permanent forces is not demobilized, but is subject to the terms of the Royal Warrant

for Pay and Promotion in case of employment in other than a Military capacity.

Officers of the Special Reserve and Territorial Force who have been demobilized on the ground of ill-health will, when found fit for duty, be ordered to rejoin their units on instructions from the War Office.

There is no official interpretation of 'demobilization' as now applied by the War Office in the case of individual officers or soldiers no longer on active service who may have been discharged, disembodied, or transferred to the Reserve, other than the following.

An officer of the Special Reserve or Territorial Force (*a*) medically unfit for Military service, and who has been granted all the sick leave to which he may be entitled, or (*b*) who may be more usefully employed in a civil capacity, may be demobilized, i.e., placed upon the unemployed list, or given non-military employment.

If the foregoing conditions apply to an officer holding a temporary commission, he is required to relinquish his commission.

## COMMUTATION OF PENSION

Officers desiring to secure commutation should communicate with the Secretary, War Office, London, S.W.

No officer can in any case commute more than one half his retired pay, and a sum of not less than £80 a year must be left untouched. This restriction does not apply to wound pensions if permanent and providing they have been issued for at least two years. If in receipt of service and wound pension, the latter must be wholly commuted before an application in respect of the former will be considered. A fee is charged of not less than 3 per cent. upon the capital advanced, with a minimum of £5 and a maximum of £50. An application may be withdrawn within thirty days after receiving notice of an award, upon payment of a fee of £3 3*s*.

**Permanent Disability and Paralysis.** Hospital: St. John's Lodge, Regent's Park, N.W.

Cases recommended should apply to Dr. R. Fox Symonds, The British Red Cross Society, Room 91, 83 Pall, Mall, London, S.W.1.

The Officers' Families Fund, Lansdowne House, Berkeley Square, W., of which the Countess Roberts is the Hon. Secretary, grants assistance to the wives and dependants of officers, whether serving in the Army or Navy. The work of this Fund is many-sided, and extends to the education of children medical assistance, housing accommodation, and the provision of clothing, etc.

## Increased Pay: Officers.

### PAY OF OFFICERS AND ALLOWANCE FOR OFFICERS' CHILDREN

The increases sanctioned by A.O. of January 24, 1918, are for the remaining period of the War only, and are retrospective to October 1, 1917.

The pay of Captains, Lieutenants and 2nd Lieutenants, except as given below, will not be less than 13*s.* 6*d.* a day, 11*s.* 6*d.* a day, and 10*s.* 6*d.* a day respectively, such minimum rates to take into account any Guards, Armament, Engineer or Corps pay to which the officer may be entitled.

Where, except in the Royal Flying Corps, there are two rates of pay for a regimental Major, the higher rate will be issued. A Captain having higher rank by brevet will receive 2*s.* 9*d.* a day in addition to pay as Captain, or an amount which will increase his pay to that of a Major at the higher rate; the higher rates of pay provided for subalterns promoted to permanent commissions from the ranks is issuable to Lieutenants and the lower rates to 2nd Lieutenants irrespective of length of service; the rates of pay for Lieutenants after six years' service (seven years in the Household Cavalry) are suspended.

The pay of certain officers of Royal Malta Artillery is to be—

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| Captain | 12 | 6 |
| Lieutenant | 8 | 6 |
| Lieutenant, after 7 years' service in the rank | 9 | 6 |
| 2nd Lieutenant | 7 | 6 |

The rates of pay of officers of the staff are shown in Schedule A, and further increases to the pay of certain regimental and departmental officers are shown in Schedules B and C.

An allowance for children is issuable to regimental officers in receipt of pay as Captain, Lieutenant or 2nd Lieutenant, except officers of the Royal Malta Artillery, and to Staff and Departmental Officers, at the rate of £2 a month for each son under the age of 18, and each unmarried daughter under the age of 21, up to a maximum of four children for each officer. An allowance of £1 a month for each child is issuable under similar conditions to regimental officers in receipt of pay as Major or Brevet Major, and to Staff and Departmental Officers. An allowance of £1 a month for each child is issuable, under similar conditions, to officers of the Royal Malta Artillery who are in receipt of pay as Captain, Lieutenant or 2nd Lieutenant; and an allowance of 10*s.* a month for each child, under similar conditions, is issuable to officers of the Royal Malta Artillery who are in receipt of pay as Major or Brevet Major.

It should be noted that the foregoing does not apply to retired officers who are in receipt of retired pay in addition to full pay under Article 496 of the Warrant of December 1, 1914, nor does it apply to officers of the Indian Army, or officers in receipt of Indian rates of pay.

If entitled to regimental pay, but not to armament, engineer or corps pay, officers of Royal Garrison Artillery, Royal Engineers, or Army Service Corps below the rank of Major receive regimental pay at rates not less than the rates laid down in paragraph 1 of Schedule B for officers of Infantry of the Line. The gratuity under Article 497 of the Pay Warrant for Officers of Royal Garrison Artil-

lery, Royal Engineers or Army Service Corps, below the rank of Major, will be based on infantry rates of pay where these rates are more beneficial to the officer.

An officer appointed under the authority of the Army Council to act temporarily as an officer of the Royal Engineers or Army Service Corps will receive additional pay at a rate which, together with the regimental pay of rank of the arm to which he belongs, will equal the pay and engineer pay, or pay and corps pay, of the same rank in the Royal Engineers or the Army Service Corps respectively.

**Regulations for the Issue of the Allowance in Respect of Officers' Children are as follows :—**

The full rate of £2 a month in respect of each child, up to a maximum of four, is issuable to—

Staff and Educational Officers, and Officers of the Ordnance Factories, for whom the rate of pay when quarters are not allotted does not exceed £400 a year consolidated, or 15*s.* a day unconsolidated.

NOTE. Lodging allowance is added to those rates under Article 433 of the Pay Warrant which are exclusive of quarters or lodging money in arriving at the total amount of pay which the officer is drawing.

Regimental (except Royal Flying Corps) Officers, Medical and Veterinary Officers, in receipt of pay not exceeding the highest rate of pay laid down in the Pay Warrant for the rank of Captain in their respective corps.

Equipment Officers, 3rd Class, Royal Flying Corps.

Paymasters, Army Pay Department, holding the rank of Captain (excluding Acting Paymasters).

Chaplains in receipt of pay as 4th Class Chaplains.

Quartermasters, Ridingmasters, Directors of Music, and officers detailed in Article 330 of the Pay Warrant (as amended by Army Orders 324 of 1915 and 325 of 1917) irrespective of rank, with the exception of Chief Inspectors and Inspectors, 1st Class, of Ordnance Machinery and Mechanical Transport, and Chief Inspectors, Superintending Inspectors, and Inspectors of Works.

The half rate of £1 a month in respect of each child, up to a maximum of four, will be issuable to—

Staff and Educational Officers, and Officers of the Ordnance Factories, for whom the rate of pay, when quarters are not allotted, exceeds £400 a year consolidated, or 15*s.* a day unconsolidated, and does not exceed £500 a year consolidated or 18*s.* 6*d.* a day unconsolidated (see note above).

Regimental, Medical and Veterinary Officers in receipt of the pay laid down in the Pay Warrant for Majors or Brevet Majors.

Flying or Balloon Officers, Observers and Equipment Officers, 1st and 2nd Class, of the Royal Flying Corps.

Ordnance Officers, 3rd and 4th Class.

Staff Paymasters and Paymasters, Army Pay Department, holding the rank of Major, and Chaplains in receipt of pay as 3rd Class Chaplains.

Medical Officers serving under contract on a consolidated rate of pay.

Dentists serving under contract who are commissioned.

Majors, Captains, and Subalterns of the Stationary Services who are not in receipt of civilian rates of pay.

Chief Inspectors and Inspectors, 1st Class, of Ordnance Machinery and Mechanical Transport.

Officers of Colonial Forces will be eligible for the allowance if in receipt of Imperial Pay Warrant rates of pay from British funds, but not otherwise.

Payment will be limited to legitimate children and step-children, together with any other children of officers, having served in the ranks, who under the rules applicable to soldiers' children were then eligible for separation allowance.

Claims on account of children adopted prior to October 1, 1917, and not provided for above, should be forwarded to the War Office (Accounts 5), 6 and 7, George Street, Hanover Square, London, W. 1.

Claims on account of children adopted between October 1, 1917, and the date of this Army Order may also be put forward for special consideration.

An officer with more than four eligible children will be entitled to claim the allowance for any four of his children who are eligible.

In any case where a compassionate allowance from public funds is being issued in respect of a step-child or of an adopted child for whom children's allowance is granted the total payment from public funds will not exceed the maximum issuable under the regulations for either the compassionate allowance or the children's allowance, whichever is the greater. Officers will be required to furnish information as to any such compassionate allowances issuable for children in respect of whom claims are submitted for an allowance under these regulations.

Payments will be made until children attain the age of 18 in the case of sons, and 21 in the case of daughters, if the officer remains so long on full pay or half-pay, but will cease in the event of marriage of daughters at an earlier age. The allowance will be admissible in respect of sons who are cadets at the Royal Military Academy, the Royal Military College, or at the Royal Naval Colleges at Dartmouth and Osborne, except in those cases in which no payments are required from the parent.

Where mental or physical infirmity which prevents a son or daughter from earning his or her own living exists before reaching the age limit and is of a permanent nature, children's allowances are issuable irrespective of the age limit. The issue of the grant will be subject to verification of the circumstances and to the rendering of periodical certificates.

Rank for the purpose of determining to what rate of children's allowance (if any) the officer is entitled, will in all cases be the rank, whether substantive, temporary or acting, of which the pay is drawn for the period in question.

Children's allowance will continue to be issuable for officers transferred in future to half-pay so long as they remain on the active list. Officers of the active list now on half-pay will be eligible for children's allowance at the rate and under the conditions applicable to officers on full pay, their status when last in receipt of full pay being taken as determining the rate of allowance (if any) issuable.

If the officer is serving in the United Kingdom, the application form must be signed by himself. For an officer serving abroad or who is a prisoner of war, the application form may be signed by his wife or other person authorized by him to act on his behalf.

In the case of officers reported as dead or missing prior to February 1, 1918, no application for children's allowance will be required. The necessary steps will be taken by the War Office.

## SCHEDULE A

### Staff

1. Consolidated rates for Staff officers other than at the War Office.

| | With quarters. £ | When quarters are not allotted. £ |
|---|---|---|
| Aide-de-Camp | 295 | 350 |
| Staff Lieutenants— | | |
| 1st class | 295 | 350 |
| 2nd class | 250 | 300 |
| 3rd class | 210 | 250 |
| Assistant to the Chief Inspector, Inspection Staff— | | |
| If a Lieutenant | 300 | 350 |

2. Unconsolidated rates.

| | |
|---|---|
| Aide-de-Camp | 12*s.* 6*d.* daily, with allowances. |

# SCHEDULE B
## REGIMENTAL

1. Rates of pay :—

| — | Household Cavalry. | Cavalry. | Royal Horse Artillery. | Royal Field Artillery. | Royal Garrison Artillery. | | Royal Engineers and officers employed with Signal Service. | | Royal Flying Corps. | Foot Guards. | | Infantry. | Army Service Corps. | | Tank Corps (Technical). |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | | | Pay. | Armament pay. | Pay. | Engineer pay. | | Pay. | Guards pay per annum. | | Pay. | Corps pay. | |
| 2nd Lieutenant— | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | As at present, except that the regimental pay of a Flight Commander commences at 19s. a day. | s. d. | £ | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. |
| Ordinary . . . | 10 6 | 10 6 | 10 6 | 10 6 | 9 6 | 1 0 | 8 6 | 2 0 / 2 6 | | 10 6 | 45 | 10 6 | 8 6 | 2 0 | 10 6 |
| From the ranks . | 11 0 | 11 0 | 12 0 | 10 6 | 11 0 | 1 0 | 11 6 | 2 6 | | 10 6 | 61 | 10 6 | 8 6 | 2 0 | 10 6 |
| Lieutenant— | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Ordinary . . . | 11 6 | 11 6 | 11 6 | 11 6 | 10 6 | 1 0 | 9 6 | 3 0 | | 11 6 | 45 | 11 6 | 9 6 | 2 0 | 11 6 |
| From the ranks . | 12 0 | 12 0 | 13 0 | 11 6 | 12 0 | 1 0 | 12 0 | 3 0 | | 11 6 | 61 | 11 6 | 9 6 | 2 0 | 11 6 |
| Captain— | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Ordinary . . . | 13 6 | 13 6 | 15 0 | 13 6 | 13 6 | 2 0 | 13 6 | 4 0 | | 13 6 | 122 | 13 6 | 12 6 | 3 0 | 15 6 |
| If a Brevet-Major | 16 3 | 16 3 | 17 9 | 16 3 | 16 3 | 2 0 | 16 0 | 4 3 | | 16 3 | 122 | 16 3 | 15 3 | 3 0 | 18 3 |
| From the ranks . | 15 0 | 15 0 | 17 0 | 14 0 | 14 0 | 2 0 | 14 6 | 4 0 | | 14 0 | 140 | 14 0 | 12 6 | 3 0 | 15 6 |
| If a Brevet-Major (Higher rate) | 17 9 | 17 9 | 19 9 | 16 9 | 16 9 | 2 0 | 16 0 | 4 3 | | 16 9 | 140 | 16 9 | 15 3 | 3 0 | 18 3 |
| Ordinary . . . | 14 6 | 16 0 | 18 0 | 14 6 | 14 6 | 3 0 | 15 6 | 4 0 | | 13 6 | 122 | 14 6 | 14 6 | 3 0 | 17 6 |
| From the ranks . | 16 0 | | | | | | | | | 14 6 | 140 | | | | |
| If a Brevet-Major | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Ordinary . . . | 17 3 | 18 9 | 20 9 | 17 3 | 17 3 | 3 0 | 16 0 | 6 3 | | 16 3 | 122 | 17 3 | 16 0 | 4 3 | 20 3 |
| From the ranks . | 18 9 | | | | | | | | | 17 3 | 140 | | | | |
| Major . . . . | 19 0 | 19 0 | 20 9 | 18 0 | 18 0 | 3 6 | 16 0 | 9 0 | | 18 0 | 140 | 18 0 | 16 0 | 5 4 | 21 0 |
| Quartermaster— | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Quinquennial increments of 1s. 6d. a day. | 11 6 to 17 6 | 11 6 to 17 6 | 11 6 to 17 6 | 10 6 to 16 6 | 10 6 to 16 6 | — | 10 6 to 16 6 | 2 0 | | 10 6 to 16 6 | — | 10 6 to 16 6 | 10 6 to 16 6 | — | 10 6 to 16 6 |

## SCHEDULE C

### Departmental

1. Rates of pay :—

| — | R.A.M.C. | A.V.C. | Chaplains. | Pay Department. | Ordnance Department. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | *s. d.* | | *s. d.* | *s. d.* | |
| Lieutenant . . | 14 0 | £250 a year | — | — | |
| | | *s. d.* | | | |
| Captain . . . | 15 6 | 15 6 | 10 6 | 10 6 | |
| Captain, who is a Brevet-Major . | 18 3 | 18 3 | — | — | |
| Captain, higher rates. | 17 0 to 21 0 | 17 6 | 12 6 | 12 6 to 20 0 | |
| Do., who is a Brevet-Major. | 19 9 to 23 9 | 20 3 | — | — | As at present |
| Major. . . | 23 9 to 26 0 | 20 3 to 24 0 | 15 3 | †22 9 | |
| Lieutenant-Colonel. | 30 0 to 35 0 | 30 0 | 18 0 | 25 6 | |
| Quartermaster (or Assistant Paymaster, Army Pay Department) | 10 6 by quinquennial increments of 1*s.* 6*d.* a day to 16*s.* 6*d.* | 11 6 by quinquennial increments of 1*s.* 6*d.* a day to 17*s.* 6*d.* | — | 10 6 by quinquennial increments of 1*s.* 6*d.* a day to 16*s.* 6*d.* | |

* Issuable locally. † Staff Paymaster.

## MEMORANDUM FOR THE INFORMATION OF WIDOWS OF OFFICERS AND WARRANT OFFICERS PLACED ON THE PENSION LIST

(1) **Pensions not Claimable as a Right.** Pensions and Compassionate Allowances to the widows and children of officers and warrant officers cannot be claimed as a right, but are awarded subject to certain conditions prescribed by the Royal Warrant.

(2) **Mode of Payment.** Widows' pensions are payable *in arrear*, either monthly or quarterly, at the option of the payee.

Children's allowances are payable *yearly, in advance,* in the month of April.

All inquiries as to mode of payment should be addressed to the Assistant Paymaster-General, Whitehall, S.W.

(3) **Duration of Pension, etc.** Pensions to widows cease on re-marriage, but may be restored on second widowhood.

Compassionate Allowances to children cease on the attainment of 18 years of age in the case of boys, and of 21 in the case of girls. If, however, a child is prevented by mental or bodily infirmity from earning a living, the allowance may be continued for a longer term. Applications in such cases should be addressed to the Secretary, War Office, Whitehall, S.W.

(4) **Boys in the Royal Military Schools.** In the case of boys admitted to the Duke of York's Royal Military School, the Royal Hibernian Military School, or the Queen Victoria School, the allowances cease to be issuable except for the period of holidays spent at home.

(5) **Increases of Private Income to be Stated in Declarations.** 'Ordinary' Pensions and Compassionate Allowances also cease to be issuable whenever the private income of the family passes beyond a certain limit fixed by the Army Council. Great care should be taken to state accurately on the pension declarations the amount by which the income of the widow or children may, from time to time, be increased. (Failure to comply with this requirement may entail serious consequences.)

The earnings of children (if under age) are not reckoned as private income for this purpose.

(6) **Motherless Children.** Children who become motherless may, under certain conditions, be granted double rates of Compassionate Allowance. Applications in such cases should be addressed by their Guardians to the Secretary, War Office, Whitehall, S.W.

(7) **Commutation not Allowed.** Pensions to widows and Compassionate Allowances to children cannot, under any circumstances, be commuted for a lump sum.

(8) **Unworthy Conduct.** A widow's pension may be suspended or cancelled by the Army Council, if the widow should prove unworthy of the award.

## Disablement Pension :

### PENSIONS AND ALLOWANCES, ETC., ARMY

The Royal Pay Warrant at present in force became operative on the first weekly pay day after April 1, 1914.

It applies to all soldiers and their families and dependants whose claims to pensions arise out of the present War, and in the case of new grants. In cases dealt with under previous warrants it may, if more beneficial to them, be applied with retrospective effect from the above date.

The grant to a soldier who has served before the date of this warrant may be assessed under its terms if more favourable to the soldier, but no grant to a soldier or to the family or dependants of a soldier shall be re-assessed to their disadvantage.

Nothing in this Warrant applies to any case in which the terms of service make other provision.

A soldier discharged as medically unfit for further service, such unfitness being certified as either attributable to or aggravated by Military service in consequence of the present War, may be granted a minimum pension at the weekly rates therein shown in the First Schedule appended. In the case of injuries not shown therein and in the case of disease, the pension awarded will be assessed at the degree corresponding to the injury or disease.

A Warrant Officer or N.C.O. entitled to service pension may receive—

(*a*) A disablement pension on the lowest scale in addition to service pension, or

(*b*) A disablement pension according to rank, upon the scale of Warrant Officers or N.C.O.'s not entitled to service pension, whichever is to his advantage.

The pension awarded to a man holding paid acting rank at the time when disability was incurred may be at the rate appropriate to that rank.

A disabled man in receipt of a pension may be granted during its continuance an allowance for each child under the age of 16 at such a proportion as corresponds to the

degree of disablement at which the man is assessed for pension—

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| For a first child . . . . . | 5 | 0 |
| For a second ,, . . . . . | 4 | 2 |
| For a third ,, . . . . . | 3 | 4 |
| For each child after the third . . . | 2 | 6 |

The allowance may (subject to the continuance of the pension) be granted or continued beyond the age of 16 in the case of apprentices receiving not more than nominal wages, or of children being educated at secondary schools, technical institutes or universities, and may be granted or continued between the ages of 16 and 21 in the case of a child incapable through mental or physical infirmity of earning a living, provided the infirmity existed before the child attained the age of 16.

In the event of a parent being wholly or partially relieved of the charge of any child by its maintenance in the Army or Navy, or in any institution wholly or mainly supported from public funds, the allowance granted on account of that child may be reduced by the extent of that relief.

The Minister of Pensions may, when in his opinion it is necessary, administer the allowance issuable in the case of a child and withhold payment from the parent.

The allowance for children paid to men with pension may be deducted and paid direct to the mother or guardian of such children if the man is not supporting them.

Non-commissioned officers and men are classified for pension, according to their permanent rank, as follows :—

### Class I

Master-gunner, 3rd class.
Schoolmaster (when not a warrant officer).
Quartermaster-corporal-major (Household Cavalry).
Quartermaster-serjeant.

### Class II

Squadron-corporal-major or squadron-quartermaster-corporal (Household Cavalry).
Squadron, battery, troop, or company-serjeant-major.

Squadron, battery, troop, or company-quartermaster-serjeant.

Staff-corporal (Household Cavalry) or staff-serjeant.

Colour-serjeant.

CLASS III

Corporal-of-horse (Household Cavalry).

Serjeant.

CLASS IV

Corporal. Bombardier. Second Corporal.

CLASS V

Trooper, private, gunner, driver, sapper, pioneer (Royal Engineers).

A trooper, private, gunner, driver, sapper or pioneer (Royal Engineers) is placed in Class IV after (*a*) 5 years' service on the recognized establishment of the band or as trumpeter of cavalry, or (*b*) 4 years' service with the military police, or (*c*) 1 year's service as saddler or saddle-tree-maker in the Household Cavalry.

**Alternative Pension.** Any disabled man in receipt of pension who makes application and shows that the pension with children's allowances (if any) which he has been granted, together with the average earnings (if any) of which he remains capable, are less than his pre-War earnings, may be granted, temporarily or permanently, in lieu of the minimum pension and children's allowances, a pension which, together with the average earnings (if any) of which he is judged capable, shall not exceed his pre-War earnings up to a maximum of 50*s*. a week, plus half of any pre-War earnings between 50*s*. and 100*s*. a week.

**Treatment.** The Minister of Pensions may reduce the pension and allowance by one-half in the case of a disabled man who refuses to undergo medical treatment in or at a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home, or otherwise, for any period during which such treatment may be considered necessary.

**Permanent Pension.** Permanent pensions are granted only in cases of men whose disablement has reached its final condition.

## Scale of Pensions for Disablement

| Specific Injury. | Proportion corresponding to Degree of Disablement. | Disablement Pensions. | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | If not entitled to a Service Pension. | | | | | Warrant or N.C. Officers entitled to Service Pensions. | Private, etc. (Class V) irrespective of Service Pension to which entitled. |
| | | Warrant Officer, Class I. | Warrant Officer, Class II, or N.C. Officer, Class I. | N.C. Officer, Class II. | N.C. Officer, Class III. | N.C. Officer, Class IV. | | |
| | Per cent. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. | s. d. |
| 1. Loss of two or more limbs.<br>Loss of an arm and an eye.<br>Loss of a leg and an eye.<br>Loss of both hands or of all fingers and thumbs.<br>Loss of both feet.<br>Loss of a hand and a foot.<br>Total loss of sight.<br>Total paralysis.<br>Lunacy.<br>Wounds, injuries or disease resulting in disabled man being permanently bedridden.<br>Wounds of or injuries to internal, thoracic or abdominal organs, involving total permanent disabling effects.<br>Wounds of or injuries to head or brain involving total permanent disabling effects, or Jacksonian epilepsy.<br>Very severe facial disfigurement.<br>Advanced cases of incurable disease. | 100 | 42 6 | 37 6 | 35 0 | 32 6 | 30 0 | 27 6 | 27 6 |

| | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 2. Amputation of leg at hip or right arm at shoulder joint.<br>Severe facial disfigurement.<br>Total loss of speech. | 80 | 34 0 | 30 0 | 28 0 | 26 0 | 24 0 | 22 0 | 22 0 |
| 3. Short thigh amputation of leg with pelvic band, or of left arm at shoulder joint, or of right arm above or through elbow.<br>Total deafness. | 70 | 29 9 | 26 3 | 24 6 | 22 9 | 21 0 | 19 3 | 19 3 |
| 4. Amputation of leg above knee (other than 3), and through knee or of left arm above or through elbow, or of right arm below elbow. | 60 | 25 6 | 22 6 | 21 0 | 19 6 | 18 0 | 16 6 | 16 6 |
| 5. Amputation of leg below knee (including Symes' and Chopart's amputation), or of left arm below elbow.<br>Loss of vision of one eye. | 50 | 21 3 | 18 9 | 17 6 | 16 3 | 15 0 | 13 9 | 13 9 |
| 6. Loss of thumb or of four fingers of right hand. | 40 | 17 0 | 15 0 | 14 0 | 13 0 | 12 0 | 11 0 | 11 0 |
| 7. Loss of thumb or of four fingers of left hand, or of three fingers of right hand. | 30 | 12 9 | 11 3 | 10 6 | 9 9 | 9 0 | 8 3 | 8 3 |
| 8. Loss of two fingers of either hand. | 20 | 8 6 | 7 6 | 7 0 | 6 6 | 6 0 | 5 6 | 5 6 |

In the case of left-handed men, certified to be such, the compensation in respect of the left arm, hand, etc., will be as for a right arm, etc., and vice versa.

# THE OLD WARRANT AND THE NEW

## *A Comparison.*

### Soldiers and Sailors

| Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|
| 1. Pension according to rank on highest degree of disablement :— (Proportionate amounts for partial disablement.) (*a*) Disability due to War service : 25*s.* to 40*s.* | 1. Pension according to rank on highest degree of disablement :— (Proportionate amounts for partial disablement.) (*a*) Flat-rate pension according to rank and degree of disablement : 27*s.* 6*d.* to 42*s.* 6*d.*, or |
| (*b*) Aggravated by War service : 20*s.* to 32*s.* | (*b*) Alternative pension : 27*s.* 6*d.* to 75*s.*, based on pre-War earnings. |
| 2. Earnings : Taken into account in assessing pension. | 2. Earnings : Not taken into account in assessing flat-rate pension. |
| 3. Treatment or Training Allowance : No provision. | 3. Treatment or Training Allowance : If living away from home, full flat-rate pension, with allowances for wife, children, or dependants. |
| 4. Fees : No provision. | 4. Fees : Paid by State. |
| 5. Bonus : No provision. | 5. Bonus : 5*s.* for each week of training. |
| 6. Allowance for attendance by another person : No direct provision. | 6. Allowance for attendance by another person : Up to 20*s.* weekly. |
| 7. Disablement not attributable to nor aggravated by Military service : No provision. | 7. Disablement not attributable to nor aggravated by Military service : Gratuity up to £150. |
| 8. Time lost during medical treatment : No provision. | 8. Time lost during medical treatment : Allowance up to 10*s.* weekly. |

## Soldiers and Sailors (*continued*).

| Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|
| 9. Children of—<br>(*a*) Totally disabled soldiers and sailors: 2*s.* to 2*s.* 6*d.* per child.<br>(*b*) Partially disabled: 6*d.* to 2*s.* per child. | 9. Children of—<br>(*a*) Totally disabled soldiers and sailors: 5*s.*, 4*s.* 2*d.*, 3*s.* 4*d.*, and 2*s.* 6*d.* for each additional child.<br>(*b*) Partially disabled: Corresponding to degree of disablement. |

## Widows and Children

| Class. | Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|---|
| Widows :— | | |
| 1. Death on duty or from disease contracted on active service. | Under 35 years, 10*s.* to 12*s.*; 35 to 45, 12*s.* 6*d.* to 14*s.* 6*d.*; 45 and over, 15*s.* to 17*s.*, according to rank (including paid acting rank) of man. | (*a*) Under 45, 13*s.* 9*d.* to 18*s.* 9*d.*; 45 and over, 15*s.* to 20*s.*, according to rank (including paid acting rank) of man. Or<br>(*b*) Alternative pension up to 37*s.* 6*d.* when pre-War income was considerable.<br>(*c*) Grant for purpose of training not exceeding 12*s.* 6*d.* per week.<br>(*d*) £3 grant to meet expenses consequent on or caused by the man's death. |
| 2. Death due to disease aggravated by service. | Gratuity. | Pensions now given as above. |
| 3. Death during the War neither due to nor aggravated by service. | No provision. | 15*s.* for the War and twelve months afterwards. |
| 4. Death of pensioner. | Pension as under 1, if conditions for pension fulfilled and death occurred within seven years. | As before, or half man's flat-rate disablement pension. |
| 5. Re-marriage. | Gratuity of two years' pension. | Bounty of one year's pension. |
| Children :— | | |
| 6. When widow gets pension under 1 or 2. | 5*s.*, 3*s.* 6*d.*, and 2*s.* for third and subsequent children. | 5*s.*, 4*s.* 2*d.*, 3*s.* 4*d.*, and 2*s.* 6*d.* for fourth and each additional child. |

## Widows and Children (*continued*).

| Class. | Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|---|
| 7. Motherless children. | 5*s.* for each. | 7*s.* each when in separate households.<br>7*s.*, and 6*s.* for second and each additional child in same household. |
| 8. Illegitimate children. | *Married men.* In widow's households, ordinary rates; not in household, nothing.<br>*Unmarried men.* If separation allowance admissible, same rate as S.A. if S.A. not admissible. | 5*s.* for all illegitimate children if an order was in force or there is proof of paternity. |
| 9. Separated wife. | Prior maintenance or court order up to 10*s.* weekly. | Same pension as old warrant. |

## Dependants

| Class. | Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|---|
| 10. Unmarried wife with children. | (*a*) If a man left a widow, balance of pension under 9, till children reach age of 16, plus (if no legal children) ordinary allowances for children, but if there were legal children not in the charge of a dependant, no children's allowances were admissible.<br>(*b*) If man left no widow, 10*s.*, and children's allowances as at (*a*). | 10*s.* until children reach 16, and twelve months after, or if no children, then 10*s.* for period of the War and twelve months afterwards. Ordinary allowances for children. |
| 11. Unmarried wife without children. | If incapable of self-support, 5*s.* to 10*s.*<br>If capable of self-support, gratuity as in 12 (*c*). | 10*s.* for War and twelve months after, and subsequently for any period of infirmity. |
| 12. Parents:—<br>(*a*) Wholly dependent parents. | Pre-War or pre-enlistment (if later) dependence, as assessed for separation allowance, up to widows' rate of pension, without increase for age. | Pre-War or pre-enlistment dependence, apart from any increase due to circumstances arising out of the War, up to 15*s.* |

DEPENDANTS (*continued*).

| Class. | Old Warrant. | New Warrant. |
|---|---|---|
| (*b*) Partially dependent parent with small means and incapable of self-support. | 5*s*. or such award in excess of 5*s*. as with other means will bring income up to lower limit shown in 12 (*a*). | Parents of students and apprentices, and mothers widowed during the War, up to 15*s*. per week. |
| (*c*) Partially dependent parents with greater means than suggested in (*b*) but still in pecuniary need and incapable of self-support. | Pre-War or pre-enlistment dependence as assessed for separation allowance up to 5*s*. | When maximum pension is reached and other sons are killed, gratuities may be given.<br>Gratuities may be given in lieu of pension in cases of small dependence. |
| (*d*) Other dependants in pecuniary need and incapable of self-support. | Same as (*c*). | Same provision as before, but for new definition of dependence see 12 (*a*). |
| (*e*) Able-bodied dependants and dependants not in pecuniary need (including parents). | Gratuity not exceeding one year's pay or one year's separation allowance and allotment. | Parents, pensions as in 12 (*a*). Other dependants, same provision as before. |
| **13.** Foster parents, etc. | Treated as other dependants. | Treated as parents. |
| **14.** All dependants where man's death aggravated by Military service, but not due to disease commencing on active service. | No grant admissible. | Now admitted. |

When a permanent pension has been awarded, it is not subject to variation on account of any changes in the pensioner's earning capacity, nor is it subject to review unless it is shown that it would be more to his advantage that he should be awarded an alternative pension.

Where it is certified that a disabled man should, in consequence of his disablement, undergo any special course of medical treatment or be treated in a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home, asylum, or other institution, or where it is decided that he should receive training in a technical institution or otherwise, and he is deemed unable in consequence to provide for his own support and that of his family, there may be granted to or in respect of him, in lieu of any pension awarded to

him, for the period during which he is undergoing such treatment or training, and subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine, either—

(*a*) 'An allowance of an amount not less than that corresponding to the highest degree of disablement as shown in the first schedule of the Warrant, and in the case of a man whose treatment or training necessitates the man living away from home, a further allowance which will secure to his wife, children, or dependant, if any, an amount not less than the pensions and allowances to which, if eligible, they would have been entitled under Part II of the Warrant; or—

(*b*) An allowance equal to the maximum pension which would be payable to him under Article 3 of the Warrant if he were without earning capacity, whichever is the greater.'

A deduction of such an amount, and under such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine, may be made from any allowance granted on account of the cost of the disabled man's maintenance in an institution.

Any fees payable in respect of the treatment or training of a disabled man may be paid in addition to any allowance granted him under this article.

There may be granted to the disabled man an amount equal to the sum of 5*s*. for each week of the period during which he has been undergoing training.

In case a man is not rendered unable to provide for his own support and that of his family, but may be required to absent himself from his work occasionally, there may be granted to him in addition to any pension awarded to him an allowance not exceeding 10*s*. a week for the time he is required so to absent himself.

**Allowance for Attendant.** In addition to pension there may be granted to or on behalf of a man disabled in the highest degree an allowance not exceeding 20*s*. a week if the constant attendance of a second person is necessary.

**Gratuities.** In any case of disablement assessed at less than 20 per cent., or where it is considered more in the

interests of the soldier, a gratuity or temporary allowance may be granted in place of any pension and children's allowances. The amount will not exceed £200 and will depend on the extent of the disablement and on the other circumstances of the case.

A soldier discharged as medically unfit for further service, such unfitness being neither attributable to nor aggravated by Military service, may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance. It may amount to a sum not exceeding £150.

**Temporary Allowance.** A soldier discharged as medically unfit may be granted a temporary allowance of 14*s.* a week pending the award of pension or gratuity in his case. Arrears of this allowance will not be granted for more than a fortnight before an intimation of the discharge is received by the Ministry or, if there has been no such intimation, before the date of any application that may be made to the Ministry for an allowance or for a pension.

This allowance will be deducted from any pension for the corresponding period in so far as the pension for that period may be sufficient to meet it, but no deduction on account of the temporary allowance exceeding the rate of pension will be made from any subsequent issues of pension and no deduction will be made from any gratuity.

Payment of separation allowances including allotment should be continued for two weeks after the date of discharge.

In cases where allotment only is paid, this regulation does not of course apply.

A man who is not discharged as 'no longer physically fit for War service,' under paragraph 392 (XVI) of the King's Regulations,is not eligible to receive the special temporary allowance authorized by Army Order 170 of 1916.

From March 1, 1917, Civil servants and Government civilian employees serving in the Army and entitled to the balance (if any) of civil pay from their Civil Department, will not be eligible on discharge or transfer to Class P. or P.T. of the Reserve, for the temporary allowance for themselves, or for the continuation of separation

allowance to their families or dependants under A.O. 354/1916, or family allowance under A.O. 397/1916.

**Claim to Pension after Discharge.** If a man after discharge from the Army is certified to be disabled owing to—wounds or injuries, or disease, certified as contracted or commencing while on active service, or as having been aggravated by active service in consequence of the present War, he may be granted a pension as if he had been discharged as medically unfit for further service upon the date from which his claim is established.

**Permanent Pension.** A man in receipt of permanent pension on a previous attestation, and who is awarded pension for disability incurred in the present War, does not receive both. If the present pension is higher, the former pension is suspended; if lower, then former pension is paid.

The following rules, drawn up by the Ministry of Pensions, governing the continuance during further Army service of permanent or temporary disablement pensions in the case of men in receipt of such pensions who are recalled to service with the Colours under the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, or voluntarily re-enlist, are notified by the War Office.

1. If a man has been granted a permanent pension, whether such pension be the minimum pension, i.e. that appropriate to the extent of the disablement, or the alternative pension, which is awarded in the light of his pre-War earnings, the pension will be continued at the rate of the minimum pension, but without allowances for children, such allowances being, by reason of the man's entry into the service, admissible in the shape of separation allowance.

2. If a man has been granted a conditional pension, whether minimum or alternative, it will be continued at the rate of the minimum pension, without allowances for children, for the period of the award, at the end of which time the man will be re-surveyed and his case reviewed as if he was still in civil life.

**Service Pension.** A man invalided with a service of under eighteen years is not entitled to a service pension

in addition to that awarded on account of his disability.

Army Order 181/1916 provides that Warrant Officers, Class I, who are not re-enlisted pensioners, and not entitled to service pension on discharge, may be awarded a gratuity upon the conditions set forth in Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant of 1914, in respect of total War services.

Army Order 180/1916 provides that for the purposes of pension an acting Serjeant-Major T.F. shall be regarded as substantive W.O. Class 1.

The recovery from Pensions awarded discharged sailors and soldiers of claims made by other departments was discontinued by the Ministry of Pensions on November 21, 1917.

## ARTIFICIAL LIMBS: PAY OF SOLDIERS AWAITING

A man granted furlough from hospital under A.C.I. 1412/1916 for the fitting of an artificial limb, will receive £1 in advance of pay when sent home from the hospital, and the Paymaster will pay the man weekly in advance until receipt of the notification of his admission to the hospital.

Disabled men while waiting for admission to Roehampton are awarded varying amounts of allowance.

All undischarged men receive Army pay plus subsistence allowance, in the case of (*a*) single men 1*s.* 9*d.* a day, and (*b*) married men 1*s.* 4*d.* a day in addition to separation allowance.

In the case of discharged disabled men who because of their disability are prevented from following their occupation, an allowance at the maximum disablement rate is issued for a period of four weeks.

The Order of St. John of Jerusalem in England, St. John's Gate, Clerkenwell, E.C., has made special provision—

To maintain and repair artificial limbs and surgical appliances.

To render this assistance as far as possible at or near the men's homes, and while they continue in their employment.

To ensure that full use is made of the appliances provided at Government expense, and that no man remains on crutches or otherwise unfit for employment when an artificial limb or appliance would enable him to become a useful member of the community.

**Artificial Limbs, etc.** Soldiers who require artificial limbs, etc., or who have already been supplied with them and require to have them repaired or replaced, should report to the nearest Military hospital. If supply or repair can be carried out locally the Officer in charge of the hospital is authorized to complete it.

The travelling expenses of the soldier necessarily incurred for attendance at the Military hospital will be met by the Officer in charge (A.C.I. 144/17).

Repairs, adjustment and replacement are undertaken at public expense. Officers should communicate with the Hon. Secretary, Queen Mary's Convalescent Auxiliary Hospital for Officers, St. Stephen's House, Westminster, S.W.

## TEETH

Artificial teeth are supplied to discharged soldiers and sailors at public expense, 'where the dental aspect requires the provision of artificial teeth, and such aspect can be attributed to conditions arising from or aggravated by Naval or Military service, those conditions to be assured in any case where the man's teeth have been extracted while on service, and where the discharged man is undergoing treatment and the artificial teeth are reported to be necessary for the efficacy of that treatment.'

## DISCHARGES

Under the Special Army Order of August 4, 1914 (General Mobilization), all discharges were suspended till demobilization or the expiration of the extra year required

by the Army Act of soldiers in the Regular and Territorial Forces by Army Order 329 of 1914. Articles v, xiv, xv, xva, xvb, xviii, xix, xxii, xxiv, xxvi of paragraph 392 of the King's Regulations were also suspended until further orders.

By Army Order 76, 1915, however, this order was amended and discharges were authorized on the expiration of three months' notice as required under Section 85 of the Army Act. By Army Order 359 of 1916 discharges under 329 vi (*a*) of the King's Regulations were suspended.

Men discharged on medical grounds and who ought not to have been enlisted were authorized to be discharged as from October 14, 1916, on Army Form B. 204, 'Application for discharge of recruit not likely to become an efficient soldier.' A man discharged on this form is not disqualified from having a claim to pension considered.

Army Order 443, 1915, provides that a soldier in receipt of a disability pension who re-enlisted or joined the Navy, or was granted a commission after the date of the receipt of propagation of this order—November 4, 1915—may have the extent of his disability reviewed, as a result of which the pension awarded may be reduced or cancelled from the date of enlistment. Provision was made, however, by this order that if the soldier when awarded a disability pension had completed eighteen years' service or more, he should continue to receive under the terms of Article 1158 of Pay Warrant of 1914 a rate of pension not less than the rate which the Commissioners of Chelsea would have awarded him for service alone when he was discharged for disability.

Article 1185 of the Pay Warrant was amended accordingly. That article provides that 'A pensioner re-enlisted during time of national emergency may draw his pension in addition to his pay during the period of service, but he shall not receive any addition to his pension in respect of such service unless he becomes entitled to higher rate under the provisions of Article 1162 to 1166.' These articles provide for pensions on account

of disability. It will be noticeable in the first place that the benefits of this order do not apply to any man with less than eighteen years' service. It is clear also that re-enlistment of a man in receipt of disability pension will be accepted as sufficient reason for the discontinuance of that pension, although he may be awarded a pension for service. Any additional pension to which he may be entitled will not be in addition to the pension he is receiving if disability pension awarded him in respect of his present services does not exceed the amount of award he may receive under the terms of this order. If he becomes entitled in consequence of his present service to a pension under Articles 1162 to 1166 of the Pay Warrant of 1914 of a higher amount than he is receiving under the terms of this order, such additional pension will not be added to the amount he is receiving. All he will be entitled to is the difference between the amount he receives under the terms of Army Order 443 of 1915 and whatever award may be made under the terms of Articles 1162 to 1166 of the Pay Warrant of 1914.

Army Order 402 of 1916 makes provision for officers injured in the performance of Military duty, but not in action, and authorizes the issue of pension in case of an injury due directly and wholly to War service, subject to it being proved that injury arose from some special risk due to War conditions and that reasonable precautions were not neglected by the officer.

Every discharged soldier, disabled or not, is entitled to gratuity of £1, which will be paid to him in cash on leaving by the O.C of the hospital.

Men who have served overseas and who were discharged on medical grounds, and also men whose disability is considered to have been caused or aggravated by Military service, are discharged under paragraph 392 K.R., and not under III (C) or III (C. C.), whatever their length of service may have been.

In all cases where there is any ground to support a claim that Military service has played a part causing or aggravating disability, the discharge is to be made under 392 ex vl. K.R.

The following information will be helpful to Discharged Soldiers :—

**1. Date of Discharge.**—Three weeks after the date shown on Protection Certificate (A.F.W. 3201).

**2. Pay.**—Whilst on three weeks' furlough pending discharge—

(*a*) FIRST week's ration allowance and pay (if account is not in debt), together with any back pay known to be due and allowance instead of plain clothes (if such were not issued) will be paid by the Officer Commanding the man's OLD UNIT. If not received in four or five days write to Officer Commanding old unit.

(*b*) SECOND week's ration allowance and pay (as above) a week after leaving this centre, from the Regimental Paymaster of Regiment or Corps.

(*c*) THIRD week's ration allowance and pay (as above) a fortnight after leaving this centre, from Regimental Paymaster of Regiment or Corps. This will be the final settlement of pay account on leaving the Army.

**3. Gratuity.**—Every man discharged receives a gratuity of one pound (£1) for every year or part of a year served in the Army. Of this sum, one pound is issued now and the balance (if any) is paid with the third week's pay as above. This gratuity has nothing to do with pay.

**4. Insurance Card** (A.F. O. 1845).—A man will receive this from the Regimental Paymaster with his third week's pay as above. This should be completed and posted to his Approved Society, in order that he may be entitled to benefits under National Insurance Act. He should also receive with his papers from the Ministry of Pensions a card (I.S.1) which will enable him to obtain immediate treatment by presenting it to any doctor willing to accept him as a patient.

**5. Discharge Certificates** (A.F. B. 2067 and 2079).—

He should receive these from the Officer in charge of Records of his Regiment or Corps on actual day of discharge.

**6. Silver War-Services Badge.**—Men who have served overseas and who are discharged as unfit for further service will receive this from Officer in charge of Records of Regiment on day of discharge, or as soon after as it is possible to issue same.

**7. Separation Allowance.**—This is payable as at present, up to the date of actual discharge and for a period of fourteen days afterwards.

**8. Employment.**—The Protection Certificate is sufficient guarantee of discharge for an employer to engage him; it is not necessary to wait until he receive his Discharge Certificates before obtaining work. If he is in want of a job, apply to the nearest Employment Exchange, the manager of which will endeavour to obtain work for him suitable to his capacity.

**9. Treatment.**—Men requiring any kind of medical treatment should apply to the Local Pensions Committee nearest to their home. If in possession of Treatment Card (A.F.W. 3555), this should be taken or sent to the Pensions Committee, who will make the necessary arrangements.

**10. Training.**—Arrangements can be made by Local Pensions Committees to train certain men in various occupations if they are unfitted to return to their old work. Inquiries should be made of Local Pensions Committees as to details.

**11. Pensions.**—Men discharged with disabilities caused or aggravated by Military service in the present War will receive either a pension or a disability gratuity. The Local Pensions Committee will see that a man gets his correct pension or gratuity.

**12. Difficulties.**—In case of any difficulties in any of the above matters men should apply personally to the Local Pensions Committee—the address can be obtained at any Post Office—taking these Instructions and also Protection Certificate with him. If he lives in the country, or in a small town where there is no Pension

Committee, then he should write, giving all particulars of his case, including his correct regimental number, rank and last regiment in which he served previous to his being sent to this centre.

As from the 29th day of September, 1917.

It is provided that all warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men now serving who, having on or since August 4, 1914, completed twenty-two years' service on their current attestation, including the extra year under Section 87 (1) of the Army Act, have been retained in the service under the Military Service Act, 1916 (Session 2), or have voluntarily continued in the service during the War, may elect within the period hereinafter laid down to draw with retrospective effect the pension to which they would have been entitled by service if they had been discharged on completing twenty-two years' service. A soldier who had more than twenty-two years' service on August 4, 1914, and elects to draw pension under this Order may have his pension assessed and paid with arrears as though he had been discharged on August 4, 1914, but not sooner.

Similarly, soldiers who now have less than twenty-two years' service may, if they complete twenty-two years' service during the War, elect to draw service pension from the date of completion of twenty-two years' service.

The right to elect to draw service pension from the completion of twenty-two or more years' service must be exercised within three months of the date of this Order, or of the completion of twenty-two years' service, whichever is the later date; the election once made will be final, and the pension granted will not under any circumstances be subsequently increased; though, if disabled, the soldier will be eligible for a disability pension in addition on the usual conditions.

A soldier who elects to draw his pension under this Order will be regarded as having terminated his existing engagement with effect from the date from which the pension becomes issuable, and as having entered into a new engagement terminable at the end of the War.

A soldier who does not claim his pension as above will continue to serve in the Army under the usual conditions providing for the continuance of men of such service, counting his service towards increase of pension.

It is further provided that from September 29, 1917, for the remaining period of the present War no stoppage shall be made from the pay of any soldier in respect of his admission to hospital unless the disability is due to an offence under the Army Act or to the soldier's own fault.

**Service Pension.** The Chelsea Commissioners deal with Service Pensions. A soldier to be eligible for service pension when discharged on termination of engagement must have served for at least twenty-one years with the Colours and Army Reserve; and if a private or lance-corporal, must reckon fourteen years' qualifying or pensionable service on completing twenty-one years' service, or if a N.C.O. he must reckon at least three years' qualifying service in the rank of Corporal or higher rank on completion of twenty-one years' service.

**Soldiers Suffering from Tuberculosis of the Lungs.** In cases in which the soldier has developed this disease during service overseas, the cause is said to be attributable to or aggravated by Military service.

In all other cases the disease is presumed to have been contracted in or aggravated by Military service unless the Invaliding Board are satisfied that phthisis was present previous to the man's enlistment, and that the disease was not aggravated by Military service.

## FINANCIAL INSTRUCTIONS IN RELATION TO PENSIONS

Paymasters concerned will issue separation allowance and allotments of pay to soldiers' families, in accordance with the Allowance Regulations and Pay Warrant.

When application is made on behalf of an insane pensioner, the person responsible for his maintenance

should be furnished by the paymaster with A.F.D. 453, and the usual procedure should then be followed, except that A.F.O. 1805 should be substituted for the form of life certificate. Should A.F.D. 400 not have been received by the paymaster, he will at once report the application to Chelsea Hospital, stating the corps in which the applicant last served, and the date of the confirmation of his discharge.

**Arrears and Forfeiture of Pension.** In the case of a newly admitted pensioner who does not apply for payment or to have his pension documents transferred within six months from the date of admission, the paymaster will make inquiries at the last known address, and, if the man cannot be found, will transmit the documents to the War Office, and make the necessary entry in his casualty return (A.F.D. 408). The same course will be followed in the case of (*a*) pensioners who have neglected to draw their pensions for four successive quarters, and (*b*) pensioners transferred from other districts who do not apply for payment within twelve months.

A pensioner who, after having once drawn pension, has neglected to apply for payment during the current quarter, may be paid the arrears in the following quarter, provided he can furnish a satisfactory reason for not having applied for payment or forwarded his life certificate. If he has neglected to do so for any period between six and twelve months, he must furnish satisfactory certificates showing the manner in which his time has been occupied during such period; and such certificates will be retained to vouch the payment of the arrears, unless the retention of the certificates by the pensioner is indispensable to his obtaining employment, when a statement certifying that the requisite documents have been produced, and that they satisfactorily account for the pensioner's occupation during the period of his absence, will be substituted therefor. If a distinguished or meritorious service annuitant or a Victoria Cross pensioner neglects to forward his life certificate for a period exceeding six months, inquiry

should be made, and the result reported to the War Office.

A pensioner whose name has been struck off the pay list on account of neglect to draw his pension for four successive quarters will not be restored without special authority from the general officer in charge of administration of the command.

**Paupers (including Pauper and Criminal Lunatics).** Stoppages from pension for the maintenance by parochial authorities of a pensioner, or of his wife or family, will be made under the Pensions and Yeomanry Pay Act, 1884, and the Pay Warrant. Should the pensioner appeal against the stoppage for the maintenance of his wife on the ground of her profligacy, it will rest with him to produce the necessary evidence of misconduct, and such evidence will be forwarded by the paymaster to the War Office with his report upon the case.

Should a special campaign pensioner become an inmate of a lunatic asylum, his pension will not be payable in respect of the cost of his maintenance therein. If, however, the pensioner has a wife, or other dependent relatives, the pension may be disposed according to regulations.

Every payment to a Union for the maintenance of a pensioner, or of his wife or children, will be vouched by a statement on A.F.O. 1805.

Whenever the parochial authorities forgo their claim in favour of the pensioner's wife or family, the payment of the pension may be made in advance to the wife or family, as the case may be, but the life certificate must be dated not earlier than the first day of the quarter to which the payment relates.

Under the Superannuation Act, 1887, when a Government contribution is claimable towards the maintenance of pauper lunatics, their pensions must be reduced by an equivalent amount, whether the Guardians actually claim the contribution or not.

**Lunatics who are not Paupers.** The pension of a man suffering from mental infirmity may if he is not a pauper inmate of a lunatic asylum, etc., in Great Britain or Ireland, be paid in arrear to his relatives or other

persons in whose charge he is placed. The paymaster will require the production of a medical certificate at the end of each quarter, showing that the pensioner was alive, and unable by reason of mental disability to manage his affairs during the period for which payment is claimed, and will satisfy himself from time to time that the pension is properly applied.

Any balance of pay due to lunatic reservists at the date of their discharge from the Reserve as medically unfit for further service may be paid to their wives or dependent relatives or persons supporting the lunatics, or, if none such exist, to the guardians or other local authority responsible for their maintenance, provided the usual certificates of life and disability (A.F.O. 1805) are furnished, and the receipts of such persons or authorities may be accepted as legal acquittances.

## VOLUNTEERS ON TEMPORARY SERVICE. COMPENSATION FOR INJURY

Any compensation payable is not affected by the earnings of the man concerned in civil life. Regulations are amended to read that 'in the event of the death or incapacity of any person resulting from injury by accident arising out of temporary employment, compensation will be granted on the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906. The sum payable will be determined by the average weekly earnings of a civilian workman engaged on similar work in the locality where the accident occurred, except that the maximum average earnings will be regarded as £2 a week. No award in respect of death or permanent disablement will exceed £300. The earnings of a volunteer in his own civil occupation will not affect the amount of compensation payable.

**Appeals.** The Pensions Appeal Tribunal has only power to deal with appeals where the Minister of Pensions has decided that a man's unfitness is not attributable to or aggravated by Military service in the present War.

Where a **Gratuity** has been awarded an appeal may be made to The Secretary, Appeals Court, Royal Hospital, Chelsea, London, S.W., for reconsideration for **Pension.**

The Secretary of the Pensions Appeal Tribunal issues a free railway warrant to the man when notifying him of the date of the hearing of his case. Subsistence allowance is also given at the rate of 3*s.* 6*d.* if absent from home for one night, 2*s.* if absent for one day for more than ten hours, and 1*s.* if absent for less than ten hours.

## WIDOWS AND DEPENDANTS

Pensions to the widows, children, and dependants of deceased soldiers, cannot be claimed as a right, and no pension is granted or continued to a widow or dependant who is unworthy of favour, and it is in the power of the Minister of Pensions to terminate or suspend any pension that may have been granted to such persons or to provide for its administration under such conditions as he may determine, and his decision in any case shall be final.

He may deduct from any pension or allowance the cost of any benefit which it may hereafter be decided to substitute, provided that no deduction made shall be at a greater rate than one penny for each full half-crown of the pension or allowance.

**Widows' Pensions.** The widow of a soldier who is killed while in the performance of Military duty, or dies as a result of wounds or injuries received, or dies of disease due to or aggravated by active service, within seven years of his removal from duty on account of such disease or injuries, may be granted a minimum pension at the following rates—

| | Weekly. | |
|---|---|---|
| | *s.* | *d.* |
| Warrant Officer, Class I | 21 | 3 |
| Warrant Officer, Class II, or Non-Commissioned Officer, Class I | 18 | 9 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class II | 17 | 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class III | 16 | 3 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class IV | 15 | 0 |
| Private, etc. (Class V) | 13 | 9 |

The pension granted to the widow of a soldier who held paid acting rank may be at the rate appropriate to that rank.

**Alternative Pension.** Any widow pensioned as above who makes application and shows that the minimum pension, with children's allowances (if any), which she has been granted is less than one-half of any alternative pension that might have been awarded to the deceased soldier had he survived, may be granted, in lieu of a minimum pension and children's allowances, a pension which shall not exceed one-half of such deceased soldier's alternative pension.

The pension issuable to a widow is increased by 1*s.* 3*d.* a week when she reaches the age of 45.

**Training.** An allowance not exceeding 12*s.* 6*d.* per week may be made to a widow for a period not exceeding thirteen weeks whilst she is undergoing any course of instruction which, in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions, will be advantageous to her. Where an allowance is granted under this subsection any fees for training, for which provision is not otherwise made, may be paid.

**Temporary Pension.** The widow of a soldier who has died from wounds, injuries, or disease, neither attributable to Military service nor certified as aggravated by such service, may be granted a temporary pension of 15*s.* a week for the period of the War and for twelve months afterwards.

Any pension granted to the widow of a soldier ceases on her re-marriage, and she may then be given a gratuity equal to one year of her minimum pension. Allowances for children may be paid after re-marriage.

The widow of a man who has been in receipt of a disablement pension of not less than 10*s.* a week, but whose death does not entitle her to a pension, may, provided she was living with the man at the time of his death, receive a pension of not more than one-half of the deceased soldier's pension.

**Gratuity.** In addition to any pension and children's allowances there may be granted—

A gratuity not exceeding £5 to meet expenses conse-

quent on or caused by the soldier's death, in any case when the death of the soldier occurred on or prior to July 1, 1916.

The widow of a soldier separated from him at the time of his death may, if otherwise eligible, be granted a pension equal to the amount due to her under a separation order or voluntarily paid by her husband, or both, up to a maximum of 10*s.* a week, and allowances for her children, if maintained by her. Allowances for children may also be granted to the separated wife of a soldier who did not contribute to her support.

Any woman who has lived as his wife with a soldier, who has died in the circumstances set forth above, may, if she had been wholly or substantially dependent on that soldier and has been drawing separation allowance as for a wife, or was eligible for such allowance, be granted a pension—

If and for so long as she has children of the soldier in her charge, 10*s.* a week and allowances for the children.

Or if she has no children of the soldier, or has ceased to have them in her charge (otherwise than from their being removed from her control on account of her misconduct), 10*s.* a week for the period of the War and twelve months afterwards, or for twelve months after ceasing to have any child of the deceased soldier in her charge, whichever be the later date, and for any subsequent period during which, from infirmity or age, she is wholly or partly incapable of supporting herself.

**Children's Allowances.** A widow pensioned may be granted a further allowance at the following weekly rates for each child under the age of 16 maintained by her—

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| For a first child . . . . . | 5 | 0 |
| For a second child. . . . . | 4 | 2 |
| For a third child . . . . . | 3 | 4 |
| For each child after the third . . . . | 2 | 6 |

**Motherless Children.** The child of a soldier may be awarded a pension of—

7*s.* a week if motherless, or is not or ceases to be under the control of its mother. In the event of two or more

children, the amount will be reduced to 6*s.* for each of the children after the first.

**Illegitimate Children.** 5*s.* a week where an affiliation order was in force on account of a child at the time of the soldier's death, or in the case of a child of a woman who was not married to or supported by the soldier, where there is satisfactory proof that he was its father.

This pension may continue in either case while the child is under the age of 16, and beyond that age under certain circumstances.

## CHILDREN—RE-MARRIAGE

In case of the re-marriage of a soldier's widow, the child of that soldier is not entitled to pension while the woman's present husband is engaged on munition work, or separation allowance while her husband is living away from home.

These allowances are issued in respect of the child of any soldier born before or within nine months after the soldier's discharge, but not the child of a wife or widow who was married to the soldier after the end of the War, or after his discharge, or after the receipt of the wound or injury, or after removal from duty on account of the contraction or the aggravation of the disease which caused his death.

The gratuity payable to a widow on re-marriage should be calculated on the widow's rate of pension alone. The issue of the children's pensions is not affected by the re-marriage.

Children's pensions are issuable to the date inclusive on which they attain the limit of age. They cease to be payable if the children are admitted to the Duke of York's Royal Military School, the Royal Hibernian Military School, or the Queen Victoria School; or if, being over the age of 6 years, they are admitted to an Industrial School or to an orphanage receiving a Government contribution towards the maintenance of the inmates.

Life certificates will be required only once a quarter,

the blank forms being sent out with the money orders for the last payment in the second month of the quarter.

When the life certificate shows that the children are being maintained in a charitable institution, it will be ascertained whether the authorities of the institution require the pension in aid of the children's maintenance. If not required, the case will be referred to the War Office.

If a child for whom a double pension has been authorized should become chargeable to the parish, the pension must be reduced to the single rate while so chargeable.

The pension of a child who becomes entitled to separation or subsistence allowance in consequence of the mother having re-married a soldier must be reduced by an amount equivalent to such allowance.

## PENSION AND GRATUITIES FOR DEPENDANTS OTHER THAN WIVES AND CHILDREN

It may be profitable to emphasize the fact that 'a pension or gratuity for the dependant of a deceased soldier shall not be claimed as a matter of right' (A.O. 85/1916).

The parent (or parents) of a deceased soldier may, if the parent (or parents) was (or were) wholly or partially dependent upon him, be granted a pension within the limit of pre-War dependence, and not exceeding 15*s*. a week, or a grant by way of gratuity or weekly payment, not exceeding in all a year's pay of the deceased soldier, or a year's allowance at the rate at which separation allowance and allotment were last paid or payable, to be awarded at the discretion of the Minister of Pensions.

The same award may be made to any other dependant, except a woman who has lived with the soldier as his wife.

'Pre-War Dependence' means the amount representing the value of the support or benefits afforded to a dependant by a soldier for a reasonable period immediately preceding the commencement of the War (or

entry into service or enlistment, if subsequent to the commencement of the war), exclusive of any increase due to circumstances arising out of the War, in the case of entry into service or enlistment subsequent to the commencement of the War, and includes the—

Amount regularly contributed by the man if he received no material benefits in return therefor, or the

Amount regularly contributed by the man in excess of expenditure incurred on his account, or the

Money value of any benefit conferred upon the dependant by the man.

If the parent (or parents) of a soldier are wholly or partly incapable of self-support from infirmity or age, they may be granted a pension not exceeding 15*s.* a week—

If the soldier at the commencement of the War was serving or had served not less than one year as an apprentice in any recognized trade ; or

If the soldier for the purpose of qualifying for any profession or employment had, after the age of 16, attended regularly any school, college, university, or hospital, or had been articled in accordance with the recognised practice of any profession, provided that the amount of a pension in this case may not exceed 5*s.* for each completed year of the soldier's attendance or articles.

This award may be granted on account of each son, but the total of the pensions so granted must not exceed 15*s.* a week.

The mother of a soldier may, if by reason of the death of the soldier's father during the War she becomes at any time wholly or partly incapable of self-support from infirmity or age, be granted a pension not exceeding 15*s.* a week.

In the calculation of the pension payable to or on account of a soldier, who at the commencement of the War was serving and had served not less than one year as an apprentice in any recognized trade, the standard rate of wages of that trade in the district at the time of the commencement of the War may be substituted for pre-War earnings, provided enlistment took place before the age of 26.

In the calculation of the pension payable to or on account of a soldier who for the purpose of qualifying for any profession or employment had, after the age of 16, attended regularly any school, college, university or hospital, or had been articled in accordance with the recognized practice of any profession, an amount equivalent to what would have been the soldier's minimum pension for the highest degree of disablement, with an addition of 5*s.* for each completed year of such attendance or 'articles' before the age of 23, may be substituted for pre-War earnings, up to a maximum of 50*s.* a week, provided enlistment took place before the age of 26.

Any dependant of a soldier not eligible for pension under the foregoing conditions, but in respect of whom separation allowance was paid, or who was eligible for such allowance, may, provided he or she is wholly or partially incapable of self-support and in pecuniary need, be granted a pension of 5*s.* a week or the amount of pre-War dependence, so long as the incapacity continues. If it ceases, a terminal gratuity may be given not exceeding the amount of twenty-six weeks' pension, or the balance of such gratuity as might have been issued, if there had been no incapacity, whichever is the greater.

Any pension granted to the separated wife or to a female dependant of a soldier as above will cease on her marriage or re-marriage, and she may then be given a gratuity not exceeding twenty-six weeks of that pension. Allowances for children may be paid after marriage or re-marriage.

The mother of a soldier who re-marries after application for separation allowance and prior to application is not entitled to pension.

On death of a soldier, a Class A dependant is paid estimated dependency (not allotment) pending pension.

(*a*) The parent or parents of a man who has died as a result of the present War may, if they are or become wholly or partly incapable of self-support from infirmity or age and in pecuniary need, be granted a pension at such rate (not less than 3*s.* 6*d.* or more than 15*s.* a week) as the Minister may determine, notwithstanding that

they were not dependent on the sailor or soldier before he joined for service.

(*b*) The parent or parents of a man who has so died who may have been or may hereafter be pensioned at a rate less than 15*s*. a week may, in like circumstances, be granted an increase of pension at such rate as the Minister may determine, irrespective of the amount of their dependence on the sailor or soldier before he joined for service.

(*c*) All pensions now current of a smaller amount than 3*s*. 6*d*. a week will be raised to that rate, and in future no pension to parents will be less than 3*s*. 6*d*. a week.

Grants made under this concession will in no case have effect from a date earlier than September 1, 1917.

# NAVAL AND AUXILIARY PENSIONS, ETC.

## PENSIONS AND GRATUITIES TO THE RELATIVES OF OFFICERS OF THE ROYAL NAVY

Widows of officers of the Royal Navy and the Royal Marines may be allowed pensions, and their children compassionate allowances.

All applications for pensions and for compassionate allowances must be addressed to the Secretary of the Admiralty for the decision of the Board.

The pensions of all widows commence from the day following that on which their husbands died, provided application be made by the widow within twelve months from the same, otherwise from the time only of such application.

Increased rates of pension or compassionate allowances are not retrospective in their operation, and only affect the families of such officers as may be on the Active List at the date, or subsequently thereto.

The pensions authorized by these Regulations cannot be claimed as a right: they are granted as rewards for good and faithful service rendered by deceased officers; they will only be conferred on persons deserving the Public Bounty; the ordinary pensions will not be granted to widows whose private incomes may exceed the confidential scale which may from time to time be fixed by the Admiralty as the limit for each rank of officer; and the pensions are liable to be discontinued altogether

in case of any misconduct rendering the individuals receiving them unworthy of the Public Bounty.

The widows of Naval officers placed on permanent half pay or on the Retired or Pension List, on or after August 2, 1910, on account of misconduct, after having completed not less than twenty years, counting towards retirement or pension, may at the discretion of the Admiralty be granted pensions, provided that a deduction of not less than 10 per cent. shall have been made from the retired pay or pensions to which, but for their misconduct, these officers would have been entitled. In such cases the widow's pension will be reduced by half the percentage by which the husband's retired pay or pension has been reduced.

Widows of retired officers, or others formerly in the Royal Navy, having been allowed to resign their Commissions, who have been called out or have volunteered for service in case of war or emergency, and have lost their lives from causes attributable to the service, may be allowed pensions, and their children compassionate allowances on the special scale applicable to the rank held by the officer at the time of his death, notwithstanding that he may have married whilst on the Retired List, or after resignation of his commission, and subject to the provisions of the Commutation Acts of 1871 and 1882.

A widow is not eligible to be placed on the Pension List if she had not been married twelve months to the officer by whose right she claims the pension at the time of his death, unless the said officer was killed or drowned in an immediate act of duty. The Admiralty may, however, grant the pension in cases of officers dying before the expiration of twelve months from the time of their marriage, but only if satisfactory evidence is produced to show that the marriage did not take place under any circumstances which would imply that there was any fraud in the transaction, or any improper intention of obtaining the pension for the widow and provided it be clearly shown that the officer was in good health when he married, and that the disease which occasioned

his death was not brought on by any misconduct, or by any circumstances over which he had control.

(*A*) The widow is not entitled to pension if she receives any other pension, provision or allowance from the Government on account of her husband's services in a Naval or Military capacity; but widows in receipt of pensions from the Civil List are not deprived of their Naval pensions on account thereof, and widows who, in consequence of second marriage, may be eligible for either a Navy or an Army pension, may elect to receive that which is most advantageous to them.

(*B*) If her private income exceeds the confidential scale fixed by the Admiralty as the limit for the rank last held by her husband; but the widows of Commanders retired with the rank of Captain, Lieutenant-Commanders or Lieutenants retired with the rank of Commander, and so on, may enjoy the private income applicable to the higher rank without forfeiting their pensions thereby.

(*C*) If the marriage took place subsequent to the officer commuting his retired pay, or if the officer, after having commuted, removed his name from the List of the Navy, although the marriage may have taken place before such commutation.

*Note.*—Widows of officers married after partial commutation will only be granted a proportion of the pension for which they would otherwise have been eligible.

(*D*) If marriage took place after the officer was removed from the Active List. This regulation to be only applicable to officers who retired after November 10, 1886, and is not to apply to widows of retired officers or others called out or volunteering in case of war or emergency, who lose their lives from causes attributable to the service.

(*E*) If her husband, being a medical officer, should retire or withdraw upon a gratuity.

The pensions of widows whose private incomes may, after their pensions have been awarded, increase beyond the limit fixed from time to time by the Admiralty for the rank last held by their husbands, are suspended as

long as their private incomes exceed such limit; but may be restored again in the event of their private incomes decreasing within the limit.

In all cases of a widow re-marrying, her pension is suspended from the date of her re-marriage; but in the event of her again becoming a widow, her pension may be restored, upon proof being adduced to the Admiralty that her private income does not exceed the limit fixed from time to time by the Admiralty for the rank last held by her husband, and that she is otherwise deserving the Public Bounty, but it will be again liable to suspension during future re-marriage.

Children who are being educated at the expense of Greenwich Hospital may be granted the minimum compassionate allowances applicable to their father's rank, provided real poverty is proved to exist.

In the event of a widow re-marrying, her children by the first marriage are still eligible for compassionate allowances, provided they are otherwise qualified to receive them.

Compassionate allowances are granted for the year commencing January 1, but are not payable until after the following April 1.

Children who were born after their fathers commuted their retired pay are not eligible to be placed on the compassionate list. Children born after partial commutation will only be granted a proportion of the allowances for which they would otherwise have been eligible.

**Mothers.** When an officer is killed in action, or killed or drowned on duty, or dies of wounds or injuries received on duty within seven years after being injured, and leaves no widow or legitimate child, but leaves a mother who is a widow in distressed circumstances, and who was dependent upon him, the mother may receive a pension equal to the *ordinary* rate of widow's pension attached to the rank which her son held at the time of his death; but if such mother herself be in the receipt of a pension as an officer's widow, or have any other provision of any kind from the public, no allowance will be made

to her on account of her son, unless she gives up the other pension or allowance, and the pension given to a mother on account of her son will be forfeited on re-marriage, and will not be restored in the event of her again becoming a widow.

**Sisters.** Sisters of officers are not eligible for any allowance, unless under very special and extraordinary circumstances. The allowance will not exceed that which would be given to a mother, and will not be given in any case unless the officer is killed in action, or killed or drowned on duty, or dies of wounds or injuries received on duty within two years after being injured, and has left no widow, legitimate child, nor mother, nor unless the sister is an orphan, having no surviving brother and was dependent for support upon the officer killed. Every pension so granted will cease when the person receiving it shall marry, or be in any other manner sufficiently provided for.

## OFFICERS

By an Order in Council dated September 29, 1917, sanction was given to—

'The grant of pensions, allowances, and gratuities to the persons above referred to on the scales and subject to the conditions prescribed in the Regulations annexed hereto, with effect as regards pensions and allowances from April 1, 1917, without prejudice, however, to the validity of anything which may have been done by the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.'

The Order provides—

'That if more favourable to the officer of warrant rank the pension, allowance, or gratuity payable under existing regulations shall be granted, and no grant to an officer of warrant rank or to the family of such officer shall be re-assessed to their disadvantage; and provided further that any widow, child, or dependant of a commissioned

warrant . . . officer promoted or of a warrant officer appointed or promoted to that rank during the War shall not be less favourably treated than if he had served or continued to serve in some lower rank or rating of his class.'

The first Schedule gives the scale of awards for assessed disability as follows :—

PENSION ON ACCOUNT OF DISABLEMENT

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage Degree of Disablement. | Officers of Warrant Rank on the Permanent or Temporary Lists of the Reserves or on the Temporary Lists of the Royal Navy or Royal Marines. | | Additions to Service Pensions or Gratuities of Officers of Warrant Rank holding Permanent Commissions. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Commissioned Warrant Officers of R.N. and corresponding Ranks. | Warrant Officers of R.N. and corresponding Ranks. | Commissioned Warrant Officers of R.N. and corresponding Ranks. | Warrant Officers of R.N. and corresponding Ranks. |
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) |
| | Per cent. | £ | £ s. | £ | £ s. |
| 1 | 100 | 150 | 125 0 | 100 | 75 0 |
| 2 | 80 | 120 | 100 0 | 80 | 60 0 |
| 3 | 70 | 105 | 87 10 | 70 | 52 10 |
| 4 | 60 | 90 | 75 0 | 60 | 45 0 |
| 5 | 50 | 75 | 62 10 | 50 | 37 10 |
| 6 | 40 | 60 | 50 0 | 40 | 30 0 |
| 7 | 30 | 45 | 37 10 | 30 | 22 10 |
| 8 | 20 | 30 | 25 0 | 20 | 15 0 |

The second Schedule sets forth the scale of Allowances for children of Disabled or Deceased Officers of Warrant Rank.

CHILDREN'S ALLOWANCES

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage Degree of Disablement. | First Child. | Second Child. | Third Child. | Fourth and each subsequent Child. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) |
| | Per cent. | £ s. | £ s. | £ | £ s. |
| 1 | 100 | 15 0 | 12 10 | 10 | 7 10 |
| 2 | 80 | 12 0 | 10 0 | 8 | 6 0 |
| 3 | 70 | 10 10 | 8 15 | 7 | 5 5 |
| 4 | 60 | 9 0 | 7 10 | 6 | 4 10 |
| 5 | 50 | 7 10 | 6 5 | 5 | 3 15 |
| 6 | 40 | 6 0 | 5 0 | 4 | 3 0 |
| 7 | 30 | 4 10 | 3 15 | 3 | 2 5 |
| 8 | 20 | 3 0 | 2 10 | 2 | 1 10 |

The Regulations governing the issue of these awards provide that—

1. 'An officer of warrant rank who is discharged, relinquishes his commission or warrant, or reverts to the Reserve List on account of medical unfitness, certified as either attributable to or aggravated by Naval or Military service in consequence of the present War, and not being due to his serious negligence or misconduct, may be granted the disability pension shown in the first Schedule to these Regulations, which corresponds to the degree of his disablement as certified.'

2. 'An officer holding a permanent commission or warrant may retain any service pension that may have been awarded him, in addition to the disability pension provided in either column 5 or 6 of the first Schedule, or the disability that would have been awarded had he held only a temporary commission.'

3. If the disabled officer is in receipt of a wound gratuity or pension, he is only eligible for a pension at a rate equal to his pension for service (if eligible therefor) unless the amount is less than the disability pension to which he would be entitled. In that case an amount equal to the deficiency may be awarded.

4. An officer who has lost the sight of both eyes as

the result of wounds received in action shall be granted not less than £225 a year in wounds pension and disability for service pension taken together, and a warrant officer in the same circumstances not less than £175.

5. If after demobilization or retirement from the service, or transfer to the Reserve, except for misconduct, an officer is certified to be disabled by wounds, injuries, or disease attributable to or aggravated by Naval or Military service in the present War, not due to his negligence or misconduct, he may be granted a disability pension as if he had retired as medically unfit for further service upon the date from which his claim is established.

6. **Children's Allowances.** The children of an officer in receipt of a pension under (1) are entitled to an allowance as provided in the second Schedule.

This allowance may be continued beyond the age of 16 in the case of apprentices receiving not more than nominal wages or of children being educated at secondary schools, technical institutes, or universities, and also in the case of a child incapable through mental or physical infirmity of earning a living, provided the infirmity existed before the child attained the age of 16.

7. An alternative pension, which shall not exceed the pre-War earnings up to a maximum of £200 a year plus half any pre-War earnings between £200 and £400 a year, may be awarded in lieu of disability pension and children's allowances.

8. An officer of warrant rank in receipt of a disability pension under these Regulations may be granted in addition to that pension—

(*a*) The difference (if any) between that pension and pension at the rate for the highest degree of disablement certified to require special medical treatment in a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home, or other institution, a deduction being made on account of the cost of his maintenance in the institution.

(*b*) Actual necessary medical and other expenses incidental to treatment for the disability on account of which he was discharged as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

(*c*) If disabled in the highest degree, an allowance not exceeding £65 a year in any case where the constant attendance of a second person is necessary.

An officer of warrant rank in receipt of a disability pension may be granted in addition to that pension—

(*a*) The difference, if any, between that pension and that for the highest degree of disablement for any period while undergoing training in a technical institution or otherwise which in the opinion of the Minister would benefit him.

(*b*) An allowance to cover fees in respect of training up to such amount and subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

9. A pension of £80 a year may be granted to the widow of a chief officer of a coastguard cruiser, a pension of £75 to the widow of a commissioned warrant officer or divisional chief officer of coastguard, and a pension of £62 10*s*. a year to the widow of a warrant officer or officer of relative rank in the coastguard.

10. A gratuity in addition to pension may be granted to the widow of an officer of warrant rank who is killed in action, whether afloat or ashore, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to War service, or who dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received, at the following rates : (*a*) To the widow of a commissioned warrant officer, £140 ; (*b*) to the widow of a warrant officer, £100 ; provided that, where it would be more favourable to her, the amount of the gratuity shall be equal to a year's full pay of the rank which the officer of warrant rank held on March 31, 1917, and in the calculation of this gratuity any full-pay allowances shall be included.

11. The widow of an officer of warrant rank may be granted a further allowance for each child maintained by her at the following annual rates : £15 for the first child, £12 10*s*. for the second child, £10 for the third child, and £7 10*s*. for the fourth and each subsequent child.

These allowances may be granted or continued up to the age of 18 in the case of sons, and 21 in the

case of daughters, unless the child provided for marries.

12. The widow of an officer of warrant rank, who shows that her pension together with children's allowances (if any) is less than one-half the alternative pension that might have been awarded to the deceased officer had he survived and been incapable of supplementing his pension by earnings, may be granted a pension which shall not exceed one-half of such officer's alternative pension.

The widow of an officer not eligible for pension may be granted a gratuity of not less than one and not more than three years' pay of the appointment held by the officer, provided that—

(*a*) The officer dies while on full pay or during the War after removal from full pay from the injury or disease for which he was removed from full pay or some closely connected disease, and there is a continuous medical history of sickness; and—

(*b*) The widow is disqualified only through the insufficiency of the officer's service for an ordinary pension under the terms of the King's Regulations and Admiralty Instructions.

13. Any pension granted to the widow of an officer shall cease on her re-marriage; but, in the event of her again becoming a widow, her pension may be restored, if otherwise qualified, and if in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions her pecuniary circumstances are such as to justify the restoration. Allowances for children may be paid after re-marriage.

14. The widow of an officer who was at the time of his death in receipt of a disability pension in consequence of disablement of not less than £50 a year, but whose death does not render her eligible for a pension may, provided she was living with the officer of warrant rank at the time of his death, receive a pension of not more than one-half of the deceased officer's disability pension, subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine and to cease on re-marriage.

15. (1) The child of an officer may be awarded a

pension of £25 a year where the child is or becomes motherless, or is not or ceases to be under the control of its mother. In the event of two or more children being maintained by one person the amount will be reduced to £20 for each of the children after the first.

16. A pension may be granted to the parent or parents of an officer, regard being had to the value (if any) of the support afforded before the War, or the commencement of his service, if later, and to the age or infirmity of the parent or parents.

A pension may be granted under this Article in respect of each son who has died in the circumstances set forth in the Regulations.

17. A gratuity not exceeding the value of one year's widow's pension may be granted to the parent or parents jointly of an officer.

18. A pension may be granted to the sister or brother (or sisters or brothers) of an officer provided that they were wholly or partially dependent upon him for support. The pension is not granted or continued to a brother after the age of 18, nor to a sister after the age of 21, unless he (or she) is unfitted to earn his (or her) living.

An award made to the relatives other than widow and children of a deceased officer is subject to the following conditions—

(1) It shall be granted only if the officer of warrant rank dies in the circumstances set forth in Article 11 (1) of the Pay Warrant.

(2) It shall be granted or continued only if the pecuniary or other circumstances of the relative are such as in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions to justify the award.

(3) It shall not, together with any other pension or similar provision from public funds, exceed the pension which has been or would have been awarded to the widow under Article 11.

(4) It shall not be transferable, except that where it is granted jointly to parents, or to two or more

sisters or brothers, it may be continued, wholly or in part, to the survivors.

(5) It shall cease on marriage or re-marriage.

By an Order in Council dated September 29, 1917, sanction was given to amendments in the Regulations relating to pensions and grants which may be awarded to commissioned and subordinate officers of the Naval, Coastguard, Marine, and Reserve Forces disabled in consequence of service during the present War, and to the widows, children, and other relatives of such officers, and also to members of nursing services.

The first Schedule sets forth the Retired pay to Disabled Officers.

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage Degree of Disablement. | Officers (combatant or otherwise) on the Permanent or Temporary Lists of the Reserve or on the Temporary Lists of the Royal Navy or Royal Marines. | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Captain R.N., Colonel R.M. and corresponding Ranks. | Commander R.N., Lieut. Colonel R.M. and corresponding Ranks. | Lieutenant Commander R.N., Major R.M. and corresponding Ranks. | Lieutenant R.N. Captain R.M., Sub-Lieutenants R.N., Subalterns R.M., and corresponding Ranks. | Midshipmen, Naval Cadets (serving with the Fleet) and corresponding Ranks. | Officers holding Permanent Commissions in the Royal Navy or Royal Marines. |
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) | (7) | (8) |
| | Per cent. | £ s. | £ | £ s. | £ s. | £ s. | £ |
| 1 | 100 | 275 0 | 250 | 225 0 | 175 0 | 150 0 | 100 |
| 2 | 80 | 220 0 | 200 | 180 0 | 140 0 | 120 0 | 80 |
| 3 | 70 | 192 10 | 175 | 157 10 | 122 10 | 105 0 | 70 |
| 4 | 60 | 165 0 | 150 | 135 0 | 105 0 | 90 0 | 60 |
| 5 | 50 | 137 10 | 125 | 112 10 | 87 10 | 75 0 | 50 |
| 6 | 40 | 110 0 | 100 | 90 0 | 70 0 | 60 0 | 40 |
| 7 | 30 | 82 10 | 75 | 67 10 | 52 10 | 45 0 | 30 |
| 8 | 20 | 55 0 | 50 | 45 0 | 35 0 | 30 0 | 20 |

In addition to half pay or retired pay or gratuity for service.

The second Schedule gives the scale of Pensions, Gratuities, and Allowances to Officers' Widows and Children.

| Rank. | Widows' Pensions. Art. 11 (1) or (2). | Widows' Pensions. Art. 11 (3). | Widows' Gratuities. Art. 11 (4). | Children's Allowances. Art. 12 (1). | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (1) | (2) £ | (3) £ | (4) £ | (5) £ | (6) £ |
| Admiral of the Fleet | 800 | 600 | 3,500 | 30 | 25 |
| Admiral | 600 | 450 | 3,000 | 30 | 25 |
| Vice-Admiral | 500 | 375 | 2,000 | 30 | 25 |
| Rear-Admiral | 400 | 300 | 1,100 | 30 | 25 |
| Commodore | 300 | 225 | 900 | 30 | 25 |
| Captain | 200 | 150 | 600 | 24 | 20 |
| Colonel R.M. | | | 600 | | |
| Commander R.N. | | | 450 | | |
| Lt.-Col. R.M. | | | 450 | | |
| Lieut.-Commander R.N. | 140 | 105 | 300 | 24 | 20 |
| Major R.M. | | | 300 | | |
| Lieutenant R.N. | 100 | 75 | 250 | 24 | 20 |
| Captain R.M. | | | 250 | | |
| Sub-Lieut. R.N. | | | 140 | | |
| Lieut. R.M. | | | 140 | | |
| *Quartermaster R.M. | | | | | |

* If holding a permanent Commission, according to rank. If on the temporary list, £140.

The third Schedule shows the scale of Pensions provided for Disabled Nurses.

DISABLEMENT PENSION IF NOT ENTITLED TO SERVICE PENSION

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage Degree of Disablement. | Principal Matron or Matron-in-Chief. | Matron. | Staff Nurse or Sister. | Addition to Service Pension if entitled to such. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (1) | (2) Per cent. | (3) £ s. | (4) £ s. | (5) £ | (6) £ s. |
| 1 | 100 | 175 10 | 125 0 | 100 | 75 0 |
| 2 | 80 | 140 0 | 100 0 | 80 | 60 0 |
| 3 | 70 | 122 10 | 87 10 | 70 | 52 10 |
| 4 | 60 | 105 0 | 75 0 | 60 | 45 0 |
| 5 | 50 | 87 10 | 62 10 | 50 | 37 10 |
| 6 | 40 | 70 0 | 50 0 | 40 | 30 0 |
| 7 | 30 | 52 10 | 37 10 | 30 | 22 10 |
| 8 | 20 | 35 0 | 25 0 | 20 | 15 0 |

**Pensions and Gratuities to Officers incapacitated for further Service owing to ill-health, wounds, injuries, etc., attributable to, or developed by, War Service.**

A. Officers on the Permanent or Supplementary Combatant Lists of the Royal Navy or Royal Marines :—

1. Royal Naval officers totally disabled—

| | |
|---|---|
| Naval cadets serving with the Fleet.<br>Midshipmen.<br>Sub-lieutenants.<br>Lieutenants. | Pension at £150 a year. |

Lieutenants to be granted an additional £10 per annum for every year's service in excess of 14 years, the total pension, however, not to exceed £250 a year (see Clause 4 (*b*) hereof as to counting service).

Lieutenant-commanders to be granted pensions calculated in accordance with the retired pay Regulations applicable to rank, subject, however, to a minimum of £200 a year, and an increase on the maximum retired pay by £50 a year.

Commanders to be granted pensions calculated in accordance with the retired pay Regulations applicable to rank, together with an addition of £50 a year, the total pension, however, not to exceed the maximum retired pay of the rank.

2. Royal Naval Officers partially disabled—

Naval cadets serving with the Fleet, midshipmen, and sub-lieutenants, to be granted pensions or gratuities as follows—

If their earning capacity is certified by the Medical Director-General to be—

(*a*) Seriously affected—a pension of £100 per annum.

(*b*) Impaired—a pension of £75 per annum.

(*c*) Slightly impaired—a gratuity at our discretion not exceeding £500. Payment to be subject to the rule laid down in Section B hereof.

Lieutenants R.N. to be granted pensions calculated in accordance with the retired pay Regulations applicable to the rank, subject to a minimum of £128 a year.

Lieutenant-commanders to be granted pensions as follows—

(*d*) If under 40 years of age when retired—
Minimum £173 per annum.
If with 17 years' service £180 per annum, with an additional £10 per annum for each further year's service; subject to a maximum of £200 a year (see clause 4 (*b*) hereof as to counting service).

(*e*) If 40 years of age, or over, when retired—
In accordance with the retired pay Regulations applicable to the rank, subject to a minimum of £200 a year.

Commanders to be granted pensions calculated in accordance with the retired pay Regulations applicable to the rank, subject to a minimum of £200 per annum.

3. Commissioned Marine Officers totally or partially disabled—

To be granted pensions or gratuities in accordance with the Regulations and on the scale laid down for the Army.

4. (*a*) Officers granted pensions or gratuities under the above provisions not to be awarded the pensions or gratuities for wounds or injuries laid down in Chapter LII of the Regulations for the Government of Your Majesty's Naval Service, but officers eligible for retired pay and also a pension or gratuity for wounds or injuries to be granted retired pay and wounds, etc., pension or gratuity if more advantageous to them than a pension or gratuity under the above provisions.

(*b*) Service to count for pensions or gratuities where required under the above provisions in the same way, and under the same conditions, as for retired pay or service pension, except that "junior service" will count in full in all cases.

B. Officers on the Permanent or Temporary Combatant Lists of the Reserves, or on the Temporary Lists of the Royal Navy or Royal Marines:—

To be awarded pensions or gratuities as follows—

| Rank. | Earning Capacity. | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | Totally Destroyed. | Seriously Affected. | Impaired. | Slightly Impaired. |
| | Per annum. £ | Per annum. £ | Per annum. £ | |
| Naval Cadets serving with the Fleet . . | 150 | 100 | 75 | A gratuity at discretion not exceeding £500. |
| Midshipmen . . . | | | | |
| Sub-Lieutenants . . | | | | |
| Subalterns R.M. . . | | | | |
| Lieutenants (Navy) . | 150 | 128 | 100 | |
| Captains (Marine) . . | | 128 (R.M.L.I.) | | |
| | | 134 (R.M.A.) | | |
| Lieutenant-Commanders | 200 | 156 | 125 | |
| Majors . . . . . | | 173 (R.M.L.I.) | | |
| | | 183 (R.M.A.) | | |
| Commanders . . . | 225 | 210 | 150 | |
| Lieutenant-Colonels . | | 210 (R.M.L.I.) | | |
| | | 213 (R.M.A.) | | |

If the officer is under 25 years of age at the time of award, the amount granted to be paid as a whole, or in such instalments as the Admiralty may decide.

C. Non-Combatant Officers, Commissioned Warrant Officers, and Warrant Officers, on the Permanent or Temporary Lists of the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, or Reserves :—

To be granted pensions or gratuities under the Regulations, with the approval of the Lords Commissioners of the Treasury.

D. The above provisions to be applicable only to cases of ill-health, wounds, etc., arising out of the present hostilities, and in which the awards thereunder will be more advantageous to the recipients than under other Regulations authorizing similar awards. Awards already made to be reassessed accordingly, with effect as from March 1, 1915.

An Order in Council dated October 14, 1915, extended the privileges accorded to Continuous Service men by Orders in Council of April 20, 1880, and May 3, 1888, with certain limitations to officers in the Naval and Marine Forces called out for service in the present War.

The present order secures to Commissioned, Commissioned Warrant, and Warrant Officers, the retired pay or pension to which they are entitled, when called out for further service, 'notwithstanding any breach of discipline or misconduct committed during the said further service, provided that the breach of discipline or misconduct be neither—

'(*a*) Mutiny, nor

'(*b*) Felony, nor

'(*c*) Conduct unbecoming the character of an officer and in respect of which a sentence of dismissal from Your Majesty's Service with disgrace shall be passed, nor

'(*d*) Conduct of such a nature as would, in our opinion, merit a reduction in the rate of Retired Pay or Pension such as would have been made under the Regulations for the time being in force relating to the retirement of Naval or Marine officers for misconduct, had the officer concerned been retired or pensioned from the Active List on account of the conduct in question.'

An important concession was made by an Order in Council dated October 26, 1914.

The Regulations provide that men discharged from the Navy or Marines for reasons other than that of medical disability, may, if they re-enter the Service, count all former service with character not inferior to "Fair" towards pension, provided that a break of five years did not intervene between the two services.

The present order eliminates the disqualification of time.

An officer retired to the Reserve or Emergency List on account of medical unfitness certified as either attributable to or aggravated by Naval or Military service in consequence of the present War, may be granted the

retired pay shown in the first Schedule which corresponds to the degree of his disablement.

If he holds a permanent commission in the Royal Navy or Royal Marines, he may retain or receive either (*a*) the retired pay or gratuity which has been awarded to him, or for which he is eligible in respect of his service, or, if not eligible, the half pay of his rank and service, with an addition as in the last column of the first Schedule, or (*b*) the retired pay which would have been awarded to an officer holding only a temporary commission, whichever is more favourable.

If a disabled officer is in receipt of a service pension as a seaman or marine and holds a temporary commission in the Royal Navy or Royal Marines, he may be granted (*a*) that pension with an addition for his disability as in the last column of the first Schedule, or (*b*) the retired pay for which he is eligible, whichever is more favourable.

If a disabled officer is in receipt of wounds gratuity or pension, he is only eligible for retired pay at a rate equal to his half pay or (if eligible therefor) his retired pay for service, unless that half pay or retired pay and the wounds gratuity or pension together amount to less than the retired pay to which he would be entitled under these regulations. In that case an amount equal to the deficiency may be added to his retired pay.

An officer who has lost the sight of both eyes as the result of wounds received in action is granted not less than £300 a year in wounds pension and retired pay taken together.

In cases of pecuniary need a grant may be made to a disabled officer who is in receipt of retired pay of an education allowance not exceeding £50 a year in respect of each child above the age of 9.

An officer in receipt of retired pay may be granted in addition to that pay—

(*a*) The difference, if any, between the pay and retired pay at the rate for the highest degree of disablement for any period during which he is prevented from earning his living by undergoing training in a technical institution or otherwise.

(*b*) An allowance to cover fees in respect of training up to such amount and subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

In any case where the degree of disablement is assessed at less than 20 per cent., or where it is considered by the Minister of Pensions more in the interests of the officer, a gratuity or temporary allowance may be granted in place of any retired pay, and its amount will not exceed £500.

An officer retired as medically unfit for service, such unfitness being neither attributable to nor aggravated by Naval or Military service, and not being due to the serious negligence or misconduct of the officer, may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance.

Alternative retired pay may be granted an officer who makes application and shows that his retired pay together with any wound gratuity or pension of which he is in receipt, together with the average earnings (if any) of which he remains capable, are less than his pre-War earnings, of an amount which shall not exceed his pre-War earnings up to a maximum of £300 a year, plus half any pre-War earnings between £300 and £600 a year, inclusive. Half the retired pay awarded under the preceding articles may be subject to the condition that the disabled officer shall undergo medical treatment in a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home, or otherwise, for any period during which it is certified that such treatment is necessary in his interests.

An officer in receipt of retired pay may be granted in addition to that pay—

(*a*) The difference (if any) between that pay and retired pay at the rate for the highest degree of disablement for any period during which he is certified to require special medical treatment in a sanatorium, hospital, convalescent home, or other institution, a deduction being made from the officer's retired pay on account of the cost of his maintenance in the institution.

(*b*) Actual necessary medical and other expenses incidental to treatment in respect of the disability for which he was retired up to such amount and subject to

such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

(*c*) If disabled in the highest degree, an allowance not exceeding £78 a year in any case where the constant attendance of a second person is necessary.

The widow of an officer, including an officer of the Royal Marines employed on board His Majesty's ships, may be granted a pension as in the second column of the second Schedule if the officer (*a*) is killed in action, whether afloat or ashore, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to War service, or is killed or dies of injuries sustained on flying duty or while being carried on duty in aircraft under proper authority, or is drowned while on duty, or whose death results from destruction of ship, or who dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received, or (*b*) dies from disease certified as caused by extraordinary exposure or exertion on service within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such disease, or (*c*) dies in consequence of injuries received in the performance of duty otherwise than under (*a*) within seven years after having been so injured.

The widow of an officer of the Royal Marines on shore strength may be granted a pension as in the second column of the second Schedule if the officer (*a*) is killed in action, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to War service, or is killed or dies of injuries sustained on flying duty or while being carried on duty in aircraft under proper authority, or dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received, or (*b*) dies from illness which is certified as directly traceable to fatigue, privation, or exposure incident to active operations in the field within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such illness, or (*c*) dies in consequence of injuries received in the performance of Military duty otherwise than under (*a*) within seven years after having been so injured.

The widow of an officer, including an officer of the Royal Marines, may be granted a pension as in the third column of the second Schedule if the officer (*a*) dies of

disease attributable to or aggravated by Naval or Military service other than as above within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such disease, or (*b*) dies of injuries attributable to Naval or Military service other than as above, and not through his own serious negligence or misconduct, within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such injuries.

The widow of an officer who dies in the circumstances referred to above may be granted a gratuity in addition to pension as in the fourth column of the second Schedule, provided that, where it would be more favourable to her, the amount of the gratuity shall be equal to a year's full pay of the rank which the officer held on March 31, 1917, and for this purpose Officer's Command Money, and other full-pay allowances, except Table Money and Field Allowance, shall be included.

## NAVAL PENSIONERS RECALLED

By an Order in Council dated November 30, 1915, sanction was given to an application affecting Seamen and Marine Pensioners called upon to serve in time of emergency, and who may be promoted to Acting, Temporary or Permanent Warrant or Commissioned Rank, during the period of such emergency. The Order provides that as from the outbreak of the present War these officers may be—

1. Allowed to draw their man's pension in addition to the pay of the rank, but bonus not to be payable.

2. To be allowed, on reversion to the Pension List, to draw, in lieu of their man's pension, the regulated pension or retired pay calculated on their actual service as officers, subject, however, to the following exceptions—

(*a*) That, if more advantageous to them, the pension or retired pay be awarded on the Seaman's or Non-Commissioned Officer's scale, time as Acting, Temporary, or Permanent Warrant or Commis-

sioned Officer, counting as Chief Petty Officer's or Non-Commissioned Officer's time.

(*b*) That, in the event of discharge for misconduct, etc., the pension or retired pay be subject to the regulations governing such cases.

3. Men of the Royal Fleet Reserve who were discharged from that Force on account of promotion to be allowed, if more to their advantage, to return to the Reserve as men, and abandon any claim to pension as an officer.

1. In cases arising out of the present War, including those of Marine Officers employed on board H.M. ships, the classification governing the award of the different scales of pensions and allowances are as follows :—

CLASS I (Highest Scale).—Officers killed in action, or dying from wounds received in action, whether afloat or ashore, or whose deaths result from destruction of ship, or who suffer death by drowning or other violent death due directly and wholly to War service.

CLASS II (Intermediate Scale).—Officers who die of disease due to exposure or exertion on service, or from injuries received in and by service, so far as not covered by Class I.

CLASS III (Lowest Scale).—Officers who die of disease, injury, or accident, not coming under Classes I or II.

2. The rates of pension for widows of Lieutenants and Sub-Lieutenants in the Royal Navy, and other officers of corresponding rank in the Royal Navy and Royal Marines, to be raised to the following amounts—

| | |
|---|---|
| Class I . . . . . | £100 a year. |
| Class II . . . . . | £75 a year. |
| Class III . . . . . | £50 a year. |

3. The additional gratuity payable in Class I cases to continue to be paid at the existing rates.

4. In the cases of officers coming under Class III, who die during the present War without completing the minimum period of service necessary to qualify their widows for the award of pensions, gratuities of not less than one year's and not more than three years' pay to be awarded at the discretion of the Admiralty, and to

be paid in each case either in a lump sum, or in instalments, as the Admiralty may consider desirable.

5. The rates of Compassionate Allowances for the children of Commissioned Officers of all ranks up to and including that of Captain in the Royal Navy or similar relative rank, to be as follows—

| | |
|---|---|
| Class I . . . . . | £24 |
| Class II . . . . . | £20 |
| Class III. . . . . | £16 |

6. The rates for the children of Flag Officers and Officers of similar relative rank to be as follows—

| | |
|---|---|
| Class I . . . . . | £30 |
| Class II . . . . . | £25 |
| Class III. . . . . | £20 |

7. In cases of pecuniary need, Educational Allowances of £35 a year for boys, and £25 a year for girls, to be awarded, at the discretion of the Admiralty, to the children of Commissioned Officers who die during the War, or are disabled through War service, these allowances to be payable ordinarily between the ages of 13 and 18, but to be extended, if thought desirable, until the age of 21, on the recommendation of a competent education authority, where the education is being continued at Secondary Schools, Technical Schools, or the Universities.

8. In view of the revision in the rates of Compassionate Allowances and the institution of Educational Allowances, the existing provision for the grant of double Compassionate Allowances to motherless children is abolished, subject to the proviso that the guardian of any child considers the provisions of existing Regulations more beneficial to such child, and may, at the time the award is made, elect that the child should receive the benefit of existing Regulations, and that such option once exercised shall be final.

9. The following revised Regulations, provided they be more beneficial than existing Regulations, to be adopted in cases arising out of the present War for the

award of pensions and allowances to the widows and children of Commissioned Warrant Officers and Warrant Officers :—

(*a*) Killed in the performance of Naval or Military duty.

(*b*) Dying of wounds or injuries received in the performance of such duty, within seven years after the receipt of the wound or injury.

(*c*) Dying of disease medically certified to have been contracted, or to have developed, while on active service, within seven years of their removal from duty on account of such disease.

Widow's pension to be £50 a year in the case of Commissioned Warrant Officers, and £45 a year in the case of Warrant Officers.

Compassionate Allowances on a scale of £8 to £14 to be awarded to the children of Commissioned Warrant Officers and Warrant Officers, and the Admiralty to have discretion to continue the allowances beyond the age of 18 in the case of boys on production of satisfactory evidence that the continuance of the allowance is needed for the purpose of enabling the boy to complete his education.

10. The present provision, that the aggregate amount of the allowances to the family of any officer shall not exceed—

(*a*) In ordinary cases, the amount of the half pay of his rank and seniority at the time of his death, and—

(*b*) In cases where the officer's death is attributable to the service, the sum of £100 more than the amount of the half pay of his rank and seniority at the time of his death,—

to be waived, as also the provision that persons who are in receipt of £30 a year from other sources, or whose mothers have been refused pensions on account of private income, shall be considered ineligible for Compassionate Allowances in ordinary circumstances.

11. On the death of an officer who leaves no widow or legitimate child, under conditions such as entitle an officer's widow to pension at the highest or the intermediate rate, the Admiralty has the power to grant allowances as under :—

MOTHER.—The mother may be granted an annual allowance provided that—

(*a*) The mother is a widow, or her husband is totally incapacitated by age or infirmity, or he had permanently deserted her and ceased to support her ;

(*b*) She was largely dependent for support upon the deceased officer ; and

(*c*) She is in distressed circumstances, and is not in receipt of pension as an officer's widow, or of any other charitable provision of any kind from the public.

The amount of the allowance is determined in each case by the Admiralty with regard to the mother's pecuniary circumstances. It must not in any case exceed the pension which would have been awarded to the officer's widow had he left one, or the annual value of the support afforded by the officer. It will cease in the event of the recipient re-marrying or attaining to pecuniary circumstances which, in the opinion of the Admiralty, disqualify her, and will not in any case be transferable.

FATHER.—The father may, subject to the same conditions so far as they are applicable, receive an allowance similar to that granted to a mother, provided he is a widower and totally incapacitated by age or infirmity.

SISTERS.—The sister or sisters jointly may be granted an allowance provided that—

(*a*) The officer did not leave a mother ;

(*b*) The sister or sisters be an orphan or orphans unmarried ;

(*c*) They were largely dependent on the deceased officer ;

(*d*) The surviving brothers, if any, are unable through youth, or bodily or mental infirmity, to give them support;

(*e*) They are in distressed circumstances, and are not in receipt of any other charitable provision of any kind from the public.

The amount of the allowance will be determined in each case by the Admiralty with regard to the pecuniary circumstances of the sister or sisters.

Not more than £50 a year may be granted to any one sister, and the total will not in any case exceed the pension which would have been awarded to the officer's widow had he left one, or the annual value of the support afforded by the officer.

Except in special cases where the officer's sister is shown to be unfitted by age or infirmity to earn her living, an allowance will not be granted if she is over 21 years of age, nor be continued beyond that age. It will also cease in the event of the recipient marrying or attaining to pecuniary circumstances which, in the opinion of the Admiralty, disqualify her.

The mother or sisters of a deceased officer may, however, be granted, if more advantageous to them than the allowances herein specified, the benefits of the formerly existing Regulations.

## ROYAL TRANSPORT SERVICE

### Schedule

1. The following are the grades, rank and scale of pay of Naval Transport Officers—

| Grade of Transport Officer. | Equivalent Rank. | Pay Consolidated Rate. |
|---|---|---|
| | | £ |
| Principal Naval Transport Officer | If a Flag Officer, the rank he holds | 1,700 |
| | Otherwise Commodore, 2nd Class | 1,100 |
| Divisional Naval Transport Officer | Captain. . . . . | 800 |
| Transport Officer, 1st grade | Commander, unless already of higher rank when he retains that rank | |
| ,, ,, 2nd grade | Lieutenant-Commander | 450 |
| ,, ,, 3rd grade | Lieutenant . . . | 400 |
| ,, ,, 4th grade | Sub-Lieutenant or Warrant Officer | 250 |

Deduction to be made at the following rates from the consolidated rates—

| (A) | (B) |
|---|---|
| If Provided with hotel accommodation— | If provided with servants a the public expense— |
| £100 a year. | £100 a year from the £1,700 a year. |
| £100 a year. | £100 a year from the £1,100 a year. |
| £100 a year. | £80 a year from the £800 a year. |
| £80 a year. | £20 a year from the £550 a year. |
| £80 a year. | £20 a year from the £450 a year. |
| £80 a year. | £20 a year from the £400 a year. |
| £70 a year. | £20 a year from the £250 a year. |

If provided with quarters or victualled, a deduction to be made equivalent to the regulated allowances for lodging and provisions.

2. The consolidated rates to cover every allowance except—

(*a*) Outfit allowance for Retired, Emergency, and Temporary Officers.

(*b*) Bonus of 25 per cent. for Retired Officers which is to be assessed on the rate of full pay they would receive under ordinary conditions.

(*c*) The bonus of 25 per cent. to Emergency Officers which is to be assessed on the same basis, but payment is to be in accordance with the special rules for Emergency Officers.

3. The consolidated rates to be subject to the usual deduction for commuted retired pay and for gratuity on discharge from Active List.

4. The above rates of pay not to apply to Engineer Officers, Accountant Officers, Chief Gunners, Chief Boatswains, Officers of the Carpenter Branch, Chief Officers of Coastguard, Lieutenants and Quartermasters Royal Marines, and all these officers to retain their present rates of pay and allowances.

5. Officers granted a higher relative rank under the above table to enjoy the status and wear the uniform of that higher rank, but not to be entitled to use the higher Naval title.

6. Officers now serving to retain their present rates of pay until the termination of their present appointments in cases where it is to their advantage to do so.

Commissioned Warrant Officers and Warrant Officers on the Permanent, Supplementary, or Temporary Lists of the Navy, Coastguard, Marines, and Reserves, who, during the present War, have lost, or may lose, an eye or a limb, or the use of an eye or a limb, or have received, or may receive, an injury equivalent, or nearly equivalent thereto, to be eligible, at the discretion of the Admiralty, for a minimum award for each limb or eye, or each injury equivalent or nearly equivalent thereto, as follows :—

**1. In Action.**

Commissioned Warrant Officers.—(*a*) A gratuity of £250 for the first year, and—

(*b*) A pension of £100 a year, commencing twelve months after the date of the loss or injury.

(*c*) No officer who loses the sight of both eyes as the result of injuries received in action to be awarded less than £225 a year in all.

WARRANT OFFICERS.—(*a*) A gratuity of £200 for the first year, and—

(*b*) A pension of £75 a year commencing twelve months after the date of the loss or injury.

(*c*) No officer who loses the sight of both eyes as the result of injuries received in action to be awarded less than £175 a year in all.

**II. Otherwise than in Action.** Commissioned Warrant Officers and Warrant Officers to receive pensions of £75 and £50 a year respectively, commencing from the date of the loss or injury.

The above rates of pensions to apply to Non-combatant Officers, according to relative rank, to Marine Warrant Officers, Class I, and to Coastguard Officers; Divisional Chief Officers of Coastguard, and Chief Officers, Permanent Cruiser Service, ranking for this purpose as Commissioned Warrant Officers, and the Chief Officers of Stations and late in charge of Batteries, together with Senior Mates and Second Mates of the Permanent Cruiser Service, ranking as Warrant Officers.

The awards to be governed by similar rules to those laid down for Commissioned and Subordinate Officers in the Order in Council of February 29, 1916.

Men granted Acting Warrant rank and Officers with Acting rank on the Permanent, Temporary, or Reserve Lists to be dealt with as if they were confirmed in the Acting rank.

QUARTERMASTERS R.M. DISABILITY PENSIONS, ETC. —If on the Permanent List, as laid down in the Army Regulations (vide Section A (3) of Order in Council, February 29, 1916).

If on the Reserve or Temporary List, on the scale laid down in Section B of Order in Council, February 29, 1916.

WOUNDS, ETC. PENSIONS, ETC.—Whether on the

Permanent, Reserve, or Temporary List, on the scale laid down in Order in Council, February 29, 1916.

## NAVAL PENSIONS

By an Order in Council dated February 16, 1917, it was provided that men who have completed the necessary period of service for long-service pension shall receive the addition granted in this respect in the award of long-service pensions for 'very good' character in excess of the disability pension on either the old or new scales.

Men who have been granted permanent pensions in respect of the loss of a limb or eye, or the loss of the use of a limb, who re-enter for further service in His Majesty's Naval or Military Forces will receive payment of such pension during the period of such further service, but shall not receive payment of any additions thereto in respect of Good Conduct Badges, Medal, 'V.G.' character, or service as Chief Petty Officer, Petty Officer, or Leading Rates of the Royal Navy, or Non-commissioned Officer of the Royal Marines, or any pension and allowance in respect of children.

By Orders in Council dated March 8, 1895, and March 5, 1910, provision was made that officers called into active service from the Reserve or Retired lists in time of war or emergency, should receive the pay and emoluments of their rank on active list together with a bonus of 25 per cent. for every pound of full pay earned by them exclusive of allowances. It was found, however, that an officer's retired pay in some cases exceeded the full pay of such corresponding rank.

By an Order in Council dated February 3, 1915, it was provided that such officers should continue to receive retired pay in cases where such retired pay exceeded the full pay of their corresponding ranks on the active list together with the bonus of 25 per cent. for every pound of retired pay received by them during the period of re-employment exclusive of allowances.

By an Order in Council dated January 7, 1915, it was provided that the active service of all ratings in the

Royal Naval Air Service, whether they are lent from the Active List of the Royal Navy or entered direct under special engagement for a period of service in the Royal Naval Air Service to be followed by service in the Royal Fleet Reserve (Air Service Section), to count as continuous service for all purposes.

Men lent from the Active List of the Royal Navy to the Royal Naval Air Service to count their active service in the Royal Naval Air Service for pension and gratuity either in their Naval Rating or their Air Service grade, whichever is the more advantageous to them.

The time served in the Royal Naval Air Service by men lent from the Active List to count, on reverting to the general service, towards increase of pay in the general service rating held during the period.

Men transferred from the Military Wing, Royal Flying Corps, to the Royal Naval Air Service in no case to receive pensions less than those which equivalent ranks in the Military Wing, Royal Flying Corps, are allowed.

By an Order in Council dated December 17, 1914, provision was made for the officers and men of the Royal Naval Division. The pay is set forth in the schedule.

Provisions are made in the schedule that all officers, including Army officers, are to be subject to deduction of 2*s*. a day in pay when messed at the public expense.

Seamen and Marines receive pay and allowances at Naval and Marine rates respectively.

N.C.O.'s and men of the Engineer Unit receive Royal Engineers' rates of pay.

Field allowance to Naval Officers and men and to Marine Officers other than those borne on shore strength are payable under Naval Regulations, but the minimum rate for all ranks of Officers is 5*s*. a day.

The Field Allowance of Army Officers is governed by Army Regulations, but the minimum rate is 5*s*. a day, providing that they do not receive messing allowance under paragraph 535 of the Army Allowance Regulations.

Marine Officers on 'shore' strength are paid Field

Allowance under the Allowance Regulations subject to a minimum rate of 5*s.* a day.

N.C.O.'s and Men of the Royal Marines who are on 'shore' strength, in order that they may have the benefit of separation allowances on the Army scale, are not eligible to receive Field Allowance.

### *Royal Naval Reserve*

By an Order in Council dated November 28, 1914, the regulations governing the award of pensions and compassionate allowances to the widows and children of Officers of the Navy, Naval Reserve and Naval Volunteer Reserve, were amended. The following provisions were made—

The period within which death must have resulted (in cases where it is attributable to the service) in order to render the widow and children eligible for the higher rates of pension and compassionate allowances, to be extended from 2 years to 7 years.

The pensions and compassionate allowances at present approved for Assistant Paymasters of 6 years' seniority to be granted in future to widows and children of Assistant Paymasters of 4 years' seniority.

Compassionate allowances on the following scale to be provided for the children of Sub-Lieutenants, Assistant Paymasters of under 4 years' seniority, and Engineer Sub-Lieutenants, viz—

(*a*) If the Officer be killed in action or die from wounds received in action, scale £12–£14.

(*b*) If the Officer be drowned or suffer other violent death in an immediate act of duty, scale £9–£12.

Widows, children, and other relatives of Officers who may have been granted temporary commissions, or have held acting appointments, to be eligible for pensions and allowances on the same scales as are prescribed for Officers of similar ranks holding permanent commissions in the Royal Navy.

## NAVAL DESERTION

Under Section 19 of the Naval Discipline Act, 1886, the deserter, unless in the case of desertion to the enemy, may be punished with penal servitude or such other punishment as hereinafter mentioned, and in every such case he shall forfeit pay, head money, bounty, salvage, prize money and allowances that have been earned by him and all annuities, pensions, gratuities, medals and decorations that may have been granted to him, and also all clothes and effects which he may have left on board the ship or at the place from which he has deserted, unless the Tribunal by which he is tried or the Admiralty shall otherwise direct.

Under Section 53, it is provided that if a man is dismissed from the Navy with disgrace, such dismissal shall involve the loss of such benefits and the man shall be rendered incapable to serve His Majesty again ' in any Military, Naval or Civil service, and may also in cases be accompanied by a sentence of imprisonment.'

## NAVAL PENSIONS. TAXATION

The Chancellor of the Exchequer (Mr. Bonar Law) stated in the House of Commons on February 14, 1917, that ' Naval Pensions are chargeable to Income Tax at the ordinary earned income rates appropriate to the total incomes of the pensioners.'

## RETIRING PENSIONS

### Retiring Pensions to Commissioned Warrant Officers, Warrant Officers, and Chief and Other Officers of Coast Guard

*Extract from the Regulations*

' They shall be pensioned at 55 years of age, and at any lesser age if found unfit for or unworthy of further employment, and they may, by the permission of the Admiralty, be pensioned at their own request at 40 years of age.

'The following shall be the scale of pensions :—

| Rank. | For each Year's Service above the Rank of Chief Petty Officer at the rate of | Addition for each Year's Service as Seaman, Petty Officer, or Chief Petty Officer. | Maximum Service only. | Minimum for Service only. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | £ *s.* | £ *s.* | £ | |
| Chief Gunner<br>,, Boatswain<br>,, Signal Boatswain<br>Commissioned Telegraphist<br>Chief Carpenter | 5 0 | 1 10 | 150 | With 10 years' service as Warrant Officer and commissioned Warrant Officer, £95.<br>With 5 years' ditto and under 10, £75.<br>Under 5 years', £60. |
| Gunner, Boatswain, Signal Boatswain, Warrant Telegraphist and Carpenter : | | | | |
| Under 10 years | 3 10 | 1 10 | 120 | Under 5 years' service as Warrant Officer, £40.<br>With 5 years' ditto and under 10, £50. |
| With 10 years | 4 0 | 1 10 | 120 | With 10 years' ditto and under 15, £75.<br>With 15 years' service as Warrant Officer, £95. |

'*Note.*

'Commissioned Warrant Officers (exclusive of Chief Schoolmasters) who were promoted to that rank on or before September 17, 1914, and those promoted to that rank subsequently and retired at the age of 55, will be eligible, irrespective of length of service, for a minimum pension of £95 per annum.'

## NAVAL PENSIONS. MEN

The scale of pensions and the Regulations governing their issue was authorized by an Order in Council dated March 30, 1917.

This order sanctions the grant of pensions, allowances, and gratuities to the persons on the scales and subject to the conditions prescribed in the Regulations, with effect from the first weekly pay-day after April 1, 1917.

It is provided that if more favourable to the seaman or marine, the pension, allowances, or gratuity payable under existing Regulations shall be granted, and no grant to a sailor or marine or to the family or dependants of a sailor or marine shall be reassessed to their disadvantage.

Provision is also made that a seaman or marine discharged as medically unfit for further service, such unfitness being certified as either attributable to or aggravated by Naval or Military service in consequence of the present War, and not being due to the serious negligence or misconduct of the discharged man, may be granted a minimum pension at the weekly rates therein shown as corresponding to the degree of his disablement. In the case of injuries not shown therein, and in the case of disease, the pension may be assessed at the degree in the schedule which is held most closely to represent the disablement corresponding to the injury or disease.

Men in possession of good conduct badges or medal, and men who have completed time for long-service pension with very good characters throughout their service are eligible to receive the same addition to their pension in respect thereof as under existing Regulations. Chief Petty Officers, Petty Officers and Leading Rates of the Royal Navy receive the same additions in respect of petty time as under existing Regulations. Non-Commissioned Officers of the Royal Marines receive the additions laid down in the existing Regulations for long-service pensions in respect of service above the rank of private.

A further addition will be made to the pension in respect of service at the following rates—

| | Weekly s. | d. |
|---|---|---|
| Men of 6 years' service and under 12 years' | 1 | 0 |
| Men of 12 years' service and under 18 years' | 2 | 0 |
| Men of 18 years' service and under 21 years' | 3 | 0 |
| Men of 21 years' service and under 25 years' | 4 | 0 |
| Men of 25 years' service and over | 5 | 0 |

With the addition of the foregoing, the conditions governing the issue of pensions to Seamen, Marines, their widows, children, or other dependants are identical with those upon which pensions are issued in the case of soldiers.

*Fleet Auxiliaries*

By an Order in Council dated August 10, 1914, provision was made for the issue of pensions, grants, and other allowances to persons, not being officers or seamen of the Royal Navy or marine forces, in respect of injuries suffered by them whilst employed afloat by or under the Admiralty or Army Council in connection with warlike operations, and in the case of their death, to their widows and other dependants.

The scheme embraces all officers and men of Fleet Auxiliaries (other than ranks and ratings in receipt of Naval pay) and all civilians in Admiralty services and officers and men of the War Department Examination Service who may be injured on duty during employment afloat, and the dependent relatives of such persons who may be killed on duty during employment afloat, or die within two years thereof as the result of injuries received on such duty. The scheme does not apply to officers and men of the Royal Naval Reserve, Royal Fleet Reserve, Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve, or to Naval pensioners serving in the Fleet and in receipt of Naval rates during such service.

'**Injury Pensions.** If the injury result in total destruction of earning capacity, a pension equal to two-thirds pay during the period of such total incapacity.

'If the injury result in partial impairment of earning

capacity, a pension during the period of such partial impairment of earning capacity equal to—

'One-sixth pay in respect of slight impairment of earning capacity.

'One-third pay in respect of impairment of earning capacity.

'Half pay in respect of material impairment of earning capacity.

'Such pensions to be awarded to all officers and men of Fleet Auxiliaries (other than ranks and ratings in receipt of Naval pay) and to civilians in Admiralty service and to officers and men of the War Department Examination Service, provided that the injury be sustained on duty afloat, and all awards to be subject to periodical review and dependent upon the degree of the impairment of earning capacity for the time being as described above.'

**Widows' Pensions and Allowances to Dependent Relatives.** 'If any of the above-mentioned persons be killed, or die within two years, as the result of injuries sustained on duty afloat, there shall be awarded—

'(*a*) To the widow a pension equal to one-third pay; and

'(*b*) In respect of each child up to four in number until the age of 16, an allowance equal to one-twenty-fourth of pay.

So that the maximum possible payment per annum, inclusive of the widow's pension, shall not in any case exceed one-half pay.

'If there be no widow, pensions may be granted to other dependent relatives, at the discretion of the Admiralty or Army Council, not exceeding in the aggregate the sum which might have been awarded in each case as a widow's pension.

'In the event of a widow's re-marriage her pension shall cease, and the Admiralty or Army Council shall have the option of awarding, as may be more beneficial to her, either—

'(*a*) A lump sum equal to the difference by which three years' pay (provided it be not more than £300 or less than

£150) exceeds the total sum already paid in compensation; or

'(*b*) Continued payment of the children's pensions until age of 16.

'In the event of the adoption of alternative (*a*) the Admiralty or Army Council shall have power to take any precautions against the squandering of the lump sum, e.g. by entrusting it to trustees to be administered in specified payments or to be applied wholly or partly for the children's education or otherwise.'

## COMPENSATION SCHEME FOR OFFICERS AND SEAMEN OF THE MERCHANT SERVICE

The Government have decided to pay compensation on the scale applicable to officers and men employed in fleet auxiliaries in the case of any British master, officer or seaman on a British merchant ship who is killed or injured by mines, torpedoes, or other hostile operations. This scheme, which is in effect a free life insurance, dates back to the beginning of the War.

If the crew are employed and paid by the owners of the vessel, the compensation, including any sums that may be due under the Workmen's Compensation Act, will be administered by the War Risks Association in which the ship was entered at the time of the accident, under an agreement with the Board of Trade.

In the case of vessels not entered in any War Risks Association at the time of the loss, the Liverpool and London War Risks Insurance Association have undertaken to administer the compensation. The owner is not relieved of any liability to which he may be subject under the Workmen's Compensation Act, and any amounts due under that Act will have to be paid in the usual way. The Association, on behalf of the Board of Trade, will see that the total compensation paid, including any amounts so paid under the Workmen's Compensation Act, are in accordance with the scheme.

The arrangements indicated will not apply to ships the

crews of which are employed and paid by the Admiralty or War Office.

The scheme will be administered by the Committees of the War Risks Associations, upon which the Admiralty and the Board of Trade are represented, so as to provide, from the two sources, pensions and allowances equal to those payable under the Admiralty scheme. Speaking generally the pensions and allowances payable under the Admiralty scheme are as under—

1. In cases of injury or disablement resulting in total incapacity, two-thirds pay; and proportionate allowances will be made if the injury or disablement has only impaired, but not destroyed, the earning capacity of the injured men.

2. In cases of death the widow's pension is one-third of the pay with a minimum of £26 per annum, and such pension is payable until death or re-marriage.

A child's allowance is one-twenty-fourth of pay, with a minimum of £6 10*s.* per annum, and such allowance is payable until the child attains the age of 16. This allowance will not normally be paid in respect of more than four children in any one family, but where the only dependants of a deceased officer or seaman are children, special provision is made.

3. The pay upon which the pensions and allowances are to be calculated will be the rates ruling six months before the outbreak of the War, that is, the rates ruling in February, 1914. An allowance on account of victualling will be added in cases in which a free mess was allowed in addition to pay.

The disablement allowances payable under the scheme are substantially above those payable under the Workmen's Compensation Act. Therefore the payment of the allowances under the scheme will be in satisfaction of all claims under the Act.

In ascertaining the pension payable to a widow, or the allowances to be made in respect of the children, the amount of compensation payable under the Act will have to be taken into account.

In the case of widows, this will be done by calculating,

in accordance with the Post Office tables, the amount of the annuity which could be purchased for the lump sum which is payable by way of compensation under the Act. If the amount of the annuity so purchasable be less than the pension payable under the Admiralty scheme, then difference will be paid to the claimant as an annuity, and the lump sum will be paid into Court.

The compensation payable under the Act is, following the present practice, paid into the County Court and is applied, under the direction of the Judge, for the benefit of the widow.

Upon this basis the amount of pension the widow will receive in addition to the compensation payable under the Act will, of necessity, depend on the age of the widow. The older the widow is the larger will be the annuity that could be purchased with the compensation money, and therefore the smaller will be the pension payable under the scheme.

The children's allowances up to the age of 16 are in addition to these pensions. On the earnings given the allowance in respect of each child of the officer would be one-twenty-fourth of the pay, that is £7 5*s*. a year, whilst the allowance in respect of each child of the seaman and fireman would be the minimum of £6 10*s*. a year.

Officers and engineers earning upwards of £250 per annum are not covered by the Workmen's Compensation Act, and therefore the widow's pension will amount to one-third, and the child's allowance to one-twenty-fourth of their pay. For example, if the officer's pay is £18 a month there will be added a victualling allowance of 3*s*. a day, bringing the total pay up to £270 a year.

The widow's pension will be £90 a year, and the allowance to each child until the age of 16 will be £11 5*s*. a year.

## MERCANTILE MARINE: DEPENDANTS' COMPENSATION

The minimum pensions to widows and allowances to children issuable have been increased as follows—

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Widow's Pension . . | £35 | 16*s.* | 11*d.* | a year. |
| Allowances for children : | | | | |
| 1st child . . . | £13 | 0*s.* | 8*d.* | ,, |
| 2nd ,, . . . | £10 | 17*s.* | 3*d.* | ,, |
| 3rd ,, . . . | £8 | 13*s.* | 9*d.* | ,, |
| 4th and each succeeding child | £6 | 10*s.* | 5*d.* | ,, |

## CREWS OF WAR DEPARTMENT VESSELS

The appointments of masters, 1st and 2nd class, and engineers, 1st class, are pensionable under the same civil service conditions as apply to men promoted to the establishment of principal foreman and storeholders in the A.O.D.

The age limit of 50 is waived in the case of masters and 1st class engineers now serving as such who were appointed to this rank on the new establishment. This also applies to the Inspector and Assistant Inspectors of Shipping.

**Pensions.** Temporary appointments to higher ranks are dealt with for pension purposes according to the permanent rank. The approved appointments of masters, 1st and 2nd class, and engineers, 1st class, will be pensionable under the Superannuation Acts, 1834 to 1914. The chief provisions are as follows—

(*a*) The grant of a pension to a man retiring through infirmity permanently incapacitating him from the duties of his situation, through abolition of employment, or through reorganization resulting in economy, whose pensionable service is not less than ten years at the time of retirement, consisting of one-eightieth of his wages (computed as laid down in those Acts) for each year of pensionable service, and, in addition, a lump sum payment, the maximum of which is one-and-a-half times the annual wages and emoluments of his post.

(*b*) In case of death after five years of pensionable service have accrued, a gratuity to his legal personal representative not exceeding the annual wages and pensionable emoluments of his post.

(*c*) Compulsory retirement not later than 65 years of age.

The following conditions attach to the grant of pension rights—

1. Future admission, i.e., other than those admitted on the introduction of this scheme, to the pensionable establishment will, subject to the usual conditions, be limited to those whose age does not exceed 50 on the date of admission to the pensionable establishment.

2. One-half of the service given prior to admission to the pensionable establishment since the age of 16 years to count as pensionable service under the usual conditions.

3. Connection with any trade society to cease.

**Sickness and Injuries.** The crews of W.D. vessels, other than masters and 1st engineers, will continue to be dealt with for the purpose of injury and sickness under normal provisions of the Regulations for civilian subordinates. Masters and 1st engineers will be entitled to sickness and injury pay at full pay rate for six weeks, followed by (*a*) if sick, 10*s.* a week for the following twenty weeks, and 5*s.* a week for the following twenty-six weeks ; (*b*) if injured, at the rates under the Workmen's Compensation Act or the W.D. scheme (if accepted).

All ranks accepting the new terms will cease to have reserved privileges in these respects, and also in respect of medical attendance on families which they may at present hold under the regulations.

Masters and 1st class engineers now serving, who, on accepting the new conditions, are transferred to the new establishment as masters and 1st engineers, will be admitted to pension rights, irrespective of age, subject to a rigorous medical examination. A master or 1st class engineer granted pension rights, whose rate of pay exceeds the maximum of the new scale, will be rated for superannuation purposes at the maximum of the new scale, any excess of his rate over the maximum of the new scale being a personal non-pensionable allowance (A.C.I. 486/17).

## ROYAL NAVAL RESERVE (TRAWLER)

The rates of pay of ratings belonging to the Trawler Section of the Royal Naval Reserve are as follows—

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Second Hands . . | 6*s.* per day . | Plus War Retainer at £1 a month. |
| Enginemen . . . | | |
| Leading Deck Hand and Leading Trimmer | 4*s.* per day . | |
| Deck Hands . . | 3*s.* 6*d.* per day | |
| Trimmers and Trimmer Cooks . . . | | |
| Boys . . . . | 1*s.* per day . | No War Retainer. |

All ratings receive a provision allowance of 1*s.* 5*d.* per day and a free kit on entry. All ratings (other than boys) receive a gratuity of thirty days' pay on discharge, if they have completed twelve months' service unbroken by desertion. The families of these men are entitled to separation allowance. In regard to the crews of hired drifters, these men were formerly employed on a civilian basis, but arrangements have recently been made to engage them under a special form of agreement by which they will be subject to Naval discipline. The standard rates of pay, which are variable to a small extent under local conditions, are as follows—

| | | Orkneys and Shetlands only. |
|---|---|---|
| Mate. . . . | 6*s.* 1*d.* per day. | 7*s.* 3*d.* per day. |
| Engineer . . . | 7*s.* 4*d.* ,, | 8*s.* 6*d.* ,, |
| Remainder of Crew . | 4*s.* 10*d.* ,, | 6*s.* 0*d.* ,, |

A daily allowance of 1*s.* 5*d.* for food is also paid, and the crews receive periodical gratuities when they are required to wear uniform. The families are not entitled to separation allowance. Issue of Navy separation allowance to a wife is conditional, primarily, upon the husband being a Naval rating, marine or reservist, borne on the books of one of His Majesty's ships, and in receipt of Naval rates of pay. It is also necessary that he should allot, voluntarily, not less than 5*s.* a week in favour of his wife.

## WAR DEPARTMENT VESSELS

The allowance of 1*s.* per day payable to masters and crews of non-seagoing vessels, when employed tempor-

arily at a port other than their own, is not issuable on those days for which out-of-port allowance and travelling or detention allowances are paid, but may be drawn concurrently with exceptional employment and hard lying money (A.C.I. 947/1917).

## NAVAL HOSPITAL STOPPAGES

If a man is abroad, no stoppages are made for hospital maintenance or treatment.

If a man is injured or wounded in the execution of his duty, he is given a ' hurt certificate ' which exempts him from stoppages.

Men and boys below the rank of Warrant Officers, when sent to hospital at home, have the following amounts stopped out of their pay after they have been there thirty days—

In the case of men, (*a*) 10*d*. a day if their pay is not less than 1*s*. 6*d*. a day ; (*b*) 8*d*. a day if it is.

In the case of boys, 4*d*. a day.

In the case of marines, 7*d*. a day, irrespective of rates of pay.

If they remain in hospital another sixty-one days—i.e., ninety-one days in all—*all* their pay is stopped, their contributions to the National Health Insurance cease, and when they return to civil life all arrears have to be paid in full, including the employer's contribution, before they are entitled to benefit.

## THE NAVAL DISCIPLINE ACT, 1866

1. A person subject to this Act is liable to contribute to the maintenance of his wife and of his children, and also to the maintenance of any bastard child of which he may be proved to be the father, to the same extent as if he were not so subject ; but execution in respect of any such liability or of any order or decree in respect of such maintenance cannot issue against his person, pay, arms, ammunition, equipments, instruments, or clothing ; nor is he liable to be punished for the offence of deserting or

neglecting to maintain his wife or family, or any member thereof, or of leaving her or them chargeable to any union, parish, or place.

2. When any order or decree is made for payment by a man who is or subsequently becomes subject to this Act either of the cost of the maintenance of his wife or child, or of any bastard child of whom he is the putative father, or of the cost of any relief given to his wife or child by way of loan, a copy of such order or decree shall be sent to the Admiralty or any officer deputed by them for the purpose, and in the case—

(*a*) of such order or decree being so sent; or

(*b*) of it appearing to the satisfaction of the Admiralty or any officer deputed by them for the purpose that a person subject to this Act has deserted or left in destitute circumstances, without reasonable cause, his wife or any of his legitimate children under 14 years of age.

the Admiralty or officer shall order to be deducted from his daily pay an amount not exceeding—

'Where the person is a petty officer or a non-commissioned officer who is not below the rank of serjeant—in respect of a wife or children, one shilling, and in respect of a bastard child, sixpence;

'In the case of any other person subject to this Act—in respect of a wife or children, sixpence, and in respect of a bastard child, fourpence:

'Provided that no such deductions from pay in liquidation of the sum adjudged to be paid by such order or decree shall be ordered unless the Admiralty, or officer deputed by them, are satisfied that the person against whom the order or decree was made has had a reasonable opportunity of appearing to defend the case before the court by which the order or decree was made, and a certificate, purporting to be a certificate of the commanding officer of the ship on which he was or is serving, or on the books of which he was or is borne, that the person has been prevented by the requirements of the service from attending at a hearing of any such case shall be evidence of the fact unless the contrary is proved.'

## NAVAL NOTES

The medal for conspicuous gallantry is the next highest award to the Victoria Cross open to men of the Royal Navy and Marines.

The award of this distinction may carry with it an annuity not exceeding £20 in the case of chief petty officers and petty officers of the Navy and serjeants of the Royal Marines. The annuity is not issuable to men of lower ratings.

Pensions are no longer obtained under Proclamation, but are paid on completion of the required period. Payment is retrospective as from the beginning of the War.

Prior to November 30, 1915, payment of remittances of Navy men could only be made upon a certificate of identification signed by a magistrate, minister of religion, or other specified authority. By an Order in Council of the above date the payment of remittances by money order through the regular Post Office channels was authorized.

The Chancellor of the Exchequer (Mr. Bonar Law) stated in the House of Commons on February 14, 1917, that 'Naval Pensions are chargeable to Income Tax at the ordinary earned income rates appropriate to the total incomes of the pensioners.

# COLONIAL PENSIONS AND ALLOWANCES

## COLONIAL HEADQUARTERS

**Australian Imperial Force.**—Administrative Headquarters, 130, Horseferry Road, Westminster, London, S.W.1.

**New Zealand Expeditionary Force.**—D.D.M.S. Headquarters, 8, Southampton Row, W.C.

**Canada.**—103 Oxford Street, London, S.W.

**New Zealand.**—8, Southampton Row, London, W.C.

**South Africa.**—65, Victoria Street, London, S.W.

## CANADIAN PENSIONS

1. The pensions authority for the Dominion of Canada is the Board of Pensions Commission.

2. The decision of this body is final and there is no appeal.

3. Every award is determined by the disability of the applicant without reference to his occupation prior to enlistment.

4. No deduction is made from the amount awarded to any pensioner owing to his having undertaken work or perfected himself in some form of industry.

5. In the case of disabilities, pensions to members of the Forces and allowances to their children are paid at the rates set forth in Schedules A and B appended. There are twenty classes of pension on account of dis-

ability, and each member of each class is awarded pension in direct proportion to his partial or total disability. Members of the forces permanently disabled to a less degree than 5 per cent. are entitled to a gratuity not exceeding $100.

To those up to and including the rank of Sub-Lieutenant (Naval) or Lieutenant (Militia) who are totally disabled and who in addition are helpless so far as attending to their physical wants is concerned, a further allowance may be made of an amount not exceeding $300 a year, but such allowance is subject to review from time to time.

6. The widow of a member of the Forces who has been killed or who has died from injuries received, or disease due to active service, may, provided she was married to the man when his disability was received, receive until she re-marries, pension as shown in Schedules C and D, with allowances for her children as set forth in the same schedules.

7. In addition to the personal pension, annual allowances for children in accordance with Schedules A and B appended hereto may be paid to disabled pensioners. If the children for whom allowances are being paid do not live with the pensioner the allowances for them may be paid to a guardian.

8. If a member of the Forces who has been killed on active service was a widower, but leaves a child or children, such child or children shall receive an allowance of $16·00 per month each.

9. The scale pension may be awarded the 'unmarried wife' of a member of the Force, and in the case of her re-marriage she may receive as a gratuity an amount equivalent to one year's pension.

10. Allowance for children cease in the case of a boy at the age of 16, and of a girl at 17 years, unless owing to physical or mental disability the child is unable to earn a livelihood, in which case the allowance may be continued until the child is 21.

11. The pension to a member of the Forces and the allowance to his children on account of disability shall take effect from the day following the date upon which

he was discharged. The pension to the widow or parent and the allowances to the children or brothers and sisters on account of the death of a member of the Forces shall take effect from the first day of the month following the month in which the member of the Forces was officially reported missing or dead, in cases in which separation allowance or assigned pay or both, were not being paid or were discontinued on the last day of the month in which he was officially reported missing or dead, and in all other cases from a day to be decided upon.

A gratuity equivalent to two months' pension or allowances is paid the first month in addition to the pension and allowances issuable to the widow and children.

12. Every invalided member of the Canadian Force receives pay and allowances until the date of his discharge; and no man is discharged until it has been certified that further treatment will be of no benefit.

If a member of the Canadian Expeditionary Force who has been discharged subsequently requires treatment for a disability which is certified to have been caused or aggravated by service, he may be re-attested as a member of the Canadian Force, and placed on pay and allowances from the date of re-attestation, his pension, if any, being cancelled from such date.

The following are the schedules referred to :—

# SCHEDULE A

## Scale of Pensions for Disabilities

### Percentage of Disability—Class and Annual Amount of Pension and Allowances

| RANK. *Naval in Italics.* | Per | Class 1. 100% | Class 2. 99%-95% | Class 3. 94%-90% | Class 4. 89%-85% | Class 5. 84%-80% | Class 6. 79%-75% | Class 7. 74%-70% | Class 8. 69%-65% | Class 9. 64%-60% | Class 10. 59%-55% |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| Rank and file—*All below P.O.* | Year | 600 00 | 570 00 | 540 00 | 510 00 | 480 00 | 450 00 | 420 00 | 390 00 | 360 00 | 330 00 |
| | Month | 50 00 | 47 50 | 45 00 | 42 50 | 40 00 | 37 50 | 35 00 | 32 50 | 30 00 | 27 50 |
| Serjeants—*C.P.O. and P.O.* | Year | 637 50 | 605 63 | 573 75 | 541 88 | 510 00 | 478 13 | 446 25 | 414 38 | 382 50 | 350 63 |
| | Month | 53 13 | 50 47 | 47 82 | 45 16 | 42 50 | 39 85 | 39 19 | 34 54 | 31 88 | 29 22 |
| Reg. Serj.-Maj.—*Midshipman* | Year | 775 00 | 736 25 | 697 50 | 658 75 | 620 00 | 581 25 | 542 50 | 503 75 | 465 00 | 426 25 |
| | Month | 64 59 | 61 36 | 58 13 | 54 90 | 51 67 | 48 44 | 45 21 | 41 98 | 38 75 | 35 53 |
| Warrant Officer—*Warrant Officer* | Year | 850 00 | 807 50 | 765 00 | 722 50 | 680 00 | 637 50 | 595 00 | 552 50 | 510 00 | 667 50 |
| | Month | 70 84 | 67 30 | 63 75 | 60 21 | 56 67 | 53 13 | 49 59 | 46 05 | 42 50 | 38 96 |
| Lieutenant—*Sub-Lieutenant* | Year | 900 00 | 855 00 | 810 00 | 765 00 | 720 00 | 675 00 | 630 00 | 585 00 | 540 00 | 495 00 |
| | Month | 75 00 | 71 25 | 67 50 | 63 75 | 60 00 | 56 25 | 52 50 | 48 75 | 45 00 | 41 25 |
| Allowance for helplessness for above ranks not exceeding | Year | 300 00 | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — |
| | Month | 25 00 | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — |
| Allowances for each child for above ranks | Year | 96 00 | 93 00 | 90 00 | 87 00 | 84 00 | 81 00 | 78 00 | 75 00 | 72 00 | 66 00 |
| | Month | 8 00 | 7 75 | 7 50 | 7 25 | 7 00 | 6 75 | 6 50 | 6 25 | 6 00 | 5 50 |
| Additional allowance for married members of Forces, above ranks | Year | 96 00 | 91 20 | 86 40 | 81 60 | 76 80 | 72 00 | 67 20 | 62 40 | 57 60 | 52 80 |
| | Month | 8 00 | 7 60 | 7 20 | 6 80 | 6 40 | 6 00 | 5 60 | 5 20 | 4 80 | 4 40 |
| Captain—*Lieutenant* | Year | 1,000 00 | 950 00 | 900 00 | 850 00 | 800 00 | 750 00 | 700 00 | 650 00 | 600 00 | 550 00 |
| | Month | 83 34 | 79 17 | 75 00 | 70 84 | 66 67 | 62 50 | 58 34 | 54 17 | 50 00 | 45 84 |
| Allowances for each child for above rank | Year | 96 00 | 93 00 | 90 00 | 87 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 66 00 |
| | Month | 8 00 | 7 75 | 7 50 | 7 25 | 7 00 | 7 00 | 7 00 | 7 00 | 7 00 | 5 50 |
| Major—*Lt.-Commander* | Year | 1,260 00 | 1,197 00 | 1,134 00 | 1,071 00 | 1,008 00 | 945 00 | 882 00 | 819 00 | 756 00 | 693 00 |
| | Month | 105 00 | 99 75 | 94 50 | 89 25 | 84 00 | 78 75 | 73 50 | 68 25 | 63 00 | 57 75 |
| Allowances for each child for above rank | Year | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 66 00 |
| | Month | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 8 00 | 5 50 |
| Lt.-Colonel—*Commander* | Year | 1,560 00 | 1,482 00 | 1,404 00 | 1,326 00 | 1,248 00 | 1,170 00 | 1,092 00 | 1,014 00 | 936 00 | 858 00 |
| | Month | 130 00 | 123 50 | 117 00 | 110 50 | 104 00 | 97 50 | 91 00 | 84 50 | 78 00 | 71 50 |
| Colonel—*Captain* | Year | 1,890 00 | 1,795 50 | 1,701 00 | 1,606 50 | 1,512 00 | 1,417 50 | 1,323 00 | 1,228 50 | 1,134 00 | 1,039 50 |
| | Month | 157 50 | 149 63 | 141 75 | 133 88 | 126 00 | 118 13 | 110 25 | 102 38 | 94 50 | 86 63 |
| Brig.-General—*Commodore* | Year | 2,700 00 | 2,565 00 | 2,430 00 | 2,295 00 | 2,160 00 | 2,025 00 | 1,890 00 | 1,755 00 | 1,620 00 | 1,485 00 |
| | Month | 225 00 | 213 75 | 202 50 | 191 25 | 180 00 | 168 75 | 157 50 | 146 25 | 135 00 | 123 75 |
| Allowances for each child for above ranks | Year | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 66 00 |
| | Month | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 10 00 | 5 50 |

Those permanently disabled, less than 5%, are entitled to a gratuity not exceeding $100.

## SCHEDULE A (*continued*)

| RANK. *Naval in Italics.* | Per | Class 11. 54%-50% | Class 12. 49%-45% | Class 13. 44%-40% | Class 14. 39%-35% | Class 15. 34%-30% | Class 16. 29%-25% | Class 17. 24%-20% | Class 18.[1] 19%-15% | Class 19. 14%-10% | Class 20. 9%-5% |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| Rank and file—*All below P.O.* | Year | 300 00 | 270 00 | 240 00 | 210 00 | 180 00 | 150 00 | 120 00 | 90 00 | 60 00 | 30 00 |
| | Month | 25 00 | 22 50 | 20 00 | 17 50 | 15 00 | 12 50 | 10 00 | 7 50 | 5 00 | 2 50 |
| Serjeants—*C.P.O. and P.O.* | Year | 318 75 | 286 88 | 255 00 | 223 13 | 191 25 | 159 38 | 127 50 | 95 63 | 63 75 | 31 88 |
| | Month | 26 57 | 23 91 | 21 25 | 18 60 | 15 94 | 13 29 | 10 63 | 7 97 | 5 32 | 2 66 |
| Reg. Serjt.-Maj.—*Midshipman* | Year | 387 50 | 348 75 | 310 00 | 271 25 | 232 50 | 193 75 | 155 00 | 116 25 | 77 50 | 38 75 |
| | Month | 32 30 | 29 07 | 25 84 | 22 61 | 19 38 | 16 15 | 12 92 | 9 69 | 6 46 | 3 23 |
| Warrant Officer—*Warrant Officer* | Year | 425 00 | 382 50 | 340 00 | 297 50 | 255 00 | 212 50 | 170 00 | 127 50 | 85 00 | 42 50 |
| | Month | 35 42 | 31 88 | 28 34 | 24 80 | 21 25 | 17 71 | 14 17 | 10 63 | 7 09 | 3 55 |
| Lieutenant—*Sub-Lieutenant* | Year | 450 00 | 405 00 | 360 00 | 315 00 | 270 00 | 225 00 | 180 00 | 135 00 | 90 00 | 45 00 |
| | Month | 37 50 | 33 75 | 30 00 | 26 25 | 22 50 | 18 75 | 15 00 | 11 25 | 7 50 | 3 75 |
| Allowance for helplessness for above ranks not exceeding | Year | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — |
| | Month | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — | — |
| Allowances for each child for above ranks | Year | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| | Month | 5 00 | 4 50 | 4 00 | 3 50 | 3 00 | 2 50 | 2 00 | 1 50 | 1 00 | 0 50 |
| Additional allowance for married members of Forces, above ranks | Year | 48 00 | 43 20 | 38 40 | 33 60 | 28 80 | 24 00 | 19 20 | 14 40 | 9 60 | 4 80 |
| | Month | 4 00 | 3 60 | 3 20 | 2 80 | 2 40 | 2 00 | 1 60 | 1 20 | 0 80 | 0 40 |
| Captain—*Lieutenant* | Year | 500 00 | 450 00 | 400 00 | 350 00 | 300 00 | 250 00 | 200 00 | 150 00 | 100 00 | 50 00 |
| | Month | 41 67 | 37 50 | 33 34 | 29 17 | 25 00 | 20 84 | 16 67 | 12 50 | 8 34 | 4 17 |
| Allowances for each child for above rank | Year | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| | Month | 5 00 | 4 50 | 4 00 | 3 50 | 3 00 | 2 50 | 2 00 | 1 50 | 1 00 | 0 50 |
| Major—*Lt.-Commander* | Year | 630 00 | 567 00 | 504 00 | 441 00 | 378 00 | 315 00 | 252 00 | 189 00 | 126 00 | 63 00 |
| | Month | 52 50 | 47 25 | 42 00 | 36 75 | 31 50 | 26 25 | 21 00 | 15 75 | 10 50 | 5 25 |
| Allowances for each child for above rank | Year | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| | Month | 5 00 | 4 50 | 4 00 | 3 50 | 3 00 | 2 50 | 2 00 | 1 50 | 1 00 | 0 50 |
| Lt.-Colonel—*Commander* | Year | 780 00 | 702 00 | 624 00 | 546 00 | 468 00 | 390 00 | 312 00 | 234 00 | 156 00 | 78 00 |
| | Month | 65 00 | 58 50 | 52 00 | 45 50 | 39 00 | 32 50 | 26 00 | 19 50 | 13 00 | 6 50 |
| Colonel—*Captain* | Year | 945 00 | 850 50 | 756 00 | 661 50 | 567 00 | 472 50 | 378 00 | 283 50 | 189 00 | 94 50 |
| | Month | 78 75 | 70 88 | 63 00 | 55 13 | 47 25 | 39 38 | 31 50 | 26 63 | 15 75 | 7 88 |
| Brig.-General—*Commodore* | Year | 1,350 00 | 1,215 00 | 1,080 00 | 945 00 | 810 00 | 675 00 | 540 00 | 405 00 | 270 00 | 135 00 |
| | Month | 112 50 | 101 25 | 90 00 | 78 75 | 67 50 | 56 25 | 45 00 | 33 75 | 22 50 | 11 25 |
| Allowances for each child for above ranks | Year | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| | Month | 5 00 | 4 50 | 4 00 | 3 50 | 3 00 | 2 50 | 2 00 | 1 50 | 1 00 | 0 50 |

[1] Those permanently disabled, less than 5%, are entitled to a gratuity not exceeding $100.

## SCHEDULE B

### Scale of Pensions for Disabilities

### Percentage of Disability—Class and Annual Amount of Pensions and Allowances

| Rank or Rating of Member of Forces. | Rate per Annum. | Class 1. Total 100% | Class 2. 99%-95% | Class 3. 94%-90% | Class 4. 89%-85% | Class 5. 84%-80% | Class 6. 79%-75% | Class 7. 74%-70% | Class 8. 69%-65% | Class 9. 64%-60% | Class 10. 59%-55% |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| Lieutenant (Naval); Captain (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 1,000 00 | 950 00 | 900 00 | 850 00 | 800 00 | 750 00 | 700 00 | 650 00 | 600 00 | 550 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 96 00 | 93 00 | 90 00 | 87 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 84 00 | 66 00 |
| Lieut-Commander (Naval); Major (Militia) . . . | Member of Forces | 1,260 00 | 1,197 00 | 1,134 00 | 1,071 00 | 1,008 00 | 945 00 | 882 00 | 819 00 | 756 00 | 693 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 96 00 | 66 00 |
| Commander and Captain under three years' seniority (Naval); Lieut.-Colonel (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 1,560 00 | 1,482 00 | 1,404 00 | 1,326 00 | 1,248 00 | 1,170 00 | 1,092 00 | 1,014 00 | 936 00 | 858 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 66 00 |
| Captain (Naval); Colonel (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 1,890 00 | 1,795 50 | 1,701 00 | 1,606 50 | 1,512 00 | 1,417 50 | 1,323 00 | 1,228 50 | 1,134 00 | 1,039 50 |
| | Each Child . . | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 66 00 |
| Commodore and higher ranks (Naval); Brigadier-General and higher ranks (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 2,700 00 | 2,565 00 | 2,430 00 | 2,295 00 | 2,160 00 | 2,025 00 | 1,890 00 | 1,755 00 | 1,620 00 | 1,485 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 120 00 | 66 00 |

## SCHEDULE B (*continued*)

| Rank or Rating of Member of Forces. | Rate per Annum. | Class 11. 54%-50% | Class 12. 49%-45% | Class 13. 44%-40% | Class 14. 39%-35% | Class 15. 34%-30% | Class 16. 29%-25% | Class 17. 24%-20% | Class 18. 19%-15% | Class 19. 14%-10% | Class 20. 9%-5% |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| Lieutenant (Naval); Captain (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 500 00 | 450 00 | 400 00 | 350 00 | 300 00 | 250 00 | 200 00 | 150 00 | 100 00 | 50 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| Lieut.-Commander (Naval); Major (Militia) . . . | Member of Forces | 630 00 | 567 00 | 504 00 | 441 00 | 378 00 | 315 00 | 252 00 | 189 00 | 126 00 | 63 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| Commander and Captain under three years' seniority (Naval); Lieut.-Colonel (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 780 00 | 702 00 | 624 00 | 546 00 | 468 00 | 390 00 | 312 00 | 234 00 | 156 00 | 78 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 6 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| Captain (Naval); Colonel (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 945 00 | 850 50 | 756 00 | 661 50 | 567 00 | 472 50 | 378 00 | 283 50 | 189 00 | 94 50 |
| | Each Child . . | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |
| Commodore and higher ranks (Naval); Brigadier-General and higher ranks (Militia) . . . . . | Member of Forces | 1,350 00 | 1,215 00 | 1,080 00 | 945 00 | 810 00 | 675 00 | 540 00 | 405 00 | 270 00 | 135 00 |
| | Each Child . . | 60 00 | 54 00 | 48 00 | 42 00 | 36 00 | 30 00 | 24 00 | 18 00 | 12 00 | 6 00 |

## SCHEDULE C

### Scale of Pensions and Allowances for Deaths

| Rank or Rating of Member of Forces. | Rate per Annum. | |
|---|---|---|
| | Widows or Dependent Parents. | Each Child or each Dependent Brother or Sister. |
| | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| All ratings below Petty Officer (Naval); Rank and file (Militia) | 480 00 | 96 00 |
| Chief Petty Officer and Petty Officer (Naval); Squad, Battery or Company Serjt.-Major and Q.M. Serjeant (Militia); Serjt., including Staff Serjt. and Colour Serjt. (Militia) | 510 00 | 96 00 |
| Naval Cadet and Midshipman (Naval); Master Gunner not W.O. (Militia); Regimental Serjt.-Major not W.O. (Militia); Regimental Q.M. Serjeant (Militia) | 620 00 | 96 00 |
| Warrant Officer and Chief Warrant Officer (Naval); Warrant Officer (Militia) | 680 00 | 96 00 |
| Sub-Lieutenant (Naval); Lieutenant (Militia) | 720 00 | 69 00 |

## SCHEDULE D

### Scale of Pensions and Allowances for Deaths

| Rank or Rating. | Widow or Dependent Parents. | Each Child or Dependent Brother or Sister. |
|---|---|---|
| | $ cts. | $ cts. |
| Lieutenant (Naval), Captain (Militia) | 800 00 | 96 00 |
| Lieut.-Commander (Naval) | 1,008 00 | 96 00 |
| Major (Militia) | 1,008 00 | 96 00 |
| Commander and Captain with under three years' seniority (Naval) | 1,248 00 | 120 00 |
| Lieut.-Colonel (Militia) | 1,248 00 | 120 00 |
| Captain (Naval) | 1,512 00 | 120 00 |
| Commodore and higher ranks (Naval) | 2,160 00 | 120 00 |
| Brigadier-General and higher ranks (Militia) | 2,160 00 | 120 00 |

## REGULATIONS GOVERNING THE ISSUE OF SEPARATION ALLOWANCE FOR THE CANADIAN EXPEDITIONARY FORCE

Separation allowance is a grant made by the Government of the Dominion of Canada to dependants of members of the Canadian Expeditionary Force.

The object of the allowance is to assist members of the Force, while serving therein, in providing and maintaining a home for their respective dependants.

'Dependants' within the meaning of these regulations includes—

(*a*) Wife.

(*b*) Guardian of motherless children.

(*c*) Widowed mother, if the officer or soldier is her sole support, and is unmarried within the meaning of these regulations.

(*d*) Mother, deserted by her husband, if the officer or soldier is her sole support, and is unmarried, within the meaning of these regulations.

(*e*) Mother, whose husband is alive but totally incapacitated from earning a living, if the officer or soldier is her sole support, and is unmarried, within the meaning of these regulations.

(*f*) Woman with whom an unmarried officer or soldier was living in domestic relations and publicly represented as his wife for a reasonable period immediately prior to enlistment.

'Officers' within the meaning of these regulations includes all officers and nursing sisters appointed to the Canadian Expeditionary Force and paid as members of such.

'Soldiers' within the meaning of these regulations includes all ranks, except officers, properly attested and serving on the strength of the Canadian Expeditionary Force and paid as members of such.

'Mother' within the meaning of these regulations includes widowed, foster-mother and step-mother.

'Widowed mother' within the meaning of these regulations includes widowed, foster-mother and step-mother.

'Children' within the meaning of these regulations includes step-children.

The following regulations for the issue of separation allowance will be effective from the first day of September, 1917. For the remaining period of the War they supersede all other regulations and enactments previously issued, and will be regarded as authoritative directions in the matter of separation allowance, subject to amendments by Order in Council.

They will have no retroactive effect, other than to confirm decisions already given and action taken in accordance with them.

### Rates of Allowances

The rates of allowances are as follows—

| | $ c. | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Rank and file . . . . | 20 00 | per | month |
| Serjeants and higher rank below that of W.O. (1st Class) . . . | 25 00 | ,, | ,, |
| Warrant Officers (1st Class) . . | 30 00 | ,, | ,, |
| Lieutenants . . . . . | 30 00 | ,, | ,, |
| Captains . . . . . | 40 00 | ,, | ,, |
| Majors . . . . . | 50 00 | ,, | ,, |
| Officers of Field Rank higher than that of Major . . . . | 60 00 | ,, | ,, |

No person shall receive more than one allowance for his or her own benefit.

Only the one allowance may be issued on account of any officer or soldier, and that will be paid to or for his dependant. In exceptional cases, however, as for instance when there is a wife in one locality and children by a former wife in another, the allowance may be divided.

Soldiers on whose account separation allowance is issuable must assign to the recipient not less than fifteen days' pay of rank (working pay and field allowance excluded). In cases where no such assignment has been made, but where it has been decided that the dependant is entitled to separation allowance, a compulsory assignment of fifteen days' pay of rank (working pay and

field allowance excluded) may be put in force against the account of the officer or soldier. Should the officer or soldier object, it will be decided whether the compulsory assignment shall be continued or not.

**Casualties to the Officer or Soldier.** If the officer or soldier is in receipt of a salary from the Dominion or Provincial Government during his service with the Canadian Expeditionary Force, no separation allowance will be paid on his account, unless the salary in question is less than the rate of separation allowance, in which case the difference will be paid.

Subject to corresponding increase of assigned pay, separation allowance will increase automatically with promotion, but promotion to acting rank will not be accepted as a reason for increase of separation allowance.

The rate of separation allowance will not be reduced when an officer or soldier voluntarily reverts to lower rank in order to proceed overseas from England to the Front, but upon a reduction or reversion for any other cause, the rate of the allowance will automatically decrease to the rate authorized for such lower rank.

In the case of officers and soldiers who die while serving or are reported 'missing,' separation allowance will continue to be paid monthly thereafter at the rates laid down in Clause (*a*) below, and assigned pay will continue or begin to be paid at the rates laid down in Clause (*b*) below, until such time as pension is ready for issue, in cases where a pension is to be awarded. In cases where no pension is to be awarded, separation allowance and assigned pay will cease as soon as the S.A. and A.P. Division has been notified of the fact that no pension is to be awarded.

(*a*) The rates at which separation allowance will be paid in the above cases are those to which the officer or soldier was entitled at the time of his death, or when he was reported 'missing.'

(*b*) Assigned pay will be paid monthly at a rate equal to fifteen days' pay of rank of the officer or soldier (working pay and field allowances excluded).

**Withdrawal, Cessation and Suspension.** The allowance

will be discontinued to a dependant who is, owing to serious misconduct, unworthy to receive it.

Except as provided below, the allowance, if otherwise issuable, will not be withheld for periods for which the officer or soldier forfeits pay.

The allowance will be suspended if the soldier on whose behalf it has been issued is sentenced by any properly constituted authority to imprisonment for a period of six months or over. The allowance will be resumed from the date on which the soldier again commences to draw pay after the completion of his sentence.

Payment of allowance will be suspended upon the officer or soldier being reported absent without leave, and the account will be closed from the date on which it was suspended upon the officer or soldier being declared a deserter by a Court of Inquiry.

If the officer or soldier rejoins from desertion, payments suspended under the provision of the foregoing paragraph may be resumed from the date on which he again comes on pay.

Dependants of officers and soldiers reported 'prisoners of War' will continue to draw allowance as if the officer or soldier were still on active service.

When an officer or soldier is discharged without pension, separation allowance and assigned pay may be continued to the dependant to the end of the month in which the officer or soldier is discharged.

**Wives and Legitimate Children.** The allowance may be issued in favour of such motherless legitimate children as, in the case of boys, are under the age of 16, and in the case of girls, under the age of 17. When the allowance is claimed by an officer or soldier for his motherless children, a guardian of the children should be named in writing by the officer or soldier for the purpose of receiving the allowance.

The allowance will not be issued for dependants who are maintained in a Dominion or Provincial Institution at the expense of the Dominion or Provincial Government.

Where a wife is separated from her husband by written separation agreement or a judicial decree of 'separation

from bed and board,' or other similar judicial decree, and is entitled under such agreement or by order of a competent court to payments from her husband, and such payments do not equal the amount so agreed upon or ordered to be paid by the court, a compulsory assignment of pay, equivalent to the difference between the separation allowance and such payments, will be made, but not exceeding fifteen days' pay of rank (working pay and field allowance excluded) of the officer or soldier.

(*a*) Where the wife is separated from her husband as above and is living apart from the children and is not charged with their care, separation allowance or assigned pay, subject to any valid claim of the wife, may be issued to the guardian of the children.

(*b*) If the wife has been separated from her husband and it does not appear that the husband is absolved from supporting her, and if the wife furnish a satisfactory explanation for not having obtained a judgment for alimony, separation allowance may be issued to the wife.

(*c*) Where the separation is not by virtue of an agreement or decree, and the wife for a reasonable time prior to the enlistment of the officer or soldier was separated from him and was not in receipt of any payments from him, no issue of separation allowance will be made.

**Other Dependants.** 'Unmarried officers and soldiers' will be held to include 'widowers' without children, and will also include married officers and soldiers, provided no separation allowance is issuable to their wives or legitimate children.

A mother whose husband is, through physical or mental disability, entirely incapacitated from earning a living, or who has deserted her and has not been supporting her for a reasonable length of time, will be treated as a widowed mother and granted the allowance, provided the officer or soldier prior to enlistment was, or subsequent to enlistment has become, her sole support, and the officer or soldier is 'unmarried.'

Any material improvement in the financial condition of a mother receiving the allowance, as a widowed mother, must be at once communicated to the officer

issuing separation allowance and assigned pay, and the withholding of such information whereby payments have been obtained shall be deemed to constitute fraudulent action.

If otherwise eligible, a widowed mother dependent on two unmarried sons, one of whom has enlisted in the Force, will be entitled to the allowance when the remaining son enlists ; and a widow with three or more unmarried sons, on whom she is dependent, will be entitled to the allowance when a third son has enlisted.

The allowance to a widowed mother will cease upon her re-marriage, or upon the marriage of her son in respect of whom the allowance has been granted.

A woman who has been living with an officer or soldier who is ' unmarried ' and publicly represented by him as his wife, and has been regularly supported by him on a bona-fide domestic basis for a reasonable time prior to enlistment, and the children of the officer's or soldier's household permanently maintained by him, will be entitled to the allowance.

The allowance may be granted for such adopted children of an officer or soldier as are, in the case of boys, under the age of 16, and in the case of girls, under the age of 17, provided such children have been regularly supported by the officer or soldier.

Separation allowance will not be issued in respect of a nursing sister who is herself in receipt of separation allowance as a dependant.

An officer or soldier intending to marry must inform his Paymaster of his intention a sufficient length of time in advance of the marriage, to allow steps to be taken to discontinue the issue of any separation allowance or assigned pay previously authorized for another dependant on his account. The issue to the wife will not commence until the issue to the other dependant has ceased, which should be at the end of the month in which the marriage has taken place.

A payment is made by the Canadian authorities to officers and other ranks who return to Canada to enable them to readjust their position in civil life. The payment is not made to men who take their discharge in this country in order to remain here.

## AUSTRALIA

The War Pensions Act, 1914–16 is 'an Act to provide for the grant of Pensions upon the death or incapacity of members of the Defence Force of the Commonwealth and members of the Imperial Reserve Forces, resident in Australia, whose death or incapacity results from their employment in connection with warlike operations.'

This measure was assented to on December 21, 1914.

The Regulations which govern the issue of pension are much the same as those in force with the New Zealand contingent.

The following provisions are, however, especially worthy of notice—

'Member of the Forces' means a member of the Commonwealth Naval or Military Forces enlisted or appointed for or employed on active service outside Australia, or employed on a ship of war.

'Incapacity' means bodily or mental infirmity which wholly or in part prevents the earning a livelihood, and which results, or has resulted, from employment in connection with the warlike operations referred to in the Act.

'Incapacity' includes incapacity of a member of the Forces arising from disease not due to the default of the member, contracted by him while employed on active service.

In the case of the death of a member of the Forces, a claim by a dependant (including widow) will not be recognized if made more than six months after the date of the public notification in the *Gazette* of the death of the member; but a parent who, though not dependent upon the earnings of the member at the time of his death, is at any time within five years after such death without adequate means of support, may make a claim within five years after such death.

If, as a result of his service, any member of the Forces has not lost his life, but has been incapacitated, his wife and each of his children who, but for his incapacity, would have been dependent upon his earnings, are entitled to pensions. The Act defines 'child' as a

dependant who is under the age of 16 years and who is a son, a daughter, a step-son, a step-daughter, or an adopted child of a member of the Forces.

**Partial Incapacity.** Partially incapacitated members are entitled to rates which will depend upon the nature and probable duration of the incapacity.

**Special Disabilities.** The rates of pension payable for special disabilities are shown in the schedule as under—

| Description of Disability. | Rate of Pension Payable. |
|---|---|
| Loss of leg or foot . . | The maximum rate for six months, thereafter three-fourths of the maximum rate. |
| Loss of hand or arm. . | The maximum rate for six months, thereafter three-fourths of the maximum rate. |
| Loss of one eye . . . | Half of the maximum rate. |
| Loss of both legs . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of both feet . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of both arms . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of both hands . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of arm and leg . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of hand and foot . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of both eyes . . | The maximum rate. |
| Loss of one eye, together with loss of leg, foot, hand, or arm . . . | The maximum rate. |

A leg, foot, hand, arm, or eye is deemed to be lost if it is rendered permanently and wholly useless.

In the case of a member of the Forces who has not lost his life, the list of persons to whom pensions may be granted is not so comprehensive as it is in the case of a member of the Forces who has died. It should be pointed out also that in the case of a member who has lost his life, the person for whom a pension is claimed must have been a dependant at the time of the member's death, while, in the case of a member who has not lost his life, it is necessary to prove that the person for whom pension is claimed would have been dependent upon the earnings of the member but for his incapacity. In the case of an

ex-nuptial child, it is necessary to prove that the member of the Forces at the time of his death was actually contributing to the maintenance of the child. Mere blood relationship does not show dependence.

### Scale of Pensions Payable to Widow on Death of a Member of the Forces or to a Member upon Total Incapacity

| Column One. Rate of pay of the member per day. | Column Two. Pension payable to widow on death of member. | Column Three. Pension payable to member upon total incapacity. |
|---|---|---|
| *s.* *d.* | £ *s.* *d.* | £ *s.* *d.* |
| 6 0 . . | 52 0 0 per annum | 52 0 0 per annum |
| 7 0 . . | 56 0 0 ,, | 56 0 0 ,, |
| 9 0 . . | 64 0 0 ,, | 64 0 0 ,, |
| 10 0 . . | 68 0 0 ,, | 68 0 0 ,, |
| 10 6 . . | 70 0 0 ,, | 70 0 0 ,, |
| 11 6 . . | 73 0 0 ,, | 73 0 0 ,, |
| 12 0 . . | 74 10 0 ,, | 74 10 0 ,, |
| 13 0 . . | 77 10 0 ,, | 77 10 0 ,, |
| 17 6 . . | 91 0 0 ,, | 91 0 0 ,, |
| 22 6 . . | 101 0 0 ,, | 101 0 0 ,, |
| 30 0 . . | 116 0 0 ,, | 116 0 0 ,, |
| 37 6 . . | 131 0 0 ,, | 131 0 0 ,, |
| 45 0 . . | 146 0 0 ,, | 146 0 0 ,, |
| 50 0 and upwards | 156 0 0 ,, | 156 0 0 ,, |

Where the rate of pay of a member of the Forces exceeds a rate shown in column one of this schedule, and is less than the next higher rate in that column, the rates of pensions payable for the purposes of columns two and three will be proportionately adjusted.

**Children of Deceased Members.** Children receive pensions as under—

| | *s.* *d.* | |
|---|---|---|
| For the first child . . . | 20 0 | a fortnight. |
| For the second child . . . | 15 0 | ,, |
| For each subsequent child . . | 10 0 | ,, |

**Orphans.** Where both the member of the Forces and his wife are dead, their children are entitled to pension at the undermentioned rates—

| | *s.* | *d.* | |
|---|---|---|---|
| Up to 10 years of age . . | 20 | 0 | a fortnight. |
| From 10 to 14 years of age . | 25 | 0 | ,, |
| From 14 to 16 years of age . | 30 | 0 | ,, |

**Children of Incapacitated Members.** The children of totally incapacitated members are entitled to the same rates of pension as the children of deceased members.

The children of partially incapacitated men are entitled to pensions according to the extent of incapacity of the soldier.

**Other Dependants.** The following members of a family are entitled to pensions, at such rates as are assessed, if they were wholly or partly dependent on the soldier within twelve months prior to his enlistment or appointment, viz.: father, mother, grandfather, grandmother, step-father, step-mother, foster-mother, son, daughter, grandson, granddaughter, step-son, step-daughter, brother, sister, half-brother, half-sister, adopted child, mother-in-law, ex-nuptial grandchild.

**Widowed Mothers of Unmarried Sons.** The widowed mother of an unmarried son whose death results from his employment in connection with the war is eligible for the full amount of pension according to the scale for widows of members.

**Parents without Adequate Means of Support.** The parents of any member of the Forces if at any time after the occurrence of the event resulting in his death are without adequate means of support may be granted pensions.

**Unmarried Wives.** A woman dependent on a member of the Forces, and recognized as his wife (though not legally married to him), may be granted the same amount of pension as if she were married to him.

**Children of Deceased Members.** Pensions granted to children of deceased members are payable until they reach the age of 16 years, or for two years from the date

of commencement—whichever period is the longer. If, on attaining the age of 16 years, any child of a deceased member is not able to earn a livelihood, an application may be made within the following six months for a fresh pension.

**Children of Incapacitated Members.** Pensions granted to children of incapacitated members are subject to the same conditions as pensions granted to children of deceased members. There is, however, this additional provision—if the member recovers from his incapacity before all of his children have attained the age of 16 years, his own pension may be cancelled, and, since he is no longer incapacitated, the children under 16 years of age will cease to be eligible, and their pensions also may be cancelled.

**Wives of Incapacitated Members.** The wife of an incapacitated member receives pension as long as her husband is incapacitated.

The addresses of the various Deputy-Commissioners of Pensions are as under—

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Sydney | .. | 17, Bligh Street. |
| Melbourne | .. | Brooks Building, 65, Elizabeth Street. |
| Brisbane | .. | Desmond Chambers, Adelaide Street. |
| Adelaide | .. | Brookman's Building, Grenfell Street. |
| Perth | .. | A.M.P. Buildings, St. George's Terrace. |
| Hobart | .. | National Mutual Buildings, Macquarie Street. |
| London | .. | Australia House, Strand, London, W.C.2. |

On application personally or by letter to a Deputy-Commissioner full information will be supplied on any matter relating to pensions.

**Period allowed for Applying.** Claims should be made within six months after discharge.

## NEW ZEALAND WAR PENSIONS.

The War Pensions Act, 1915, makes provision for every member of the New Zealand Naval Forces, or of any Expeditionary Force raised in New Zealand for service

beyond New Zealand in the present War, and their dependants.

The right to a pension in respect of the death of a member of the Forces extends to the wife and children of a member who dies of wounds or injuries received or disease contracted in his employment as such member, if such death occurs within seven years after the receipt of the wound or injury, or the commencement of the disease. Such pension shall be in lieu of the pension receivable by the wife and children respectively in respect of the disablement of the member.

'Child' means a dependant under the age of 16 years, being a son, daughter, step-son, step-daughter, or illegitimate child of a member of the Forces, or a child legally adopted by such member before he became a member of the Forces.

'Dependants' mean the wife of a member of the Forces at the time of his death or disablement.

'Member of the family' means wife, child, father, mother, grandfather, grandmother, step-father, step-mother, grandson, granddaughter, brother, sister, half-brother, half-sister or mother-in-law.

**Special Provisions as to Wives and Children of Native Members of the Forces.** Every application by a native woman for a pension in respect of the death or disablement of her husband must be supported by a certificate signed by a Judge, Commissioner, or Registrar of the Native Land Court that the applicant was married according to native custom, and that the marriage was subsisting at the time of the death or disablement of the husband.

**Increased Pensions to Orphan Children.** The maximum rate of pension that may be paid to a child whose parents are dead at the date of granting a pension, or whose parents or surviving parent may die after that date, is double the appropriate rate specified with respect to such child.

**Provisions for Pensions to Parents of Deceased Member whose means may in future become inadequate.** A pension may be granted at any time to any person, not

being a dependant within the meaning of the Act, and being the father or mother of a member of the Forces whose death has resulted from his employment as such member at any time subsequent to his departure from New Zealand, if—

(*a*) In the case of the mother, the applicant is not less than 50 years of age ;

(*b*) In the case of the father, the applicant is not less than 55 years of age ; and—

(*c*) In either case, the applicant has not adequate means of support.

Under the terms of the War Pension Amendment Act, 1916, pensions under the principal Act may be granted and paid to a member of the Forces, or to the father, mother, wife, or children of any such member, *but not to any other dependant*, notwithstanding that the pensioner may not be, or may cease to be, resident in New Zealand.

Notwithstanding anything to the contrary in the principal Act, the Board may at any time grant a pension, of such an amount as it thinks fit, to the father or mother of a member of the Forces if the Board is satisfied that the applicant for a pension under this section has not adequate means of support.

Where an application for a pension in respect of the death or disablement of a member of the Forces is made by the widowed mother of such member, and such member was her sole support, the pension granted to the applicant shall not in any case be less than would have been granted if the applicant was the wife of the member in respect of whose death or disablement the application is made.

In determining the rate of pension payable to a member of the Forces, or to the wife or to any child of a member of the Forces, the Board shall not take into consideration the property or income from any source of the applicant.

Notwithstanding anything to the contrary in the principal Act, the Board may grant a pension under that Act, in respect of the death or disablement of a member of the Forces, to any person not being a dependant within

the meaning of that Act, if such person satisfies the Board that he has suffered material loss of income or property by reason of the death or disablement of the member of the Forces, and that he has not adequate means of support.

In addition to the amount of any pension payable to a member an allowance may be issued, not exceeding 10*s.* per week, if and so long as the services of an attendant are indispensable.

The claims of the wife and children to a pension have precedence over the claim of any other dependant; and where a wife or children are entitled to a pension the amount paid to any other dependant may not exceed three-fourths of the pension prescribed for a wife; and where no wife or children are so entitled, the amount paid to any other dependant must not exceed the amount of the pension prescribed for a wife.

The New Zealand Pensions Authority is a Board consisting of three persons, appointed by the Minister (of whom one shall be a registered medical practitioner), who shall hold office for a term of three years, but may from time to time be reappointed.

One member shall be appointed by the Minister to be the Chairman of the Board.

The Board shall—

(*a*) Determine whether the death or disablement of a member of the Forces in fact resulted from his employment as such member, and, in the case of disablement, the nature and extent thereof;

(*b*) Determine the extent to which persons alleged to be dependent upon a member of the Forces were in fact so dependent;

(*c*) Determine the rates of pensions to be paid to members of the Forces and their dependants; and

(*d*) Have such other duties as may be prescribed by regulations, provided that any determination of the Board shall be subject to the approval of the Minister.

Every determination of the Board shall be expressed by resolution passed at a meeting at which all the members of the Board are present. The determination of two

members of the Board shall be deemed to be the determination of the Board.

**The New Zealand Discharged Soldiers' Settlement Act, 1916,** extends the provisions of the Discharged Soldiers' Settlement Act, 1915, to persons who, being domiciled in New Zealand, have served during the present War with some portion of His Majesty's Naval or Military Forces other than the New Zealand Expeditionary Forces.

The Government is empowered to render financial assistance to discharged soldiers who are the lessees or licensees under ordinary tenures of Crown or settlement land, or of other land administered by a Crown Land Board.

Special provision is made for the acquisition of land that may be acquired for the purposes of the principal Act, and provision is made that any such land may be taken compulsorily under the Public Works Act, 1908, and power is given to acquire land under this section that could not be acquired under the Land for Settlements Act.

**New Zealand Pension Claims.** On January 20, 1917, the Statutory Committee issued a circular (No. 22), at the instance of the High Commissioner for New Zealand, inviting Local War Pensions Committees to co-operate, where necessary, in the investigation of claims arising under the New Zealand War Pensions Act with respect to dependants resident in the United Kingdom of men of the New Zealand contingent.

**New Zealand Separation Allowances.** With the exception of 1*s.* per day to the wives of married soldiers, and 9*d.* per day for children of members of the Force, there are no other separation allowances granted by the Government. In the case of a married private or trooper in the New Zealand Forces it is necessary for them to allot a portion of their pay per diem to their wives. Usually they allot 2*s.* or 3*s.* per day.

## SOUTH AFRICAN OVERSEAS CONTINGENT

No gratuity is paid on death, discharge, or termination of engagement of Officers corresponding to 497 of the

Pay Warrant or A.O. 406/1915. Officers who continue on British rates will draw the gratuity on the same conditions as British officers; but those who receive Union rates of pay are entitled to no gratuity in respect of that period of their service for which they received those rates, but they are entitled to gratuity for that period of service in which they have drawn British rates.

In the case of W.O.'s and N.C.O.'s and men, a gratuity forms part of the Union conditions of pay and follows the lines of 1117 P.W., in conjunction with A.O. 427/1914, but the rate is double the ordinary British rate.

The gratuity is calculated at British rates for each twelve months served on British rates of pay, but for the twelve months during which any man changes from British to Union rates, the gratuity will be assessed at the rate of £1 per twelve months, and the remaining part of the twelve months at the rate of £2 per twelve months. If the man, before becoming eligible for Union rates, ceases to serve, any gratuity under 1117 (2) P.W. will be assessed at Union rate if the man was serving on Union rates on the date on which he ceased to serve.

## NEWFOUNDLAND

The only allowances which a Newfoundland officer receives from his own Government are the field allowance and mess allowance. In addition to these he is entitled to receive from the Imperial Government accommodation, rations; and in the case of a mounted officer, horse, forage, etc. When it is impossible to provide these or any other normal issues in kind, he is entitled to receive a money allowance under British Regulations.

A soldier of the Newfoundland contingent is entitled to the same allowances, and under the same conditions, in lieu of accommodation and rations, as a British soldier, and also to travelling allowance.

The pay of the Newfoundland contingent will throughout its service be made by the Newfoundlaud Govern-

ment, and will be administered by the Paymaster under his Government Regulations.

The scale of separation allowances and the Regulations governing their issue are exactly the same as those of the Canadian Government.

# NURSES AND WOMEN'S WORK: PENSIONS AND ALLOWANCES

## NURSES' PENSIONS

A member of the Nursing Service, or the Nursing Service Reserve, who retires on account of medical unfitness certified as due to or aggravated by Naval or Military service in consequence of the present War, may be granted the pension shown in the Third Schedule of the Pay Warrant 1917, which corresponds to the degree of her disablement as certified.

A nurse who is eligible for, or in receipt of a pension under previous specified warrants, may be granted (*a*) that pension together with that set forth in the last column of the schedule, or (*b*) the pension provided by that schedule for her rank and degree of disablement, whichever be more favourable.

If a nurse's disablement is not permanent, the grant of a pension is temporary unless the permanency of the disablement is established.

When made permanent it is not altered on account of any change in her earning capacity, neither is it subject to review except when she claims that there has been a substantial increase in the extent of disablement due to the original cause.

Half the pension awarded may be subject to the condition that the recipient shall undergo medical treatment if it is certified that such treatment is necessary.

A nurse in receipt of a pension may be granted—

(1) A pension at the rate for the highest degree of disablement for any period during which she is certified to require special medical treatment, and a deduction may

be made from the pension on account of the cost of maintenance in any institution in which treatment may be given.

(2) Actual necessary medical and other expenses incidental to treatment and subject to such conditions as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

(3) If disabled in the highest degree, an allowance not exceeding £52 a year in any case where the constant attendance of a second person is necessary.

## THE THIRD SCHEDULE

### Pensions to Disabled Nurses

| Degree of Disablement. | Percentage degree of Disablement. | Disablement Pension. If not entitled to Service Pension. | | | Addition to Service Pension if entitled to such. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Principal Matron or Matron-in-Chief. | Matron. | Staff Nurse or Sister. | |
| (1) | (2) | (3) | (4) | (5) | (6) |
| | per cent. | £ s. | £ s. | £ | £ s. |
| 1 | 100 | 175 0 | 125 0 | 100 | 75 0 |
| 2 | 80 | 140 0 | 100 0 | 80 | 60 0 |
| 3 | 70 | 122 10 | 87 10 | 70 | 52 10 |
| 4 | 60 | 105 0 | 75 0 | 60 | 45 0 |
| 5 | 50 | 87 10 | 62 10 | 50 | 37 10 |
| 6 | 40 | 70 0 | 50 0 | 40 | 30 0 |
| 7 | 30 | 52 10 | 37 10 | 30 | 22 10 |
| 8 | 20 | 35 0 | 25 0 | 20 | 15 0 |

A pension at the highest degree of disablement may be awarded for any period during which a nurse entitled to pension under these regulations is prevented from earning her living by undergoing training in a technical institution or otherwise, subject to the approval of the Minister of Pensions, and an allowance to cover fees in respect of training as the Minister may determine.

If the degree of disablement is assessed at less than 20 per cent, or if it is considered to be more in the interests of the nurse, a gratuity or temporary allowance may be granted in place of any pension. The grant will not

exceed £300, and will depend on the nature of the disablement and the other circumstances.

A nurse who retires on account of medical unfitness certified to be neither attributable to nor aggravated by Naval or Military service may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance. This award may amount to a sum not exceeding £200 and will depend on the degree of incapacity and other circumstances of the case.

## QUEEN ALEXANDRA'S IMPERIAL MILITARY NURSING SERVICE

Pay may be granted during leave of absence on account of sickness or injury certified to be due to service, as follows—

1. Full pay for a period of twelve months and half pay for a further period of six months. In exceptional cases the issue of half pay may be extended for a further six months.

2. If the injury or sickness is not caused by service, full pay for six months, but after twenty years' service, two-thirds pay; if less than twenty years' service, half pay for a further period not exceeding six months.

3. Pay may be awarded for a period of sickness not exceeding thirty days in any one year.

4. A member of the Q.A.I.N.S. who was previously employed in that service, or with the Army Nursing Service, or who, while belonging to the Army Nursing Service Reserve was called up for duty, may reckon the period of such employment towards retired pay.

One year's service in a tropical climate counts as two in the case of a nurse placed on retired pay in respect of disability due to such service.

5. Retired pay is calculated at the rate of pay including charge pay at the time of retirement, and is, after ten years' service, 30 per cent. of such pay with an additional 2 per cent. for each year of service in excess of 10 up to a maximum of 70 per cent.

6. Retired pay not exceeding £50 a year may be granted

in special cases where the member's qualification is for a less award.

If disabled in the service after five but under ten years' service, the amount of retired pay is determined by the Army Council; but if the period of service is less than five years a gratuity will be awarded.

7. If a member is retired on account of unfitness, she may be awarded a gratuity of one month's pay for each year of service if not eligible for retired pay as above.

8. A member retiring from the service without permission forfeits all claim to retired pay or gratuity.

9. A member may retire at the age of fifty, or after twenty years' service at the age of fifty-five. She may retire on retired pay after ten years' service if permanently unfit for duty through disease or injury.

## ALLOWANCES: NURSING SERVICE

**Allowances.** With reference to A.O. 4/1917, 3*s.* 6*d.* of the new War rate, that is 19*s.* at home and 25*s.* abroad, board and washing allowance, for nurses, etc., is to be regarded as an allowance for the washing of personal clothing, and will be paid to each nurse, the balance of the allowance being paid to the matron for housekeeping expenses, etc. When free messing or hospital diets are provided, the board and washing allowance is 4*s.*, instead of 3*s.* 6*d.* When free messing is provided, and washing of both personal clothing and household linen is done at the public expense, no board and washing allowance is issuable.

**Q.A.I.M.N.S.** Members of this body acting in a higher rank will receive the increments of pay of the rank in which they are acting, and service already given since August 4, 1914, reckons towards increments of pay.

## V.A.D.

**Allowances.** The uniform allowance for nursing members and special probationers is at the rate of £2 10*s.* half-yearly.

Any member of the V.A.D. breaking her engagement within three months of its commencement is required to refund £1 5*s.* of the allowance.

Paid probationers employed on nursing duties in Military hospitals are to receive uniform allowance at the rate of £2 half-yearly, instead of £1 quarterly.

**Miscellaneous Allowances.** An allowance in lieu of board and washing at the rate of 15*s.* per week at a home station, or of 21*s.* per week at a station abroad, will be granted to each member of the Q.A.I.M.N.S. This allowance will be reduced to 3*s.* 6*d.* per week when free messing or hospital diets and extras are provided. A special allowance for the provision of clothing will also be granted, except to the Matron-in-Chief, at the following rates—

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| Annual clothing and cloak allowance abroad . . | 9 | 0 | 0 |
| ,, ,, ,, ,, at home . . | 8 | 0 | 0 |
| Outfit allowance when proceeding on active service . | 8 | 5 | 0 |

The above allowance in lieu of board and washing and for the provision of clothing will be granted to each member of the Q.A.I.M.N.S. Reserve while employed at a Military hospital in time of War.

## WOMEN EMPLOYED ABROAD

Medical attendance is provided free and full pay in case of sickness is given for three months while abroad. This may be extended by permission of the War Office.

When a woman is returned home sick, home conditions apply from the date of return and she comes under Section 47 of the National Health Insurance Act. She also receives six weeks' full pay.

Employees' arrears on insurance cards must be paid if it is desired to remain in benefit.

Payment for injury abroad is made in accordance with the Injuries in War Compensation Act, 1914, Session 2.

## Q.A.I.M.N.S. RESERVE

**Contracts Renewed for Six Months.** Members of this unit who have completed twelve months' service may renew for an additional six.

## WOMEN COOKS

It is now authorized that wherever soldiers employed under A.C.I. 429 and 1276/1916 can be released for other services, the Women's Legion is prepared to find the necessary substitutes.

When women are so employed, Superintendents may be appointed at various rates of remuneration according to the number of cooks and waitresses under their jurisdiction.

## WOMEN COOKS

These are supplied by the Women's Legion and include Class A cooks, waitresses, housemaids, laundresses, vegetable women, pantry maids, etc., and are paid at the rate of £26 per annum. Class B includes scrubbers, washers-up, etc., paid at the rate of £20 per annum.

## THE TRAINING OF WAR WIDOWS OF SOLDIERS AND SAILORS

Widows in receipt of a minimum pension under Article 11 or of an alternative pension under Article 14 are eligible for training in some specified occupation. The Ministry of Labour, the Board of Education, Women's Employment Bureaux and the Federation of Women's Trade Unions act in co-operation with the Ministry in determining the trades for which training can be suitably given. There are openings for training in box making, clock and watch repairing, corset making, dental mechanics, machining and blouse making, nursing, and school teaching, elementary and secondary. Arrangements are being made by which openings may be found

in the London and provincial drapery stores. Applications should be made to the local War Pensions Committee. So far as possible, facilities for training will be offered in the widow's residential district, though when special circumstances necessitate her living away from home a maintenance allowance up to 12*s.* 6*d.* per week, in addition to the widow's pension and allowance, can be made.

A maintenance allowance will not be sanctioned by the Minister of Pensions unless in any case it can be shown either (*a*) that the widow is obliged in consequence of her training to give up or forgo a remunerative occupation ; or (*b*) that she is obliged to live away from her own home during her training, and needs to maintain such home ; or (*c*) that she has to make provision for the care of a child or children at some pecuniary cost in excess of the allowances payable in respect of such children ; or (*d*) any other special circumstances justify it. All fees are paid by the Ministry. The period of training usually occupies three months. Local War Pensions Committees are responsible for the widow while training, and, if she has to live away from home, to see that she is suitably lodged, if she is not housed in the institution in which she is being trained.

# SPECIAL ALLOWANCES

Billeting allowances were revised under A.O. 5/1917 as from December 1, 1916, when the following rates came into force—

| | Daily rates payable. | |
|---|---|---|
| | To the keeper of a victualling house. | To the occupier other than the keeper of a victualling house. |
| Lodging with attendance and full subsistence as defined by regulation. Full daily rate payable for each soldier . . . . . | 2*s.* 6*d.* | 2*s.* 9*d.* for one soldier, 2*s.* 6*d.* for each additional soldier. |
| The component items of these total daily rates are as follows, and payment will be made accordingly when the full daily rate is applicable— | | |
| Lodging and attendance. . . | 6*d.* | 9*d.* for one soldier, 6*d.* for each additional soldier. |
| Breakfast as specified by regulation . . . . . | 6*d.* | 6*d.* |
| Dinner as so specified . . . | 1*s.* 2*d.* | 1*s.* 2*d.* |
| Supper as so specified . . . | 4*d.* | 4*d.* |

## RANKERS

A gratuity, issuable when peace is declared, is payable to men promoted from the ranks. The sum of £200 is paid if while in the ranks they have not rejoined to complete twelve years' service, and £300 if they have rejoined.

## PASSAGES ABROAD

A Warrant Officer, N.C.O., or a man who proceeded from abroad to enlist in the forces on the declaration of War, may be granted a passage on his discharge to the place from whence he came. Application must be made by his C.O. to the Officer in Charge of Records.

The right to such passage must be exercised within six months from the date of discharge.

Army Reservists who rejoined the Colours from abroad on mobilization are eligible for this concession. Men who have been discharged for misconduct or as aliens are not eligible except with War Office approval.

## FAMILIES OF SOLDIERS IN T.F. QUARTERS

It has been decided where a soldier's family is in occupation of such quarters, rent free, and receives the lower rate of separation allowance in consequence, to charge a fair rental for these quarters based upon the accommodation provided and to issue a higher rate of separation allowance to the families of soldiers occupying them. This took effect from September 1, 1916.

## MERCHANT SEAMEN INTERNED AND PRISONERS OF WAR

The maximum allowance payable to the dependants of masters, officers, or seamen of British ships interned in Germany, under the dependants' scheme, is £1 per week. This scheme is purely a voluntary one, promoted in connection with the Government Insurance scheme.

Mr. G. Roberts, in the House of Commons on February

19, 1917, said: "The increase in the scale of separation allowances does not apply to officers and seamen interned since the commencement of the War. The amount issuable is £1 weekly, which must be taken as the maximum."

## FUNERALS

The expenses of a soldier's funeral are by law a first charge against his estate. Under the regulations, when the body of a soldier is removed at the request of his relatives from the station at which he dies for burial at home, the grant admissible from Army funds towards the cost of the funeral, in addition to the cost of the conveyance of the body, must not exceed the cost to the public at which the funeral could have been carried out by the Military authorities at the station where the death occurred.

A grant may be made of an amount which represents the difference between the amount ordinarily admissible in respect of a Military funeral at the station where the death took place and the sum actually expended on the funeral by the local Military authorities.

## DISTURBANCE ALLOWANCE

Allowance for removal at public expense, and grants were as follows—

| | |
|---|---|
| Initial grant to wife . . . . . | £3 |
| First child . . . . . | £2 |
| Every other child . . . . . | £1 |

Compensation as an addition to separation allowance: 4*d*. for wife, 1*d*. for each child, to take effect from the date of leaving quarters.

This grant was instituted in the early days of the War to meet cases in which families on the married establishment having, on account of the pressure on accommodation, to vacate public quarters or the lodging list in certain garrison towns to make room for troops. It is now discontinued. A.C.I. 389/1917.

## CLOTHING

Army Order 164, 1916, provides that on the death of a soldier all Military clothing in his possession will be returned for reissue, but any necessaries he may have will be sold for the benefit of his estate, and the amount realized credited to his account. Army Order 94 1915, provides that men discharged under Article 392 (XVI) of the King's Regulations as no longer physically fit for War service, or proceeding on furlough pending discharge, must be supplied free with one pair of ankle boots or Highland shoes, one pair of drawers, one Cardigan waistcoat, one flannel shirt and two pairs of socks, in addition to suit of civilian clothes, or the sum of 17*s.* 7*d.* in lieu of suit of clothes, and if discharged between October 1 and March 31, a civilian overcoat. By Army Order 184, 1915, the period in which an overcoat may be issued was extended 'during the continuance of the War.' Men, unless discharged for misconduct, or recruits of less than three months' service, whose civilian clothes have been disposed of are entitled to the above.

Men transferred to the Reserve are not eligible to receive any suit of civilian clothes or money allowance in lieu thereof.

If a man has under three months' service he is not entitled to clothing allowance.

A soldier discharged under paragraph 392 VI*a* K.R., that is, under 17 years of age at the date of application for discharge, is not entitled to clothing allowance.

## PURCHASE MONEY

Men who had purchased their discharge from a pre-War attestation may claim a refund of the money to an amount not exceeding £9. In the case of a member of the Territorial Forces, a refund is made only when the soldier undertake Imperial service.

A Special Reservist may claim a refund not exceeding £1 10*s.*

## VOLUNTEER FORCE. PAY AND ALLOWANCES

If a member of the Volunteer Force is called out for actual Military service in accordance with paragraph 7, Regulations for Volunteer Force, officers and volunteers are entitled to the following benefits—

**Pay and Allowance.** All ranks receive pay and allowance at the rates issuable to the officers and men of corresponding ranks of the Territorial Force. The wives or dependants of N.C.O.'s and men receive separation allowance as issuable to the Territorial Force.

Disability pension and pension to widows are issued upon the same lines.

## SOLDIERS ENGAGED UPON CIVIL EMPLOYMENT

If a soldier is sent upon civil employment, he is paid the usual rate of pay for the work upon which he is engaged, and if the work necessitates his absence from home, separation allowance is payable in addition, less allotment.

The pay he receives must in all cases equal all Army pay and emoluments, including separation allowances. Army Order 205/1915 defines the position of the soldier engaged upon civil employment by saying that 'a soldier so employed shall remain in possession of all his rights and privileges as a soldier in respect of himself, his family and dependants, except that he shall not receive any Army pay and allowances in respect of himself unless his earnings from his civil employment are less than such Army pay and allowances, in which case the balance shall be made good to him in the form of a special allowance (A.O.'s 205/1915 and 48/1916).

## RATION ALLOWANCE

The rate issuable pending admission to hospital is 1*s.* 4*d.* per day.

Ration allowance is fixed at 2*s.* 1*d.* per day.

**561/17 A.C.I.** Ration allowance is issuable in the case of an officer or unmarried soldier granted sick leave at the current rate.

To men in receipt of family allowance this is now 1*s.* a day.

The rate issuable to a soldier whose wife is in receipt of separation allowance or in respect of whom that allowance is being paid to a dependant Class B is 1*s.* 4*d.* a day.

## ALIENS' ALLOWANCES

The maximum allowance for British-born wives of interned aliens is in the London area 12*s.* 6*d.*, and outside London 10*s.*, with an allowance of 3*s.* for each child.

## ENLISTMENT OF MEN WHO HAVE SUFFERED FROM TUBERCULAR DISEASE OF THE LUNGS OR OTHER DISABILITIES

With reference to A.C.I. 471 of 1916, each man examined by the Recruiting Medical Board is asked definitely the following additional questions—

1. 'Have you ever been under treatment in a Sanatorium; if so, when, and which Sanatorium?'

2. 'Has your name been notified to the Sanitary Authority as suffering from consumption; if so, when?'

3. 'Have you ever been discharged from any branch of His Majesty's Forces as medically unfit; and if so, what was the nature of the disability?'

The statement of all men whose reply to questions 1 or 2 is given in the affirmative will be verified by reference to the Local Civil Authorities, and if it is confirmed, the men will be rejected forthwith.

If the reply to question 3 is in the affirmative, the

statement will be verified by reference to the man's documents, and the man will not be accepted unless the Board are of the opinion that he has quite recovered from the disease on account of which he was previously invalided. A man who has previously been discharged on account of tubercle of the lungs will not be again accepted. 24/Misc./1770 (A.M.D.2).

1. It has been brought to notice that numbers of men who have been discharged from the service on account of tubercle of the lungs are being re-enlisted into the Army.

2. It is pointed out that the re-enlistment of these men is a source of danger to other men with whom they come in contact, and a great expense to the State, as, under the strain of Military service, such men usually break down at an early date.

3. In future, all medical examiners of recruits must pay particular attention to this matter, and will carefully examine all recruits on whose attestation papers the answer to the question as to previous service with His Majesty's Forces shows that they have previously served.

4. On no consideration will a soldier who has been discharged from the service on account of tubercle of the lungs be re-enlisted. 24/Misc./1770 (A.M.D. 2).

## RAILWAY WARRANTS—MEDICAL EXAMINATION

Men sent for examination by Medical Board at their own request prior to being called up may be given railway warrants to the place where the Medical Board is held.

## OLD AGE PENSIONS

Mr. Duke, in answer to a question in the House of Commons on February 15, 1917, said that old age pensioners are not deprived of their pension if they resume

work, provided their wages do not exceed 20*s.* a week in rural districts or 30*s.* per week in urban districts, and they have no appreciable means in addition to their earnings.

## OLD AGE PENSIONERS AND PENSIONS

Action is not taken for the withdrawal or reduction of an existing old age pension in consequence of the receipt by the pensioner of temporary assistance from relief funds or other voluntary sources where the amount of the allowance (or the increase of an existing allowance) does not exceed 5*s.* per week, and is given for the purpose of enabling the pensioner to meet the increased cost of living. (Mr. Baldwin, House of Commons, February 20, 1917.) (C.D. 8320.)

## CANTEENS

The pay for married men employed by the Canteen Committee is—

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Home allotment . . . | 1 | 7 | 6 | per week. |
| Payment abroad . . . | 0 | 7 | 6 | ,, |

Men serving with the Expeditionary Force canteens are entitled to grants from the Civil Liabilities Commissioners, but are not entitled to pay, etc., from Army funds.

## SOLDIERS' REMITTANCES

A soldier may only make a remittance from his account through his Commanding Officer.

## REGISTRATION OF GRAVES

Inquiries respecting the graves of British officers and men should be addressed to the Director of Graves Registration and Inquiries, War Office, Winchester House, St. James's Square, London, S.W.

Some time may elapse after burial before the grave has

been properly registered and marked and the position accurately recorded. As soon as this is done a notification will be sent to the next-of-kin.

It is not possible to arrange for the distribution of flowers or wreaths for individual graves. Their maintenance is under the supervision of officers of the Graves Registration units.

Photographs of such graves in France and Belgium as are accessible to the photographers employed for the purpose are furnished to relatives on application, free of cost, out of funds placed at the disposal of the Directorate, for this object as well as for the planting of burial grounds, by the Joint War Committee of the British Red Cross Society and St. John Ambulance Association. All applications are carefully noted, and photographs are sent as soon as possible, but it will be understood that in many cases weeks or months may pass before photographs can be taken.

## FUEL AND LIGHT ALLOWANCE

Under the terms of A.O. 407/1915, the rates issuable under paragraph 242 of the Allowance Regulations of 1914, have been increased as follows—

| Class. | Winter. | Summer. |
|---|---|---|
| | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Class 1 | 4 1 | 2 1 |
| Class 2 | 3 7 | 1 10 |
| Class 3 | 3 1 | 1 6 |
| Classes 4 and 5 | 2 3 | 1 1 |
| Classes 6, 7, and 9 | 1 11 | 0 11 |
| Class 8 | 1 7 | 0 9 |
| Class 10 | 1 1 | 0 7 |
| Class 11 | 1 5 | 0 8 |
| Classes 12 and 14 | 0 7 | 0 4 |
| Class 13 | 0 11 | 0 7 |
| Class 15, or schoolmaster or schoolmistress in Class 16, married and living with families | 0 11 | 0 6 |
| Class 15, or schoolmaster or schoolmistress in Class 16, unmarried, or not living with families. | 0 8 | 0 4 |
| Class 16, married or unmarried. | | |
| Classes 17 and 18, married or unmarried. | 0 4 | 0 3 |
| Classes 19 and 20, if on the married roll. | | |

| Class. | Winter. s. | d. | Summer. s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Detachments of from 2 to 3 N.C.O.'s, and men when accommodated in the same room | 0 | 8 | 0 | 5 |
| Detachments of from 4 to 10 N.C.O.'s, and men when accommodated in the same room | 1 | 1 | 0 | 7 |
| One N.C.O. or man compelled to occupy whole room | 0 | 4 | 0 | 3 |

## FURLOUGH

A soldier wearing uniform on pass is never to appear in public unless dressed in review order, with forage cap or glengarry instead of full dress headdress. Service dress, or the regulation cycling dress, may be worn when cycling.

A soldier on pass who requires medical attention must apply for it, personally if possible, to the nearest Military hospital. If, however, he resides more than two miles from a Military hospital, he may apply to a civilian doctor, to whom he will show his pass, and the doctor will then be allowed the following rates for medical attendance upon the soldier at the latter's residence.

| | Under one mile. s. | d. | Over one but under two miles. s. | d. | Over two but under three miles. s. | d. | Over three but under four miles. s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Day | 2 | 6 | 3 | 0 | 4 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| Night, 10 p.m. to 7 a.m. | 3 | 6 | 4 | 6 | 6 | 6 | 8 | 6 |

| | Over four but under five miles. s. | d. | Greater Distances. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Day | 6 | 0 | An addition for each mile over five of 1*s.* |
| Night, 10 p.m. to 7 a.m. | 10 | 0 | An addition for each mile over five of 2*s.* |

The soldier will at once report the employment of a civilian doctor by a letter addressed to his Commanding Officer, to whom the civilian doctor will submit his claim on Army Form O 1667 for payment.

When a soldier on pass is prevented by sickness, which

must be properly certified, or by other unavoidable causes, from rejoining his corps by the date on which the pass expires, he is to report himself before that date to the nearest General, or other officer on the Staff of the Army; or to the Commanding Officer of any unit or detachment of the Regular Army; or (if none of these be within convenient distance) to a Justice of the Peace.

Before proceeding on a pass a soldier is to leave his address with the Captain of his company, and he must at all times be prepared to rejoin on the shortest notice, if ordered to do so.

## OFFICER CADET UNITS

Warrant Officers and N.C.O.'s posted to cadet units from the Home establishment continue to receive pay and allowances of any acting rank they may hold.

W.O.'s and N.C.O.'s from overseas holding acting rank revert to permanent rank before leaving their units and receive pay and allowances of the permanent rank while with the cadet unit.

Cadets retain the rates of proficiency pay subject to any variation of change of rank of which they were in receipt on joining a cadet unit.

## TRANSFER

Men enlisted at special rates of pay will come on to ordinary rates of pay on transfer to the Home establishment on compassionate grounds and resume their former rates from the date of embarkation on return to duty abroad.

## R.M. AND ROYAL MARINES ADMITTED TO OFFICER CADET UNITS

It has been decided that men discharged from the Navy and re-enlisted in the Army to cadet units shall continue in the case of all Naval ratings, other than those of the R.N.D. for the purposes of pay, etc., as men who have not already been serving in the Army.

Men of the R.N.D. while serving in the cadet unit remain on Naval engagements and draw pay, etc., from Naval stores.

The £8 uniform allowance granted to cadets applies to men of the overseas forces who are being trained for commissions in the Imperial Army.

On being commissioned, these cadets are also entitled to travelling warrants for the journey from old to new stations.

## ROYAL NAVAL DIVISION AND ROYAL MARINES

**Officer Cadet Units.** The usual advance of £8 for outfit is paid. A special messing allowance of 1*s.* per day is also issuable.

## DISCHARGE, ETC.

In reckoning the service of a soldier of the Regular Forces for the purpose of discharge or of transfer to the Reserve—

1. The service shall begin to reckon from the date of his attestation; but

2. Where a soldier of the regular forces has been guilty of any of the following offences—

(*a*) Desertion from His Majesty's service, or

(*b*) Fraudulent enlistment,

then either upon his conviction by court martial of the offence, or (if, having confessed the offence, he is liable to be tried) upon his trial being dispensed with by order of the competent Military authority, the whole of his prior service shall be forfeited, and he shall be liable to serve as a soldier of the Regular Forces for the term of his original enlistment, reckoned from the date of such conviction or such order dispensing with trial, in like manner as if he had been originally attested at that date.

Provided that the Army Council may restore all or any part of the service forfeited under this section to any soldiers who may perform good and faithful service, or may otherwise be deemed by the Army Council to merit such restoration of service or may be recommended for such restoration of service by a court martial.

## AGE OF THE SOLDIER

In cases in which a claim of actual age as opposed to age according to attestation has been made by or on behalf of a soldier, the actual age as verified by birth certificate will be taken for all purposes. In cases where no claim of actual age is made, the official age will continue to be reckoned from that given on voluntary enlistment or on enrolment under the Military Service Act.

## GRATUITIES

Officers, Warrant Officers, N.C.O.'s and men of the Royal Engineer, Signal and Postal Service, Royal Flying Corps, etc., who are postal servants in civil life, and in addition to their Military enrolments draw full civil pay, less the reduction in respect of increased separation allowances granted in January, 1917, are not entitled on their discharge to the gratuities issuable under the terms of Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant of 1914.

Gratuities are issuable under Article 1117 of the Royal Pay Warrant of 1914 to European soldiers who have enlisted for more than three years' service with the Colours, or who having enlisted for not more than three years, extend their services on transfer to the Army Reserve or on discharge. The amount issuable is £1 for each full year and any completed portion of a year of service with the Colours, reckoning towards discharge up to a maximum of twelve years, exclusive of the additional year's service that may be required under Section 87 of the Army Act. This gratuity is issued subject to the following conditions: (1) It shall not be issued to a soldier if discharged to permanent pension, but a soldier who is discharged to permanent pension and is not receiving deferred pay at the time of his discharge is entitled to a gratuity of £2. (2) It is not issuable to a man receiving deferred pay under Article 1104 of the Pay Warrant, or to a recruit discharged before being finally approved, or to a foreigner discharged as such before the expiration of his agreement, etc.

This gratuity issued to a man discharged to temporary pension, or discharged as no longer physically fit for war service, that pension shall not be less than £2, and in any other case not less than 30*s*.

By an Instruction to Army Order 415/1915, it was provided that men transferred to the Reserve are not eligible on transfer to receive a gratuity under Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant.

# CIVIL LIABILITIES, GRANTS AND SUPPLEMENTARY ALLOWANCES

## CIVIL LIABILITIES

In pursuance of arrangements made by His Majesty's Government, special assistance may be granted by the Military Service (Civil Liabilities) Committee to men, married or unmarried, serving with His Majesty's Forces, who are unable by reason of their undertaking military service to meet certain financial obligations and are thereby exposed to serious hardship.

The obligations in respect of which, in suitable cases, assistance may be granted are—

Rent.

Interest and instalments payable in respect of loans (including mortgages).

Instalments for the purchase of house, business premises, furniture, &c.

Taxes.

Rates.

Insurance premiums.

School fees.

Assistance will not be granted for the discharge of ordinary debts.

The scheme applies to Lieutenants, 2nd Lieutenants, Warrant Officers, non-commissioned officers and men who joined His Majesty's Forces on or after August 4, 1914, or are members of the Territorial Force.

Lieutenants, 2nd Lieutenants, Warrant Officers, non-commissioned officers and men serving outside the United Kingdom may authorize a person at home to make

an application and to act on their behalf; or, if serving with an Expeditionary Force, may apply for a form to their commanding officer (who can obtain copies from the Army Printing and Stationery Depôt). In the latter case the form, when completed, should be sent direct to the Secretary, Military Service (Civil Liabilities) Committee, Imperial House, Kingsway, London, W.C.

Unmarried Junior Officers who have been maintaining the home for their parents are eligible under the Civil Liabilities scheme for assistance in respect of such obligations as come within the provision of the Committee.

Mr. Forster in the House of Commons on February 20, 1917, stated that the scope of the Civil Liabilities Committee had been extended in order that they might be able to give a maintenance allowance to the families of officers below the rank of major.

The Committee may grant a maintenance allowance to the wives of married Junior Officers in addition to assistance that may be rendered to meet certain obligations, such as rent, rates, etc. The maintenance allowance, however, is issued only in cases where there are children in the family, and will not, therefore, be available either for parents or for wives unless there are children to be supported. Grants may, however, be given where there is serious hardship in respect of other obligations to which the scheme applies, whether the officer is married or unmarried, and whether it is for a wife or a dependent parent.

In considering the application of an officer, it is assumed that a Junior Officer serving at home at the ordinary rate of pay can spare £1 a week out of his pay.

The normal pay of a 2nd Lieutenant is £136 10*s.*, and £52 is roughly two-fifths of this.

It is suggested that while serving at home an officer whose pay is not more than £160 a year can spare two-fifths of his pay; an officer whose pay is not more than £200 a year, one-half; and an officer with a pay of more than £200, three-fifths.

Thus in the case of the 2nd Lieutenant at the ordinary

rate of pay (£136 10*s*.) an allowance of £52 would be assumed; in the case of the Infantry 1st Lieutenant (whose pay is £155), one of £62 (say £60); in the case of the Artillery Lieutenant (whose pay is £173), of £86 (say £80); and in the case of an Infantry Captain (whose pay is £227 10*s*.), of £135 10*s*. (say £135). It will be observed that this last-mentioned sum is £11 5*s*. a month, i.e., rather above the highest amount (£11) which the Officers' Families Fund regards as an unsatisfactory amount, and below the lowest amount (£12) which they regard as satisfactory.

Mr. Hayes Fisher, in the House of Commons, on February 21, said that it was not the practice of the Civil Liabilities Committee to take into account temporary allowances made from a local fund pending the determination of the Civil Liabilities grant. That does not mean that in making the award this Committee does not take into consideration other allowances, as it is a well-known practice for this body to reduce the amount of the award made upon an increase of the recipient's income from any other source.

Applications for assistance must be made on the prescribed forms, copies of which can be obtained at any post office in the United Kingdom. The form, when completed, should be forwarded to the Commissioner for the district in which the officer or man is ordinarily resident. The addresses of the Commissioners can be seen at the post office.

It is the practice to pay any grant that may have been awarded for six months from the date on which the man in respect of whom it was made was reported missing.

The Committee consider that they are practically bound by the statement made by the Chancellor of the Exchequer in the House of Commons on November 26 last that the increased amounts would not affect grants made by the Civil Liabilities Committee and have, therefore, no choice but to adopt the scale indicated. The Panels felt quite prepared in these circumstances to agree to the 14*s*. maximum in the case of the private;

a lance-corporal, 16*s.*; a corporal, 17*s.* 6*d.*; and a serjeant, 20*s.*

In future in dealing with officers' cases, the maintenance allowance issued in respect of children will be regarded as post commission income.

The question arises as to whether the Committee will consider that the portion of an officer's pay which he is regarded as entitled to retain should remain as at present, or whether some increase should be made. The 2nd Lieutenant at present serving at home is presumed to retain £84 out of £136 10*s.*, leaving £52 available for his family, and an officer whose pay is £191 (the present pay of a 2nd Lieutenant) is presumed to retain £100. £100 is the maximum amount which an officer serving at home (whatever his pay) is presumed to retain out of his pay in normal circumstances.

It is suggested that the 2nd Lieutenant with a pay of £191 retain £100 a year instead of the £84 which previously he was presumed to retain out of his £136 10*s.*, and that for every extra 1*s.* a day (or roughly £18 a year) an officer is regarded as entitled to retain another £5 a year, with a maximum of £130.

With regard to officers on foreign service (who draw additional allowance) the present rule is that a 2nd Lieutenant whose pay is £136 10*s.* is regarded as retaining £36, and the officer whose pay is £191 (the new pay of a 2nd Lieutenant) is regarded as retaining £54, which again is the maximum amount which an officer (whatever his pay) is regarded as retaining for himself.

The power to give maintenance allowances to officers in respect of children in addition to the (*a*) to (*g*) or £104 (whichever is the less) which was the maximum grant in the case of privates or non-commissioned officers, was presumably based on the absence of maintenance allowance for the officers' children, and it is probable that there will in the future be very few cases in which the (*a*) to (*g*) or £104 will not be the maximum grant, although the Committee may in very exceptional cases consider that the power to give maintenance allowance to the children may be used, in addition to the State main-

tenance allowance which is given irrespective of any question of financial hardship due to Military service.

Officers of the Reserve of Officers, retired officers, re-employed officers, Special Reserve, and Territorial Force officers employed under due authority are entitled, apart from gratuity or allowance for outfit, which they receive on being called up, to regimental pay at the rates applicable to officers of the Regular Army of similar rank, or in similar positions. They also receive various forms of extra pay (armament, engineer, or corps pay), based on their arm of the service, and qualifications.

While mobilized, they receive free accommodation, fuel, light and rations, and field allowance under certain conditions (2*s.* 6*d.* to 4*s.* daily, according to rank up to Lieutenant-Colonel).

## Minimum Daily Rates of Pay

| | Captain. | Lieutenant. | 2nd Lieutenant. | Quarter-Master. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* | *s.* *d.* |
| Cavalry and Yeomanry | 13 6 | 9 6 | 8 6 | 11 6 |
| Royal Horse Artillery | 15 0 | 10 6 | 9 6 | 11 6 |
| Royal Field Artillery | 13 6 | 9 6 | 8 6 | 10 6 |
| Royal Garrison Artillery. | 13 6 | 9 6 | 8 6 | 10 6 |
| (Armament pay in addition) | 2 0 | 1 0 | 1 0 | — |
| Mountain Artillery | 13 6 | 9 6 | 8 6 | 10 6 |
| Royal Engineers | 13 6 | 9 6 | 8 6 | 10 6 |
| (Engineer pay in addition) | 4 0 | 3 0 | 1 0 | 2 0 |
| Infantry | 12 6 | 8 6 | 7 6 | 10 0 |
| Army Service Corps | 12 6 | 8 6 | 7 6 | 10 0 |
| (Corps pay in addition) | 3 0 | 2 0 | 2 0 | — |
| Royal Army Medical Corps | 15 6 | 14 0* | — | 10 0 |
| Army Veterinary Corps | 15 6 | 13 8 | — | 11 6 |

* Temporary Lieutenants serving under Civil Contracts receive 24*s.* a day.

ROYAL FLYING CORPS

| | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|
| Flight Commander | 25 | 0 |
| Flying Officer | 20 | 0 |
| „ „ (Observer) | 12 | 0 |
| Adjutant | 20 | 0 |
| Equipment Officer, 1st Class | 24 | 6 |
| „ „ 2nd „ | 18 | 0 |
| „ „ 3rd „ | 12 | 0 or 12 6 |
| Quartermaster | 12 | 6 |

Except in the case of a Flying Officer Observer, these rates include flying pay when issuable continuously.

A Flying Officer Observer receives flying pay at 5*s.* continuously with the Expeditionary Force, otherwise for days of ascent only.

## PAY OF OFFICERS PROMOTED FROM THE RANK OF WARRANT OFFICERS OR NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS IN THE OLD ARMY

The daily rates of the regimental pay of officers who before being commissioned were serving as Warrant Officers or non-commissioned officers on ordinary peace attestations in the Regular Army and have been promoted since January 1, 1914, to permanent combatant commissions are as follows—

| Rank. | Cavalry. | | R.H.A. | | R.F.A. | | R.G.A. | | R.E. | | Infantry. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | s. | d. | s. | d. | s. | d. | s. | d. | s. | d. | s. | d. |
| On promotion to 2nd Lieutenant | 11 | 0 | 12 | 0 | 10 | 6 | 11 | 0 | 11 | 6 | 10 | 0 |
| Lieutenant | 11 | 0 | 12 | 0 | 10 | 6 | 11 | 0 | 11 | 6 | 10 | 0 |
| On promotion to Captain | 15 | 0 | 17 | 0 | 14 | 0 | 14 | 0 | 14 | 6 | 14 | 0 |

Armament and engineer pay is payable as in the case of other officers.

Officers to whom these rates apply receive £150 outfit allowance on promotion.

1. The following general rules have been laid down by

the Committee for dealing with the amount of an officer's pay which is available for his family—

| For Family. | | | Officer Retains | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| At Home, etc. | France, etc. | | At Home, Egypt. | France, etc. |
| £ | £ | | £ | £ |
| 78 | 137 | Pay £191 | 113 | 54 |
| 91 | 150 | ,, £209 | 118 | 59 |
| 104 | 163 | ,, £227 | 123 | 64 |
| 117 | 176 | ,, £245 | 128 | 69 |
| 151 | 202 | ,, £283 | 130 | 79 |

The general principle is that 2nd Lieutenants on home service, etc., retain £113 out of £191 (or 10*s.* 6*d.* a day), and that out of every additional 1*s.* a day (or £18 a year) which an officer receives he retains £5 and spares £13 for his family. The maximum amount which an officer is regarded as retaining is £130 a year.

While on service in France, etc., a 2nd Lieutenant is regarded as retaining £54 out of his ordinary pay (as he has additional allowances), and, as on home service, an officer is regarded as retaining £5 out of every additional £18, the maximum to be retained being £84.

This rule should be a sufficient guide in the case of pay of a higher rate than those specified above.

2. The maintenance allowances for children (£24 for each boy up to 18 and each girl up to 21 with a maximum of £96) will be regarded as part of the post-commission income.

3. In the case of Flying Officers, Observers and Equipment Officers in the Flying Corps, and Medical Officers and Dentists at special rates of pay (24*s.* 6*d.* and 20*s.* a day respectively) the children's allowance is at the rate of £12 a year (with a maximum of £48).

4. Neither the new rate of pay nor the allowance for children applies to officers in the pay of the Indian Government (i.e., officers serving in India or Mesopotamia),

and the existing rules as to the amounts which these officers can allow out of their pay will continue in force.

A man serving as a mechanic under Red Cross is not entitled to a Civil Liabilities grant.

## OFFICERS PROMOTED FROM THE OLD ARMY

1. In the case of the private or non-commissioned officer of the old Army commissioned since the outbreak of the War (in whose case the ordinary comparison with pre-enlistment income is impossible), the Committee decided that it should be assumed that there was required for the maintenance of his family (after *a–g* were paid) £52 for the wife, £20 16*s*. for the first child, £18 4*s*. for the second, and £15 12*s*. for the third and each subsequent child.

2. The War Office have now, however, given a flat rate maintenance allowance for officers' children of £24 a child (with a maximum of £96, whatever number), and the question arises whether in these circumstances it should not be assumed that the cost of the children of the officers in question is £24 each.

3. The limitation of the total amount of children's maintenance allowance to £96 creates some difficulty. These officers for the most part are not young men and often have large families.

The question of a grant in these cases generally arises where there are more than four children and very seldom where there are not more than two.

4. It is not to be presumed that the War Office consider that the cost of the maintenance of eight children is the same as that of four children, although the maximum limitation of grant would seem to suggest it, and if the presumption is adopted from the new flat rate that the first four children cost £24 each, it can hardly be carried to the logical conclusion of presuming that the additional children cost nothing at all.

5. It is suggested as a compromise between the £24 for each of the first four children and nothing for the

remainder an assumption that each child costs £20, whatever the number of the family may be.

6. It may be convenient to take the opportunity of considering whether the amount which these officers are presumed to retain should not be increased ; when their pay was £182, they were presumed to retain £65, whereas other officers at a corresponding rate were regarded as retaining about £96. Now their pay is £191, like that of the ordinary subaltern who, under the new rules, is presumed to retain £113. There is evidence that for some reason or another these officers, can spare more than others (among other things their kit allowance is £150 instead of £50), but in view of the more generous scale adopted for other officers, it is suggested also that they should be treated as retaining £100, leaving £91 available for the family. Experience of what they actually do allow and the fact of the extra kit allowance seems to make some distinction reasonable, but as to the latter it is to be remembered that in many cases they obtained their commissions at the outbreak of the War, and that £100 (the extra kit allowance) does not last for ever.

## REGULATIONS GOVERNING THE ISSUE OF GRANTS, AND SUPPLEMENTARY ALLOWANCES UNDER THE NAVAL AND MILITARY WAR PENSIONS, ETC., ACT, 1915.

Especial stress is laid upon the phrase ' exceptional circumstances ' as applied to supplementary allowances, and such circumstances are defined as ' hardship caused by the disproportion between the present income (i.e., allotment, State separation allowance and any other income) and the pre-war income in the case of the wife or pre-war dependence of the dependant, rendering it difficult for the home to be kept together or the former standard of comfort to be maintained.'

' Pre-war dependence is defined as the amount representing the value of the support afforded to, or of benefits received by, a dependant prior to the date of mobilization,

.or enlistment of the man in respect of whom the allowance or grant is to be made.'

A 'sailor or soldier' is defined as meaning any seaman, marine, or soldier, including Petty Officer, Non-commissioned Officer and Warrant Officer of the Army or Royal Marines, except a Royal Marine Gunner. This alteration brings within the scope of the provision a Warrant Officer of the Royal Navy or Royal Navy Reserve.

There is added to this definition the words 'Provided that he shall have been called into actual service and have served and been in receipt of naval or military pay as such during some period of the present war, which shall not include any sailor or soldier of the Royal Indian Marine or the Indian Army, or any sailor or soldier of Dominion, Colonial or Protectorate Forces, whether raised for local or general service,' but it does not include any sailor or soldier of the Royal Indian Marine, or the Indian Army, or any sailor or soldier of Dominion, Colonial, or Protectorate Forces, whether raised for local or general service.

'Wife' or 'widow' means the wife or widow of any sailor or soldier as defined above, but does not include a wife or widow whose marriage took place after the cessation of hostilities, or after the discharge of the sailor or soldier, or if during the service of the sailor or soldier, after the receipt of the wound or injury, or after the contraction of the disease which caused his death, or a wife who is living apart from her husband, or a widow who was so living apart from him at the time of his death.

'Dependant' means any person other than a wife, widow or child, who is found to have been wholly or in part dependent upon a sailor or soldier for a reasonable period before entry into the service or enlistment or mobilization.

**Recoverable Advances.** Advances may be made by the Local Committee to the wife, widow, or dependant of a sailor or soldier, or a discharged disabled sailor or soldier, pending the receipt of separation allowance, pension,

temporary allowances, but they will not ordinarily exceed the anticipated amount of—

Two weeks' State separation allowance (including allotment by a soldier) in the case of a wife.

Six weeks' State separation allowance in the case of a dependant.

Four weeks' State pension in the case of a widow or dependant.

Four weeks' State temporary allowance in the case of a disabled sailor or soldier.

The foregoing periods may be extended in individual cases, but in no case for a longer period than thirteen weeks except with the sanction of the Committee. The sum advanced is recoverable from the allowance or pension by small deductions from the weekly payments. Advances are not made against a promised or anticipated gratuity.

Where owing to 'exceptional circumstances' the separation allowance appears to be inadequate, a supplementary separation allowance may be granted.

**Rent Allowance.** 1. Where the net rent payable by the wife of a sailor or soldier, being in receipt of a State separation allowance for herself and children (if any), exceeds 7*s.* 6*d.* a week in the London postal area, or 4*s.* a week outside the London postal area, a supplementary separation allowance may be granted representing the sum by which such net rent exceeds 7*s.* 6*d.* or 4*s.* respectively, provided that in no case shall the allowance so granted exceed 4*s.* 6*d* a week in the London postal area, and provided further that in no case shall such allowance bring the total income of the beneficiaries, viz., allotment, State and supplementary separation allowances and any other income, up to a larger sum than the pre-war income of the household. No allowance will be given or continued where assistance is given by a Treasury grant.

2. Where a dependant or the dependants of a sailor or soldier have been awarded the maximum State separation allowance, but such amount is less than the pre-war dependence upon the sailor or soldier, and the net rent

payable by such dependants exceeds 4*s.* a week, or 7*s.* 6*d.* a week if the London allowance is applicable, a supplementary separation allowance may be granted of the amount by which the net rent exceeds 4*s.* or 7*s.* 6*d.* respectively, provided that in no case shall such allowance exceed 8*s.* a week, or 4*s.* 6*d.*, as the case may be, and provided further that the total of the allotment, State and supplementary separation allowances and any other income shall not exceed the amount of the pre-war dependence.

'Net rent' means the rent paid after deducting receipts from sub-letting, and includes rates where such are payable by the tenant in addition to the rent. No increase in rent since the outbreak of the war is recognized.

**Supplementary Allowance.** 3. Where a wife without children or a dependant is physically unfit or unable for other reasons to obtain employment, and where the present income inclusive of allotment and State separation allowance or any supplement to these incomes under the regulations, together with any other income, is insufficient to maintain the wife or dependant in a reasonable standard of comfort, having regard to the pre-war standard of comfort, an allowance may be granted of such an amount as in the opinion of the Local Committee is necessary to bring the present income up to a sum sufficient to maintain such standard. The allowance in the case of a wife without children must in no case exceed 4*s.* per week. This is an addition of 1*s.* 6*d.* per week to the supplementary allowance of 2*s.* 6*d.* per week provided under (7*d*) of Part II of the Regulations.

In the case of dependants the regulations provide that the grant shall in no case exceed 33⅓ per cent. of the assessed dependence, but not exceeding 4*s.* per week in the case of one dependant. If two dependants, 6*s.* per week between them; and if three dependants, 7*s.* 6*d.* per week between them. In the case of dependants upon two or more sailors or soldiers, the supplementation will be calculated separately in respect of each sailor or soldier. In an instruction issued to Local

Committees with regard to this regulation, it is required that the members of the household who are capable of work must have taken full advantage of the additional opportunities afforded by the increased demand for labour. The definition of 'exceptional circumstances' does not govern the granting of allowances under this regulation.

In order that the allowances granted under 7 (1) (*a*) and 7 (2) may not be affected by the increase in the flat rates of separation allowances, the following provisions be adopted. With regard to 7 (1) (*a*) 'provided that in calculating present income the increase in the State separation allowance made in January, 1917, and any allowance under 7 (1) (D) shall be excluded.' With regard to 7 (2) the following provision has been made: 'That in calculating present income the increase in the State separation allowance made in January, 1917, shall be excluded.'

4. A supplementary allowance may be granted to a dependant of a sailor or soldier who is in receipt of a State separation allowance, in like circumstances and subject to the same condition as in Regulation 9 (*a*), provided that the amount of the State separation allowance payable is taken into consideration in calculating the amount of the supplementary separation allowance.

5. A supplementary allowance may be granted to a dependant of a sailor or soldier who is in receipt of a State separation allowance, in like circumstances and subject to the same conditions as in Regulation 9 (*b*), provided that the amount of the State separation allowance payable is taken into consideration in calculating the amount of the supplementary separation allowance.

These supplementary allowances are payable only so long as the State separation allowance is payable.

Where it is shown to the satisfaction of the Committee that owing to special circumstances serious hardship exists which cannot be met by a supplementary allowance under the above, the Committee may grant an extra supplementary allowance to a wife or dependant not exceeding 10*s.* a week; provided that the

additional allowance together with any other income does not exceed the amount of the income before the outbreak of war, after deducting a sum in respect of the saving resulting from the man's enlistment and that no loss of pre-war income not due to the service of the sailor or soldier is taken into consideration, and that such extra allowance is payable only so long as the State separation allowance is payable.

**Special Separation Allowances where no State Separation Allowances are Granted.** Where there are dependants (other than a wife or child) of a married sailor or soldier who are ineligible for a State separation allowance, or where there are dependants of an unmarried sailor or soldier who are ineligible because a State separation allowance is already being issued to another dependant, a special allowance may be granted, not exceeding the allotment and maximum amount of the State separation allowance which could have been granted to the wife of a private soldier, or if there is more than one dependant, not exceeding the maximum Army State separation allowance and allotment if the first dependant were a wife and the others children. An allowance, as laid down in Regulation 7, may also be granted, but the total amount granted must not exceed the amount of pre-war dependence.

A special separation allowance not exceeding 5*s*. a week may be granted to the illegitimate child of a sailor or soldier who is not in receipt of State separation allowance, provided that such allowance together with the allotment, if any, does not exceed the amount of the pre-war dependence.

An allowance granted as above may be continued for a period of thirteen weeks after the death of the man in respect of whom it is payable, or until the question of pension has been decided, provided that after the cessation of an allotment as the result of the death the special separation allowance granted may be increased to the amount of the pre-war dependence or 5*s*. a week, whichever be less, and such increased allowance shall be deemed to be the special separation allowance for the purpose of pension.

In the event of the death or incapacity of the father or other relative who was the chief means of support of the family to which an unmarried sailor or soldier belongs, where the responsibility for the maintenance of the home would have fallen upon such sailor or soldier, a special separation allowance may be granted to the person or persons who were dependent upon such father or other relative. It is provided, however, that the soldier or sailor must make an allotment proportionate to his pay, and not less than 5*s.* per week in the case of a sailor, and 3*s.* 6*d.* per week in the case of a soldier, and also that there is no other member of the family in a position to support the home, as a condition to the grant.

The allowance granted in the case of dependants shall not exceed the amount which would be equivalent to the State separation allowance on the basis of pre-war dependency, equal to the support which it may be considered the man might reasonably be expected to give were he in civil life. In the case of a sailor the allowance is to be of the same amount as in the case of a soldier, less the difference between the required allotment—that is 1*s.* 6*d.*

Regulation 9 (*b*) as set forth in the revised edition provides that where an unmarried soldier or sailor prior to his enlistment was an apprentice, or undergoing a period of training for any specific occupation, during or on the expiration of which he would have been able to contribute to the support of his parents, and where it is shown that the absence of this expected contribution has resulted in hardship, a special allowance may be granted of such an amount as in addition to the allotment it may be deemed equivalent to the support which the sailor or soldier might reasonably be expected to give if he were in civil life, but not exceeding the regulation separation allowance applicable to dependants. The special allowance is contingent upon the allotment of the required amount. Special circumstances are set forth regarding an allowance under this heading, and which are to be taken into consideration in making a grant. These are cases where debts have been incurred in connection with the training, or apprenticeship, and where, owing to ill health

or age, the earning power of the parents has decreased, and also where, to make the son's training or apprenticeship possible, the parents have made considerable sacrifices, and because of the absence of the son's support are unable to maintain themselves in a reasonable degree of comfort.

Regulation 9 (*c*) is a recent addition, and provides that a special allowance may be made to a dependant who is ineligible for State allowance on the ground that the sailor or soldier had ceased temporarily to support the dependant prior to enlistment because of the soldier's detention in an asylum, hospital, infirmary, or FOR SOME OTHER GOOD AND SUFFICIENT REASON; an allotment must be made reasonably proportionate to the pay of the soldier. The allowance will be limited to such an amount as together with the allotment represents the dependency existing prior to the cessation of support, and will not exceed the maximum state allowance payable to the dependants of the soldier. The allowance may be continued for thirteen weeks subsequent to the death of the man, provided that after the cessation of the allotment the special allowances may be increased by the proportion of the allotment which was taken into account in calculating the amount of allowance originally given, and such increase shall be considered to be the special separation allowance for the purpose of Part I of the Regulations.

This regulation is divided into two parts and provides that—

(*a*) In the event of the death, insanity or desertion of the wife of a sailor or soldier who was in receipt of a State separation allowance and left children entitled to the State allowance for motherless children, a special allowance may be granted to a sister or other person who, with the permission of the sailor or soldier, takes charge of the children and maintains the home of the sailor or soldier, provided that such allowance together with the State allowances in respect of the children shall not exceed the State separation allowance which was granted to the wife and children, or would have been granted to her, and that

the sailor or soldier continues to make the allotment previously made to his wife.

(*b*) Provides that a special allowance may be granted to a person who has acted as paid housekeeper to a widower with children, the amount not to exceed, with the State allowance issued in respect of the children, the amount of the allowance which would have been paid to a wife with the same number of children.

The issue of this allowance is contingent upon an allotment being made reasonably proportionate to the man's pay, and not less than 5*s*. per week in the case of a sailor, and of 3*s*. 6*d*. per week in the case of a soldier.

The term ' widower ' includes a man separated from his wife prior to his enlistment. This allowance may also be continued for a period of thirteen weeks after the death of the man in respect of whom it is issuable, or until a decision has been given as to the award of pension.

It has further been provided under Regulation 11 that where a pension is not issuable, or has been refused for reasons not due to the unworthiness of the applicant, or the unsatisfactory service of the man, and where the case is one in which a Local Committee would recommend a special allowance of a continuing nature under Part I of the Regulations, a temporary allowance may be granted pending the decision in each case for a period of thirteen weeks as follows :—

(*a*) To a widower, not exceeding 10*s*. a week with allowance for children at the same rates as for State pension.

(*b*) To a dependant, not exceeding 10*s*. a week provided that such allowance shall not exceed the amount of pre-war dependence.

(*c*) To a disabled man, not exceeding 10*s*. a week if separation allowance has been issued to a wife or dependant with allowances for children at the rates provided in (*a*), or of 10*s*. a week if no allowance has been issued.

Regulation 12, Part II, ceased to be operative as from July 23, 1917.

**Emergency Grants.** In exceptional cases emergency grants of small amounts may be made to meet cases

of temporary distress or emergency, including the following :—

1. In the case of the serious illness of a wife, child, or dependant of a sailor or soldier where financial assistance is not available from any other source, and pecuniary need exists, a grant not exceeding 5*s*. a week, but not for a longer period than four weeks except upon a medical certificate, and in no case for more than thirteen weeks. The Committee may increase the sum of 5*s*. to a sum not exceeding 10*s*., and may extend the period for which such allowance is granted in any case where such increase or extension is necessary, but not for a longer period than twenty-six weeks.

The provisions of this regulation may be applied to a childless widow whose income does not exceed 15*s*. a week ; and to a discharged disabled sailor or soldier pending the settlement of his claim to State pension, or of any application for a supplementary pension or special temporary allowance.

2. In the event of the death of a discharged disabled sailor or soldier or of the wife, child or dependant of a sailor or soldier, a grant to meet funeral expenses where but for such grant the cost of the funeral would fall upon the rates, provided that such grant shall not exceed £4 for an adult and £2 for a child.

3. Where it is considered necessary or advisable to make provision for the care of the child of a sailor or soldier in a home or institution or otherwise, a grant in suitable cases of not exceeding £2 to cover the cost of outfit and other incidental expenses.

Regulation 13 (D) provides for an emergency grant where there is a temporary cessation of the whole or any part of State separation allowance not due to misconduct of the wife or dependant, or to the desertion of the sailor or soldier. A grant may be issued where such allowance has ceased owing to the admission of a wife or dependant into a State or rate-aided Institution. Such grant, however, will not include any payment for maintenance while in such Institution. The grant may be extended beyond a period of six weeks with the sanction of the Committee.

Instruction 50 is amended accordingly, but the maximum amount of the grant is limited to the amount of the State allowance, and in determining the amount of the grant to be issued within this maximum, consideration is to be given (1) to the amount necessary with any allotment that may be required, to meet rent, insurance premiums, hire-purchase payments and other obligations not covered by Regulation 7, or by a grant from the Civil Liabilities Committee. (2) Regard is to be paid to the expense of providing for the care of children during the absence of the mother, and an allowance not exceeding 1*s.* 6*d.* per week may be made for incidental expenses while she is in the Institution. The grant is in no case to exceed a sum which, with the State separation allowance payable in respect of children or other dependants, the total separation allowance previously issued. If a dependant in receipt of special separation allowance enters a State or rate-aided Institution, the amount of such allowance is to be temporarily reduced to such an amount as will, with the allotment, provide for the rent and other standing charges of the home in addition to a sum not exceeding one-sixth for the personal expenditure of the dependant.

Instruction 24, part II, which governs supplementary allowances made in cases where State separation allowance is temporarily suspended, provides that the instruction regarding cessation is not applicable, except in cases where such suspension is due to the desertion of the man or the misconduct of the beneficier.

Instruction 29, which is intended to prevent overlapping as between the Civil Liabilities Committee and the Local War Pensions Committee, provides that a mother or other dependant of a married man who is receiving a grant from the Civil Liabilities Committee for his own rent, insurance, etc., may receive an allowance from the Local Committee under Regulation 8 (A), but within the limits of the pre-enlistment dependence. Regulation 7 (1) part II of the revised edition, has also been amended. This regulation deals with supplementary allowances issued in special cases to wives and dependants of men serving in the Navy, and has been made necessary in consequence of

the modifications of the new Pay Warrant. Regulation 7 (1) (G) provides that where the wife or dependant of a sailor with the ratings of ordinary seaman, able seaman, or stoker 2nd Class, is receiving an allowance with allotment less in amount than that issuable to the wife or dependant of a private soldier, supplementary allowance may be granted to such wife or dependant of an amount equal to the difference between the amount the wife or dependant receives and that which she would receive as the wife or dependant of a private soldier, provided (1) that the allotment made by the sailor is the maximum permitted under the regulation; (2) that the total issue must not be more than sufficient to maintain the pre-war or pre-enlistment standard of comfort; and (3) that the supplementary allowance shall be subject to revision or withdrawal if the sailor is able to increase his allotment. The particulars of each case are to be notified to the Separation Allowance Branch of the Admiralty before any action is taken.

A small grant to the widow or dependant of a sailor or soldier to meet urgent necessary expenses consequent upon or caused by his death, such as costs incidental to the removal of the home, medical expenses where the illness was caused by the bereavement, expenses of the widow or dependant incidental to obtaining employment, and any like expense, provided that the expenses in question shall be specified and the Local Committee shall see that the grant is applied thereto, that where insurance or other money is receivable, the same shall be taken into account, and that the applicant is of good character and deserving of assistance, and further, that no such grant shall exceed £3.

This regulation is amended by Article 14 (1) of the new Warrant, which provides for the payment of £3 on the death of a sailor or soldier. In future, grants under this head are to be restricted to widows who are not eligible for grants under the Royal Warrant and to dependants other than wives. A dependant, Class B (Separation Allowance Regulations), is not entitled to a grant under the Warrant, and is therefore eligible for a grant under this regulation.

In the case of a disabled sailor or soldier, a small grant to meet necessary expenses incidental to his obtaining treatment in a sanatorium or other institution, or arranging with the Admiralty or War Office for necessary adjustments or repairs to or replacement of artificial limbs or appliances carried out at the public expense, or securing employment, provided that the expenses in question shall be specified and the Local Committee shall see that the grant is applied thereto and that any gratuity received on discharge is taken into account and that no such grant shall exceed £5.

A recent regulation provides that in the case of a discharged disabled sailor or soldier in receipt of a minimum disability pension, which is less than the full minimum pension, if at any time during six months after his discharge he is certified to be unfit to work, there may be granted an allowance which—

(*a*) Together with the pension and any other income shall not exceed in any one week the full minimum disability pension;

(*b*) That grants shall not be made for more than four weeks except with the sanction of the Committee.

## THE SPECIAL GRANTS COMMITTEE

The Committee is the successor to the Statutory Committee.

The following are the Regulations, Part I, made by the Special Grants Committee under the Naval and Military War Pensions, etc., Act, 1915, by virtue of the powers conferred upon them by the Naval and Military War Pensions (Transfer of Powers) Act, 1917.

1. **Supplementary Allowances.** The awards that may be made are intended cases which in the judgment of the Local Committee are not adequately met by the provisions of the Royal Warrant, and are determined not by a fixed scale of rates but upon the merits of each individual case.

There are cases in which no pension or gratuity is payable and in which exceptional hardship exists. Such

cases may be recommended for the award of a special allowance, provided that the death or disablement of the sailor or soldier was due to circumstances arising from service during the present War.

2. **Definitions.** The following interpretations are important—

A. '*Pre-War income*' *means*—

(1) The regular net earnings of the applicant and any other member of the household in respect of whom pension is payable.

(2) Any 'other income,' together with—

(*a*) In the case of a widow the 'pre-War earnings' of the deceased husband, or

(*b*) In the case of a dependant the amount of pre-War dependence.

B. '*Present income*' *means*—

(1) The State pension.

(2) The regular net earnings or earning capacity of the applicant and the regular net earnings of any other member of the household in respect of whom pensions is payable.

(3) Any 'other income.'

C. '*Other income*' *means*—

(1) Contributions from members of the family (other than those in respect of whom pension is payable or from tenants or lodgers in excess of the expenditure incurred in respect of such persons.

(2) Money value of any benefit enjoyed by the applicant and by any other member of the household in respect of whom the State pension is payable.

(3) Income received from property or investments or from any other permanent source (including an old age pension) by the applicant and any other member of the household in respect of whom State pension is payable.

The 'other income' which has to be reckoned for both pre-War and present income covers all items of income whether in cash or in kind, forming part of the regular income of the household and not coming under the terms earnings, wages, or profits on business, but does not

include any grant made out of any fund raised locally or made by way of voluntary gift, provided that such grant is not of a permanent character.

It is the intention to relieve the financial position of a household by supplementing the State pension where it can be shown that 'exceptional circumstances' exist. It is not, however, considered the function of the Committee to make good in every case whatever loss of income is caused by the death or disablement of the man, nor is it intended to deal with circumstances of temporary or occasional kind.

D. 'Exceptional circumstances' referred to in section 3 (1) (*b*) of the Act is (as applied to cases for supplementary allowance) defined as follows—

Circumstances where there is disproportion between the 'present income' and the 'pre-War income' (after deducting, in the case of a widow, the proportion of the income which was expended by, or on behalf of, the deceased soldier or sailor), and where there is—

(*a*) Permanent ill-health (mental or physical) of the applicant, or incapacity for work, or

(*b*) In the case of a widow, an invalid child or young children, or

(*c*) In the case of dependants, need owing to their number, or

(*d*) Any other circumstances which in the opinion of the Local Committee call for special consideration;

Provided always that—

The increased cost of living due to the War shall not be taken into account.

E. '*Post-War Dependence*' *means*—

The contribution which might have been expected (from the deceased sailor or soldier had he been alive) owing to a change in the financial circumstances of the household since the outbreak of the War.

Where a sailor or soldier did not contribute to the support of the applicant before the War, or the date of enlistment if later, the applicant is ordinarily ineligible for a grant from State funds. If it can be shown, however, that the absence of pre-War or pre-enlistment

dependence was not unreasonable (for instance, because the man earned as an apprentice too low a salary, or because the financial resources of the household did not necessitate such assistance), and that it would under normal circumstances probably have been forthcoming (for instance, upon completion of an apprenticeship or owing to financial loss on the part of the household), post-War dependence to the amount of the probable support may be assumed.

3. **Pre-War Earnings Method of Computation.** The definition of ' pre-War ' income provides that the earnings of every member of the household in respect of whom pension is payable must be reckoned in all cases where such earnings were regular. For this purpose the amount earned after deducting any expenses necessarily incurred in the course of the, and for the purpose of the, employment or occupations, e.g., travelling expenses to be ascertained, the cost of materials, the cost of obtaining domestic help in the home while the wife or wage earner is away at work. (See Treatment and Training, p. 278.)

**Supplementary Allowances.** These may be issued in cases where owing to exceptional circumstances the pension payable out of public funds seems to the Special Grants Committee to be inadequate.

An ' Allowance ' may be granted to a disabled sailor or soldier, or the widow or dependant of a deceased sailor or soldier, not exceeding 10*s.* a week, together with an allowance not exceeding 2*s.* 6*d.* a week for each child previously supported by the soldier, provided that earnings or earning capacity or any other income are taken into account in determining the amount of an allowance and that no such allowance shall be granted or renewed for a longer period than six months.

The widow of a man married after her husband's enlistment or entry into the service is not necessarily excluded from the benefits of this concession.

**Supplementary Allowance: Widows.** These are not granted, except in cases of pre-War dependence—

(*a*) To make good the loss of income not directly or

indirectly due to the disablement or death of the man in respect of whom the pension is awarded.

(*b*) No allowance will ordinarily be granted which, together with the State pension (including children's allowances) and other income, will make up the present income to an amount in excess of £2 a week for the widow plus 2*s*. 6*d*. a week in respect of each child.

(*c*) No allowance will be awarded in lieu of an alternative pension, but may be granted in addition to the most advantageous pension (minimum or alternative) to which the widow is entitled.

The widow of a sailor or soldier eligible only for a temporary pension under Article 15 of the present warrant may be awarded an allowance, which, together with the temporary pension, will not exceed the amount of the minimum pension for herself and children which would have been granted to the widow, had she been eligible, under Articles 11 and 12 of the Warrant.

**Dependants.** Article 21 (1) and (2) of the Pay Warrant provide that: 'The parent (or parents) of a soldier who has died,' etc. A supplementary allowance may now be issued not only to parent or parents but to a person or persons who took the place of parent or parents.

An 'unmarried wife' (Article 20 of the Pay Warrant) is also eligible, as is also the dependant of a soldier (Article 22).

An application will ordinarily only be considered if the pre-War dependence exceeds the rate of State pension, and no such allowance will be granted as will bring up the present income 'to an amount in excess of the pre-War income.'

**Post-War Dependence.** An allowance may also be granted to parents or persons as above in respect of a deceased soldier who at the time of his enlistment or mobilization—

(*a*) Was an apprentice who had served not less than a year at his trade, or

(*b*) Was qualifying for any profession or employment, and had after the age of 16 years attended regularly at any recognized school, university or hospital, or had

been articled in accordance with practice of any profession.

An allowance is also issuable to the mother of a soldier who because of the death of the soldier's father during the War becomes wholly or partially incapable of self-support from infirmity or old age.

**Pensions Refused or Discontinued.** Where a pension is not or has ceased to be payable from causes not due to the unworthiness of the applicant or to the unsatisfactory service of the sailor or soldier, and where the case is one of exceptional hardship 'a special allowance' may be granted—

(1) To a disabled sailor or soldier not exceeding 27*s.* a week, together with allowance for children at the same rates as provided in (2) below, or 13*s.* 9*d.* a week if no separation allowance has been issued.

(2) To a widow, not exceeding 13*s.* 9*d.* a week for a private's widow, and higher ranks according to scale, together with allowances for children at the same rates as State pension.

(3) To a person dependent upon a sailor or soldier an allowance not exceeding the actual amount of pre-War dependence or the estimated amount of post-War dependence where the person was in receipt of a special separation allowance under Regulation 9 (*a*), Part II, or might have been eligible therefor.

(4) To a child (other than children referred to in (1) and (2) not exceeding 5*s.* a week.

Provided that—

(*a*) No case shall be considered unless the death or disablement of such sailor or soldier was due to circumstances arising from service during the present War.

(*b*) The earnings or earning capacity and any other income shall be taken into account in determining the amount of any such allowance.

(*c*) Where a gratuity is payable out of public funds the income value of any such gratuity shall be taken into account in determining the amount of any such allowance.

No such allowance shall be granted or renewed for a period longer than six months.

## EDUCATIONAL GRANTS FOR CHILDREN

In order that children of dead or disabled officers and men who have served in the Forces may be as well educated as if their fathers were still alive and well, the Committee is empowered to make yearly grants as follows—

Day School children over 5 and under 13 years of age—Fees not exceeding £20 and £5 expenses.

Day School children over 13 and under 21 years of age—Fees up to £25 and £10 expenses.

Children under 21 years of age at Boarding School or College away from home—£50.

**Education Allowance.** In cases of pecuniary need an education allowance not exceeding £35 per annum for a boy and £25 per annum for a girl, commencing at the age of 13 and ceasing at the age of 18, may be granted at the discretion of the Army Council. These allowances may be extended until the age of 21 on the recommendation of a competent education authority, when the education of the children is being continued at secondary schools, technical schools, or universities.

A.O. 220/1916 amends Warrants of May 21 and November 26, 1915. To the latter is added the provision that allowance may be granted to children between the ages of 18 and 21 'provided the education had been continued from the age of 18.'

The Committee is empowered to make annual grants to Day School children between 5 and 13 years of age not exceeding £20 and £5 expenses per annum.

Children between 13 and 21 years of age, £25 and £10 expenses per annum.

Under 21 at Boarding School or College away from home, £50 per annum. This grant is issuable to the children of officers and men alike.

Provided that (1) any scholarship or exhibition held by the child shall be taken into consideration in determining the amount of any such grant; (2) attendance shall be only sanctioned at a school or institution providing higher education recognized by the Central or

Local Educational authority as efficient, or specially approved by such authority or by the Special Geants Committee for the purpose ; (3) the payment of the grant shall be conditional upon satisfactory reports being received upon the industry and conduct of the child ; and (4) that the amount of any State educational allowance shall be deducted from any such grant.

An education grant or grant for training may be given irrespective of any supplementary allowance or special allowance and notwithstanding that the limit of amount or proportion of pre-War income specified in any regulation relating thereto may thereby be exceeded.

In any case where the maximum amount that can be allowed under these regulations, together with any pension or grant payable, is less than the amount previously received by the applicant by way of pension and supplementary pension or special temporary allowance, the Special Grants Committee may grant such a sum as may be necessary to make up the deficiency.

The Special Grants Committee is thus enabled to continue assistance at a rate not less generous than that already granted to the same applicant under the regulations now superseded.

In any case not coming within the provisions as above where it appears to a Local Committee that, owing to the special circumstances of the case, a supplementary allowance, special allowance or gratuity ought to be given, the Local Committee may refer such case to the Special Grants Committee for consideration, and the Special Grants Committee may, by resolution, grant a special allowance, supplementary allowance or gratuity in such case as they think fit, provided always that such special allowance or supplementary allowance shall not exceed the limits in the foregoing regulations contained in the case of a disabled sailor or soldier, widow or dependant, or child, respectively, and that no gratuity shall exceed the sum of £10.

Any case in which, in the opinion of the Local Committee there is serious hardship and which does not come within but is not in terms excluded from the foregoing

regulation, should be submitted to the Special Grants Committee for consideration under this regulation.

Under the regulations no award can be made for a longer period than six months.

Shortly before the expiration of the period of the award the Local Committee should furnish a further report of the case and notify any alteration in the circumstances of the recipient.

**Conditions.** Before an application for a special allowance can be considered it is necessary to establish the following facts—

(1) That there has been a change in the financial circumstances of the applicant owing to a serious diminution in his or her earning capacity, or owing to his death or loss of earning capacity of the principal contributor to his or her support, and that such change would have caused the applicant to stand in need of contribution from the deceased sailor or soldier.

(2) That the income of the deceased sailor or soldier would have permitted him to make a contribution.

(3) That it is reasonable to suppose that the deceased sailor or soldier would have been willing to make a contribution.

# TREATMENT AND TRAINING

## TREATMENT AND TRAINING INSTRUCTIONS

**The New Proposals.** Arrangements have been made by the Ministry of Pensions for the administration of Article 6 of the Royal Warrant 29/3/17. These arrangements are referred to and under the control of the disablement sub-Committee appointed by the Local Committee under Section 2 (7) of the Naval and Military War Pensions, etc., Act, 1917, or of the Local Committee itself.

The treatment provided is at the cost of the Ministry of Pensions and may be given to any discharged disabled man whose condition is due to, or has been aggravated by his War service, if such treatment is required. Treatment may be given also to the man whose incapacity is not due to Military service ; in such a case the provision will only extend for twelve months after the termination of the War.

**Duties of Local Committee.** The Local Committee must be satisfied with the nature of the man's incapacity and that it is due to or connected with his disablement, and also with the Institution in which he is to be treated or trained and the training or treatment to be given is necessary. Any disabled man who applies to a Local Committee will be referred for medical examination in the first instance to a medical referee. These officials are to be appointed for all districts.

**Treatment.** Travelling and out-of-pocket expenses incurred by the man for purposes in connection with his examination and treatment may be paid by the Local Committee. The Committee may also determine the period for which treatment shall be given, but in cases

where the period is likely to extend over six months, the Committee must report the case to the Ministry of Pensions and must not continue such treatment without the sanction of the Ministry of Pensions. If a disabled man refused to accept the treatment offered, the facts of the case will be laid by the Local Committee before the Ministry of Pensions, who will decide whether such refusal was reasonable or otherwise with a view to the application of the penalty provided by Article 4 of the Royal Warrant. If the man leaves the Institution before the period of treatment is completed, or if an out-patient refuses to continue to carry out such treatment as may be prescribed, or act in a fashion likely to retard his recovery, the Local Committee may cancel the provision of such treatment and any allowances made to the man or to his family.

**Training.** Men whose disablement is determined to be due to or aggravated by War service may receive training in any agricultural college, farm colony, or other Institution, establishment or Society by the Board of Agriculture and Fisheries or the Board of Agriculture for Scotland, or the Department of Agriculture, Technical Instruction, for Ireland. Training may also be given in any workshop or factory, subject to certain clearly defined conditions. It is not intended that the training of disabled men shall conflict with the interests of employers and employees in any trade, and special instructions may from time to time be issued on the subject. In deciding as to the training to be provided, the following factors are to be taken into consideration—

1. The man's occupation.
2. Suitability of the intended occupation to the man's age, disablement, and physical condition.
3. Recommendation (if any) as to training.
4. The opportunities for earning a permanent livelihood in the occupation intended.

**Allowances.** If the Local Committees are satisfied that a man for whom training has been provided is not taking full advantage of such training, the provision may

be withdrawn and also any allowances that may be in course of issue.

The amount of the allowances payable to men receiving treatment or training are determined according as the man is considered to be unable to provide for the support of himself and his family.

It is considered that a man is unable to provide this support if—

1. A case of treatment lasts more than a week and that during the period of treatment the man is not reasonably able to work, or should not, on medical grounds, be required to work at a remunerative occupation; or if—

2. In a case of training, the course occupies at least thirty hours per week.

Charges and allowances are payable by the Local Committee in the case of discharged men whose disablement is determined to be due to or aggravated by Military service; but in the case of men on account of unfitness not determined to be due to or aggravated by Military service, training is provided, and no allowance in respect to the man or his family is paid.

If a man is an inmate of an Institution for treatment or training other than an asylum for the insane, he may be credited with the amount according to his rank if he is in receipt of outpatient's treatment or training, otherwise than as an inmate of an Institution. The Local Committee will pay the whole sum set forth in the Schedule without any deduction for maintenance. In either case the wife of the man, if he is married, is entitled to the sum of 13*s*. 9*d*. per week, or such other sum as may be issuable on account of her husband's rank, with allowances for children. If the man is unmarried, the dependent parent or parents may receive a sum not exceeding 10*s*. weekly, and an unmarried wife may receive a similar amount, with allowances for the man's children according to scale. Any other dependant than these may receive an amount not exceeding 5*s*. per week. If the man lives at home during treatment or training, he is entitled to receive the amount set forth in the Schedule, with children's allowances, but

no allowance is issuable in such cases in respect of a wife. If during the period of treatment or training the man receives a regular wage from an employer, the allowances payable to him are to be reduced by the amount of such wage or such an amount as may be determined, and in the case of treatment these allowances are not payable for a period exceeding six months, unless a report is made by the Committee and the sanction of the Ministry of Pensions shall be obtained.

**On Discharge from Institution.** When the man is discharged from an Institution at the completion of his period of treatment or training, any balance of allowance due to him in respect of that period is to be paid, provided that the period of treatment or training deemed necessary by the Local Committee has been complete.

All charges and allowances in respect to the man and his family are paid by the Ministry of Pensions in the case of—

1. Men admitted to asylums for the insane.
2. Men admitted on discharge from the service to sanatoria or other Institutions for tuberculosis.
3. Or admitted to Institutions for the treatment or training under arrangements made by the Ministry of Pensions.
4. Or any class of case in respect of which the Ministry may at any time hold themselves responsible.

If the treatment provided does not oblige the man to live away from home, or otherwise render him incapable of providing for his own support and that of his family, the allowances are not issuable; but on application, if it is shown that such treatment involves a loss of wages or travelling expenses, or both, there may be paid to the man as a supplementary allowance an amount not exceeding 1*s.* an hour up to a maximum of 10*s.* per week.

**The Alternative Pension.** A disabled man receiving treatment or training, and able to show that the allowances paid to him are less than the alternative pension to which he would have been entitled under Article 3 of the Royal Warrant, may make application to the Local Committee, which body is required to assess the amount

of the alternative pension ; and if the assessment is confirmed, he may, in lieu of the allowance, be paid, 'out of any alternative pension assessed by the Ministry the allowance so assessed, providing that the amount paid directly to the wife, family or dependants of the man shall not be less than the amount they would otherwise have received' through the Local Committee.

If a disabled man dies in an Institution to which he had been admitted under these arrangements, the expenses of his burial may be paid within the sum of £4.

The period of training shall not exceed four months, unless before the commencement of that period the conditions of the trade are shown to require a longer period.

**Treatment: Special Cases.** The provisions of Article 6 of the Royal Warrant do not apply to men discharged on account of incapacity not determined to be due to or aggravated by War service. Such cases are usually provided for under Article 7 (2) by the payment of a gratuity. Provision has been made, however, that while such cases are not eligible for treatment and training with full allowances, treatment may be given for cases where the incapacity which necessitates treatment is connected with the incapacity for which the man was discharged from Military service.

**Tuberculosis.** When a man is about to be discharged from the service on account of tuberculosis, and where it is deemed that exceptional treatment is necessary, the Insurance Commissioners will obtain the man's admission to an Institution. In these cases the Ministry of Pensions will make all allowances to the man and his family or dependants.

**Insanity.** Where an insane man is removed to a Poor Law Institution after discharge pending admission to the asylum, the Local Committee is instructed to see that arrangements are made as quickly as possible for his removal from the workhouse to the asylum as a Service patient, and the Ministry of Pensions will in all such cases be responsible for all charges and allowances so far as the latter are payable in respect of the man and his family.

**Epilepsy.** In the case of an epileptic removed to an

Institution, all payments to the Institution and allowances (if any) due to the man and his family are payable by the Ministry of Pensions.

**Paralysis.** In the case of paralysed men removed to Institutions on discharge, the Ministry of Pensions is responsible for all payments to the Institution and for allowances to the man and his family. If a man is removed to an Institution after his discharge, the Local Committee is responsible for these payments, unless the man is incurable, when the Ministry of Pensions takes entire responsibility for their continuation.

**Specific Injuries.** In the case of a man removed to Roehampton, or any other auxiliary hospital, for the purpose of refitting of an artificial limb, the payment of the man's pension and allowance will be arranged by the Ministry of Pensions, as is also the case with blind men who are sent to St. Dunstan's Hospital, or other similar Institution.

The Scale of Allowances payable to disabled men and their wives is as follows :—

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance in respect of man. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|---|
| | | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Warrant Officers, Class I. | Armament-Serjeant-Major.<br>Armourer-Serjeant-Major.<br>Bandmaster.<br>Barrack-Serjeant-Major.<br>Conductor (Army Ordnance Corps).<br>Corporal-Major.<br>Farrier-Corporal-Major.<br>Farrier-Serjeant-Major.<br>Garrison-Serjeant-Major.<br>Master Gunner, 1st Class.<br>,, ,, 2nd Class.<br>Mechanist-Serjeant-Major.<br>Regimental Serjeant-Major.<br>Schoolmaster (who has been promoted to Class I. Warrant Rank).<br>Staff Serjeant-Major.<br>Sub-Conductor (Army Ordnance Corps).<br>Superintending Clerk. | 42 6* | 21 3 |
| Warrant Officers, Class II., or Non-Commissioned Officers, Class I. | Battery-Serjeant-Major.<br>Company-Serjeant-Major.<br>Garrison Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Master Gunner, 3rd Class.<br>Quartermaster-Corporal-Major (Household Cavalry).<br>Regimental Quartermaster - Serjeant.<br>Schoolmaster (when not a Warrant Officer, Class I).<br>Squadron-Corporal-Major (Household Cavalry).<br>Squadron-Serjeant-Major.<br>Troop-Serjeant-Major. | 37 6* | 18 9 |

* Subject to deductions as specified.

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance in respect of man. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|---|
| | | *s. d.* | *s. d.* |
| Non-Commissioned Officers, Class II. | Battery-Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Colour-Serjeant.<br>Company-Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Squadron-Quartermaster-Corporal.<br>Squadron-Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Staff-Corporal (Household Cavalry).<br>Staff-Serjeant.<br>Troop-Quartermaster-Serjeant. | 35 0* | 17 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officers, Class III. | Corporal of Horse (Household Cavalry)<br>Serjeant. | 32 6* | 16 3 |
| Non-Commissioned Officers, Class IV. | Bombardier.<br>Corporal.<br>Second Corporal.<br>Also men in Class V., after—<br>(*a*) 5 years' service as Bandsmen or Trumpeters of Cavalry.<br>(*b*) 4 years' service with Military Police.<br>(*c*) 1 year's service as Saddler or Saddle-tree-maker (Household Cavalry). | 30 0* | 15 0 |
| Class V. | Driver<br>Gunner<br>Pioneer (Royal Engineers)<br>Private<br>Sapper<br>Trooper<br>(When not entitled by service in the Band or as a Trumpeter of Cavalry or as a Saddler or Saddle-tree-maker in the Household Cavalry to rank in Class IV.) | 27 6* | 13 9 |

* Subject to deductions as specified.

**Allowances to Seamen and Marines.** As regards the disabled seaman or marine the appropriate allowance is arrived at by deducting from the man's *actual* pension the amount which corresponds to the degree of disablement, together with the amount allowed in respect of children, and adding to the *remainder* of the pension the sum of 27*s.* 6*d.*

SCALE OF ALLOWANCES PAYABLE TO WIVES OF SEAMEN AND MARINES

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|
| | | *s.* *d.* |
| Marine Warrant Officers (Class I.). | R. M. Gunner.<br>Physical Training Instructors at Eastney and Deal.<br>Serjeant-Major.<br>Bandmasters.<br>Superintendent Clerk.<br>Schoolmaster (after 12 years' service).<br>Bandmaster (School of Music).<br>Hospital Staff-Serjeant. | 21 3 |
| Marine Warrant Officers (Class II.). | Staff Clerk (R.M.O.).<br>Schoolmaster (under 12 years' service).<br>Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Barrack Quartermaster-Serjeant.<br>Quartermaster-Serjeant Instructor.<br>Company-Serjeant-Major. | 18 9 |
| Chief Petty Officers and Colour-Serjeant. | Chief Petty Officer (O.S.).<br>,, Petty Officer (N.S.).<br>,, Petty Officer Telegraphist.<br>,, Armourer.<br>,, Bandmaster.<br>,, Carpenter's Mate.<br>,, Electrical Artificer. | 17 6 |

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|
| | | *s. d.* |
| Chief Petty Officers and Colour-Serjeant. | Chief Engine-Room Artificer.<br>„ Ship's Cook.<br>„ Shipwright.<br>„ Sick Berth Steward.<br>„ Stoker.<br>„ Writer.<br>„ Yeoman of Signals.<br>Electrical Artificer.<br>Engine-Room Artificer.<br>Mechanician.<br>Master-at-Arms.<br>Ship's Steward.<br>Naval Schoolmaster.<br>Chief Motor Mechanic.<br>Ward Master.<br>Colour-Serjeant. | 17 6 |
| First-Class Petty Officers (O.S.), Petty Officers (N.S.), Serjeants of Marines. | Petty Officer, 1st Class (O.S.).<br>Petty Officer (N.S.).<br>Chief Boatman.<br>Blacksmith.<br>Cooper.<br>Divisional Carpenter.<br>Carpenter's Mate.<br>Joiner.<br>Leading Stoker, 1st Class.<br>Painter.<br>Plumber.<br>Sailmaker.<br>Ship's Cook.<br>Ship's Corporal, 1st and 2nd Class.<br>Ship's Steward, 2nd Class.<br>Shipwright, 1st and 2nd Class.<br>Sick Berth Steward.<br>Stoker Petty Officer.<br>Writer, 1st Class.<br>Yeoman of Signals.<br>Wireless Telegraph Operator.<br>Petty Officer Mechanic.<br>Engineman, R.N.R.<br>Second Hand, R.N.R.<br>Serjeant (Marines). | 16 3 |

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|
| | | *s.* *d.* |
| Second-Class Petty Officers, Leading Rates, Corporals of Marines. | Commissioned Boatman.<br>Leading Boatman.<br>Leading Shipwright.<br>Leading Stoker, 2nd Class.<br>Ship's Cook, 2nd Class.<br>Yeoman of Signals, 2nd Class.<br>Stoker Petty Officer.<br>Armourer's Mate.<br>Band Corporal.<br>Blacksmith's Mate.<br>Cooper, 2nd Class.<br>Engine Room Artificer, 5th Class.<br>Leading Carpenter's Crew.<br>,, Cook's Mate.<br>,, Seaman.<br>,, Signalman.<br>,, Stoker.<br>,, Deck Hand.<br>,, Telegraphist.<br>Painter, 2nd Class.<br>Sailmaker's Mate.<br>Sick Berth Steward, 2nd Class.<br>Ship's Musician.<br>Shipwright.<br>Writer, 2nd Class.<br>Wireman, 1st Class.<br>Motor Mechanic.<br>Corporal.<br>Bombardier. | 15 0 |
| Naval Ratings below those described on Sheets 1 to 4 and Marines below Corporal. | A.B. (Able Seaman).<br>Ordinary Seaman.<br>Stoker, 1st Class.<br>Stoker, 2nd Class.<br>Signalman.<br>Air Mechanic.<br>Air Craftsman.<br>Armourer's Crew.<br>Bandsman.<br>Carpenter's Crew.<br>Boatman.<br>Cook's Mate.<br>Cooper's Crew.<br>Officer's Steward. | 13 9 |

| Classification. | Rank. | Allowance to wife. |
|---|---|---|
| | | *s. d.* |
| Naval Ratings below those described on Sheets 1 to 4 and Marines below Corporal. | Officer's Cook.<br>Sick Berth Attendant.<br>Ship's Steward Assistant.<br>Telegraphist.<br>Writer, 3rd Class.<br>Trimmer<br>Deck Hand } R.N.R.<br>Seaman<br>Wireman, 2nd Class.<br>Motor Mechanic.<br>Private<br>Gunner<br>Bugler } R.M.A.<br>Motor Driver | 13 9 |

ALLOWANCES FOR CHILDREN UNDER THE AGE OF 16

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| For a first child . . . . . | 5 | 0 |
| For a second child. . . . . | 4 | 2 |
| For a third child . . . . . | 3 | 4 |
| For each child after the third . . . | 2 | 6 |

## ALTERNATIVE PENSIONS

The Minister of Pensions has issued instructions for the assessment of alternative pensions as provided under Article 3 of the Royal Pay Warrant, 1917.

The instructions are lengthy and somewhat involved.

1. Attention is called to the amount of pension as determined in accordance with scale on the degree of disablement set forth in the Schedule of the Royal Warrant, and it is stated that the minimum pension awarded ' is determined not with reference to the individual man's capacity for earning a livelihood, but with reference to

the extent of physical disablement caused by injuries or disease.'

This pension is to be adjusted from time to time, and there is to be no inquiry made for the purpose of the minimum pension into the amount which the man is earning, or is capable of earning. The minimum pension is to be fixed temporarily at the highest rate of disablement, providing the man is not in a physical condition to use such working powers as he may possess.

**Disabled Men.** This pension is not intended to be contingent upon circumstances, nor is it liable to be adjusted according to the needs of the applicant, but will be made permanent at the discretion of the Minister of Pensions, at such rate or rates of wages as the man may have been capable of earning during any part of the first two years of currency of the pension, but the award will not be made until a minimum pension has been permanently fixed. In the award of an alternative pension, the man's pre-war earnings, also his present earning capacity, are determining factors, and no man who has been awarded a gratuity is eligible for an alternative pension.

**Pre-War Earnings.** The average weekly earnings of a man prior to the War are to be computed in the same manner as for the purposes of the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906, and may include, in addition to the ordinary rate of wages or fixed salary, payments for overtime or special services, commission on sale of goods, etc., in fact, any proved regular income from any source, providing that such income was earned. The period over which the computation extends is the twelve months preceding August, 1914. Periods of illness or interruptions that are unavoidable or due to some unforeseen cause are not included, or where work was discontinued, whether naturally or by custom; but if seasonal, or irregular, the interruptions are excluded. Where a man has been employed at different rates of remuneration in the course of the year, an average is taken, and where a man had not been in employment for the whole twelve months prior to August 14, the average earnings are to be computed for such less period of employment.

It is also provided that where a man has been employed by more than one employer, the average of his earnings shall be the total of the averages in each employment.

If a man, in addition to his usual employment with an employer, has followed a trade, business or profession, the net profits of such business, trade or profession are to be added to the average rate of his earnings.

The following table shows the Average Pay of Various Ranks of the Army—

| — | Per week. |
|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* |
| Warrant Officer, Class I. . . . . | 38 6 |
| Warrant Officer, Class II., and Non-Commissioned Officer, Class I. (Quartermaster-Serjeant) . . | 31 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class II. (Company-Quartermaster-Serjeant) . . . . . | 31 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class III. (Serjeant, etc.) | 20 0 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class IV. (Corporal, etc) | 14 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class V. (Private, etc.). | 10 6 |

The value of the emoluments of the Services at the outbreak of war are assessed in accordance with the following tables :—

SAILORS AND MARINES

| Rank or Rating at outbreak of War. | Value of Emoluments per week. |
|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* |
| I. Naval Ratings— | |
| Chief Petty Officer ratings. . . . | 21 0 |
| Petty Officers, Men and Boys . . . | 17 6 |
| II. Royal Marines— | |
| All ranks below Commissioned Officer . | 17 6 |
| III. Coast Guard Ratings— | |
| Chief Petty Officers . . . . . | 19 10 |
| Other Ratings . . . . . | 16 4 |

SOLDIERS

| Rank at outbreak of War. | Value of Emoluments per week. |
|---|---|
| | *s.* *d.* |
| Warrant Officer, Class I. . . . . | 28 0 |
| Warrant Officer, Class II., and Non-Commissioned Officer, Class I. (i.e., Quartermaster-Serjeant) . | 25 0 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class II. (Company-Quartermaster-Serjeant, etc.) . . Married | 21 0 |
| Do. do. do. . . Single * | 15 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class III. (Serjeant, etc.) Married | 20 0 |
| Do. do. do. . . Single * | 13 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class IV. (Corporal, etc.) Married | 20 0 |
| Do. do. do. . . Single * | 13 6 |
| Non-Commissioned Officer, Class V. (Private, etc.) Married | 20 0 |
| Do. do. do. . . Single * | 13 6 |

* 'Single men' includes all married men who were not on the married establishment (i.e., men married 'off the strength').

If a sailor or soldier was serving prior to the outbreak of the present War, his earnings are to be computed from his actual pay, to which computation there is to be added a sum representing the value of emoluments according to his rank or rating at the outbreak of the War.

In the case of soldiers who at the outbreak of War were serving in India or on Colonial Stations, and were in receipt of special Indian or Colonial rates of pay, the average pay of a man of similar rank serving at home, as set out in the table above, is taken as the soldier's pre-war earnings for the purpose of these instructions.

**Widows.** It is provided that the widow of a sailor or soldier may receive an alternative pension in lieu of widow's pension and children's allowance, not exceeding one-half the amount of the alternative pension which

would have been granted to her husband had he lived and been capable of supplementing the pension issued to him by his earnings.

The maximum alternative pension issuable to a widow and her children is 37*s.* 6*d.* per week. In assessing the alternative pension issuable, no account is taken of children, and the earnings, earning capacity, or other income of the widow are not taken into consideration.

In no case, however, 'will a supplementary allowance be granted which, together with the State pension, earnings or earning capacity, and other income, will make up a total sum in excess of £2 per week.' A supplementary allowance is not awarded in addition to the maximum pension, whether minimum or alternative.

**Widows married after Enlistment or Mobilization.** No alternative pension is issuable to the widow of a sailor or soldier married after the outbreak of War, or the date of enlistment, if subsequent to the outbreak of War.

In cases of exceptional hardship, application may be made through the Local Committee for supplementary pension.

**Temporary Pension to Widows under Article 15 of the New Pay Warrant.** Exceptional cases are provided for under the New Regulations, and where the death of a man has resulted from circumstances clearly due to his War service, and where the case is also one of exceptional hardship, supplementary allowance may be granted, with a maximum of 10*s.*, but in no case will an allowance be issued which together with the temporary pension exceeds the amount of the minimum pension for the widow and children which could have been granted under Articles 11 and 12 of the Pay Warrant.

Provision is made for dependants (parents) who come under the terms of Article 21 (1) and (2) of the Pay Warrant, and it is provided that where the maximum pension of 15*s.* per week is considered less than the pre-war dependence, and where exceptional hardship is evident, a supplementary allowance may be issued ; but such allowance with earnings and estimated earning capacity must

not exceed 80 per cent. of the pre-war dependence, and other income, or 30*s.* per week, whichever is the less.

**Other Dependants.** This includes relatives not covered by the previous paragraph, and unmarried wives (Class B). In cases of exceptional hardship, supplementary allowance may be issued where the pension awarded is less than the pre-War income. Such allowance, when added to the pension awarded, earnings or earning capacity, and other income, must not exceed ordinarily two-thirds of the pre-War dependence, earnings and other income, or 20*s.* per week, whichever is the less. In exceptional cases, however, an allowance may be awarded, in the case of a dependant, Class A, of a sum sufficient to make up the pension to the amount of the pre-War dependence.

**Post-War Dependants.** The provision made for dependants under Article 21 (4) of the Pay Warrant is by the New Regulations somewhat supplemented. Cases may arise where, owing to death, exceptional hardship has resulted. In such cases, supplementary allowance may be awarded. It must be shown, however, that the deceased soldier or sailor, had he lived, would have been in a position to contribute an increased amount towards the support of the dependant. No increase in wages due to War conditions will receive any consideration.

**Special Allowances.** In exceptional cases of hardship, a special allowance may be granted where no State pension is issuable, in the assessment of which allowance, earnings, earning capacity, and any other income, are taken into consideration.

It should be particularly noted that no case will be considered unless the death or disablement of the soldier or sailor was due to circumstances arising from service in the present War.

**Widows.** Applications for special allowance by the widow of a soldier or sailor must be supported by evidence to prove that—

(*a*) The man's death was due to circumstances arising from service in the present War. And

(*b*) That pension was not refused on account of the un-

satisfactory services of the man, or the unworthiness of the applicant.

The maximum allowance issuable to the widow is 10*s.* weekly, with allowances for children according to scale, as set forth in Article 12 of the New Pay Warrant. Ordinarily, the allowance issued will not exceed two-thirds of the pre-War income of the household.

**Dependants.** Especial reference is made in the New Regulations to 9 (*a*) Part II (Statutory Committee Regulations), which provides for an allowance in cases of hardship due to a change in the financial position of the family 'in consequence of which the parent or other relative would have become dependent upon the sailor or soldier.'

A certified statement, showing the pre-War or pre-enlistment earnings, must accompany the application, and it must also be shown that had the man lived, he would have been in a position to contribute to the dependant's support.

The allowance granted will not exceed 10*s.* per week, or the established dependency, whichever is the less.

**Disabled Men.** A special allowance in these cases is only issued where pension has been refused.

An allowance may be granted to the recipient of a gratuity under exceptional circumstances. The maximum grant is 20*s.* a week if separation allowance had been issued, with allowances for children, and 10*s.* a week in other cases.

In no case will an allowance be granted which, with the man's earnings, earning capacity, and other income, exceeds his pre-War earnings and other income.

If a gratuity has been awarded, the income value will be determined at the discretion of the Pensions Authority.

No supplementary allowance is issuable for a longer period than six months without survey.

**Apprentices.** Where it is claimed that a man had been serving as an apprentice for at least a year prior to the War, and that his claim or a claim in respect of him should be reckoned in accordance with Article 24 (6) of the New Warrant, it is provided that the indenture, contract,

or memorandum of apprenticeship (if any) shall be produced in support of the claim, but if no written contract has been entered into, a certificate signed by the employer as to the fact of apprenticeship, setting forth the amount of allowance or wages paid, the period of apprenticeship served, and the period which would have been served had the man not enlisted, must be produced. In lieu of the certificate, a statement signed by some responsible person other than the parents must be given testifying to the facts.

In case of dispute, the question may be referred to the representatives of the Trade Union or Trade Society of the district. If no written contract has been made, the question as to whether apprenticeship shall be admitted is at the discretion of the Minister of Pensions.

**Students and Articled Pupils.** In the case of a student or pupil, it is required that a certificate shall be produced, signed (*a*) by the Principal or Responsible Officer of the School, College or University of which the man was a member, or, in the case of an articled pupil, signed by the person or firm with whom he is articled. The certificate must show that the pupil had been—in the case of a student—continuously in attendance since the age of 16 until the commencement of the War, or date of enlistment, and in the case of an articled pupil, that the conditions of the articles had been observed. If no articles had been entered into in the case of a pupil, evidence must be furnished that the conditions observed were similar to those obtaining in an articled profession, but the question as to whether the claim of studentship or pupilage may be admitted is at the discretion of the Minister of Pensions.

**Men in Trade, Business, or Profession.** The pre-War earnings in cases of this character are to be calculated in the manner required under the Income Tax Acts for the purposes of assessment of Income Tax, Schedule D. In the case of an agriculturist, the applicant may have his earnings determined to be an amount equal to the amount of the earned or annual value, inclusive of tithe charges, of the lands occupied prior to August, 1914,

such rent or annual value to be estimated as required for the purposes of Income Tax.

The average profits are to be calculated over a period of three years prior to August 1, 1914, the exact date of computation to be that most convenient, having regard to the financial year in the business concerned.

If the business has not been in existence for three years prior to August 1, 1914, the profits are to be computed for the shorter period.

A claim that pre-War earnings for a trade, business or profession, exceeded £160 must be supported by—

1. A statement showing the amount of income tax assessment for the year 1914, based on the profits of the three preceding years; or—

2. If no assessment was made for that year, the amount of profits returned for assessment; or—

3. If no assessment or return was made, a statement to that effect.

The income as assessed for the purposes of income tax on the basis of profits of the business will be taken as income for the purpose of assessment of pre-War income; but there will be deducted from such assessment any sums included in respect of Interest, Annuities, Royalties, or other similar charges.

In the case of an agriculturist, where pre-War earnings are accepted as the amount of the rent or annual value of the lands occupied, a copy of the lease or agreement, or certificate showing the terms of such lease or agreement, together with the rent receipts for the year preceding August, 1914, must be produced. Any statement of accounts produced may be verified by examination of the books appertaining to the business, and, if necessary, an estimate may be made by reference to this or other evidence.

In the case of partnership, the profits are to be apportioned.

**Earning Capacity.** The second schedule of the instructions provides that the earning capacity of an applicant for alternative pension shall be considered in all cases, and is to be determined with strict reference to the earnings

of the man at the time of his application, and to the earnings which it is estimated he should be able to obtain if his condition is likely to improve. In estimating the earning capacity, the pre-War earnings of a man are to be considered, and his inability to obtain the same amount of remuneration must be proved. If the man is undergoing a course of treatment or training, it is provided that he shall be assumed not to possess any earning capacity if, during that period and in consequence of such treatment or training, he is not able to follow any remunerative occupation. If, on the other hand, he is able to follow a remunerative occupation, his earning capacity is to be assessed at the earnings he is able to obtain. Any assessment made is provisional during treatment or training, and the capacity of the man is again assessed at the termination of such period.

The earning capacity of a man who has received training under the terms of the Royal Warrant are to be assessed at the current rate of remuneration in the occupation for which he has been trained, subject to a reduction in the rate, having regard to his disablement.

The rate of remuneration is always to be taken as the standard rate for the trade or employment in the district in which the man resides.

It is further provided that the earnings of a disabled man, if less than his pre-War earnings, shall not be accepted as representing his earning capacity, unless it is provided that the wages he earns are reasonable for the work performed, having regard to its nature, the extent of his disablement, and the wages paid in the district; and that if the man is engaged in a remunerative occupation and not in employment, the profits of such occupation are not less than he might reasonably be expected to earn, if employed, having regard to his disablement, and also that the work in which the man is engaged is one he is most suitably and profitably able to undertake, having regard to his pre-War occupation, his disablement, and to the trades open to him for other employment and occupation.

These provisions are subject to the stipulation that the average earnings of a man shall be determined by his

immediate earnings and the earnings which he should be able to obtain if his condition improves.

## SIR HENRY NORMAN'S REPORT

The French method of treating sick and wounded soldiers is summarized as follows—

**Totally Disabled.** A pension is granted if they can live with friends. Otherwise they are supported in State Institutions, and it is suggested for this purpose to restore the Hôtel des Invalides, in Paris, to its original object.

**Blind.** These are trained in separate Institutions.

**Sick.** These, if they recover, return to the Army, or, if unfit for service, receive, if the unfitness is recognised as arising from their service, a permanent pension, or, otherwise, a provisional allowance.

**Functionally Injured.** These are treated in a centre of physiotherapy, whence in due course they return to the Army for active or base duties, or receive fixed permanent pension, and enter, at their own wish, a school of re-education.

**Amputations.** These enter a centre of surgical equipment, where they are fitted with artificial limbs, receive a permanent pension and enter, at their own wish, a school of re-education.

The men who have passed through a school of re-education are provided with work by an employment bureau.

SIR HENRY RECOMMENDS THAT—

The State should assume responsibility during a man's lifetime for the provision, repair, and replacement of artificial limbs and surgical appliances.

Pensions should be of two kinds, as in France. Those of men suffering from amputations, and men with permanent functional disablement should be divided into classes, according only to the nature of the invalidity. Once granted, these pensions should not be subject to withdrawal or modification for any reason whatever, and should have no relation whatever to a man's present or future industrial efficiency.

A higher pension should be given for an arm amputa-

tion than for a leg amputation. 'Functionally injured' men should be subject to periodical medical examination, and their allowances, divided into several classes, should increase or diminish as their invalidity becomes greater or less.

SIR HENRY POINTS OUT THAT—

Disabled soldiers fall into two classes: the hopelessly unfit, and those who by re-education may be restored to social and professional efficiency in varying degrees. With the first of these classes the National Office is not concerned, as they are the dependants of the State, helpless, and unable to earn anything. With regard to the second class, the task is to re-educate them and find work for them. Two courses are open—to attempt to refit the man for his accustomed surroundings, friends and circumstances, or to attempt to train him for a new type of work, which must in many cases mean a new type of life.

The French Government has adopted the first of these courses. Its principle is 'not to uproot the disabled man either from his previous locality or his previous employment. Industries in France are largely local, and it has been thought eminently desirable to keep the man industrially localized.' The National Office proposes that an organization shall exist in every industrial district of France for the mutilated and disabled of that district, where both technical re-education and employment will be provided for the men who joined the Army from there.

## EMPLOYMENT FOR SOLDIERS AND SAILORS DISABLED IN THE WAR

A report presented by the Committee appointed to investigate into the matter says—

We understand that in various quarters difficulties are apprehended in inducing employers to accept the services of partially disabled men by reason of the lia-

bility imposed on the employer by the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906, to pay compensation in respect of accidents arising out of and in the course of the workmen's employment. We thought it right, therefore, to make special inquiry with regard to this question; and we are assured that no such difficulty need be anticipated in cases where the employer is insured against this liability. It appears that so far as the insurance companies included in the Accident Offices Association are concerned the uniform premium ordinarily charged by the companies covers all classes of employees, whether able-bodied or partially disabled; and that, save in very exceptional cases, no additional premium is charged on account of physical disability.

We think, therefore, that no objection is likely to be taken on this ground to the employment of a disabled man, except where the employer had refrained from covering his liability by insurance. Any such employer would usually be in a small way of business and would employ only a small number of workmen.

The Committee recommended that the care of the sailors and soldiers disabled in the War is a duty which should be assumed by the State.

This duty should include—

(*a*) The restoration of the man's health where practicable.

(*b*) The provision of training facilities, if he desires to learn a new trade.

(*c*) The finding of employment for him, when he stands in need of such assistance (C.D. 7915/1915).

In reply to a question in the House of Commons on November 15, 1916, Mr. Pretyman said that, 'The Accident Offices Association have decided not to make any increase in the premium charged for Employers' Liability Insurance, owing to the employment of disabled soldiers and sailors.'

It is unfortunately only too true that employers of labour are taking advantage of such of their men as were apprentices prior to enlistment or mobilization. In many cases men who had not served the full period of

their apprenticeship upon joining the Colours, and who later were released from Military service to undertake with their former employers munition work, have been compelled to accept the scale of wages paid prior to their enlistment or mobilization, i.e. the apprentice scale.

Many firms at the outbreak of War decided to pay such of their employees who volunteered for service, or who were called up under mobilization, full wages less Government allowance and such other income as they might be entitled to by reason of their membership in trades or beneficial organizations. Attempts have been made to set aside these promises, but it has been held that an employee of such firm is entitled to the benefits th s conferred, and that no subsequent limitation or withdrawal can be permitted in the case of a man to whom the offer originally applied.

## HOME OF RECOVERY FOR NEURASTHENICS

A Home of Recovery for the cure of neurasthenia and other functional diseases of the nervous system, in the case of discharged soldiers and sailors, has been opened at Golder's Green.

This Institution has been provided in accordance with arrangements made by the Joint Institutional Committee of the Pensions Ministry, the British Red Cross Society and Order of St. John, the War Office and the Statutory Committee. The capital expenditure has been provided by the Joint War Committee of the British Red Cross and Order of St. John, while the cost of maintenance will be defrayed by the Pensions Ministry in accordance with the terms of the New Warrant. The Home is under the management of the Maida Vale Hospital for Nervous Diseases, and the honorary medical staff are the physicians.

Men suffering from the results of shell shock, with inability to wa k, and certain forms of paralysis, tremors, stammering, or depression, are especially suitable for treatment.

There are workshops in which patients may obtain occupation, and if desired, skilled instruction.

Arrangements are made to find suitable work for patients when they leave.

**Special Provision for the Families of Patients.** To those who desire to enter the Home, the following amounts will be assured by the Ministry of Pensions—

| Single Men. | Married Men. |
|---|---|
| 27*s.* 6*d.* per week. | 27*s.* 6*d.* per week. |
| Allowance will be made for dependants. | 13*s.* 9*d.* for wife. |
| | 5*s.* for first child. |
| | 4*s.* 2*d.* for second child. |
| | 3*s.* 4*d.* for third child. |
| | 2*s.* 6*d.* for each of the other children. |

A small deduction will be made from the man's allowance for his board, but the treatment will be provided free.

Applications for admission to be made to—

Sir John Collie, M.D.,
78, Lancaster Gate,
W.2.

## SPECIAL AURAL BOARD

Major Dundas Grant, consulting surgeon to the Central London Nose, Throat and Ear Hospital, has been appointed chairman of the Special Aural Board which has been set up by the Pensions Minister to deal with cases of deaf discharged soldiers.

The Aural Board has arranged a class for the instruction of deaf soldiers in lip-reading. It is being held at the College of the National Association for the Oral Instruction of the Deaf at 11, Fitzroy Square, of which Mr. Sibley Haycock is the principal.

## COMMITTEE ON INSTITUTIONAL TREATMENT

The following gentlemen have been appointed as advisers to the Committee in the special branches of its works—

Neurasthenia : Col. Sir John Collie.
Epilepsy : W. C. Hubert Bond.
Tuberculosis : Major H. S. Hartley, C.V.O.
Paraphlegm : Dr. R. Fox.
Finance : Sir H. Haward.

The work of the Committee is confined to initiatory, co-ordinating, advising and supervising functions. The actual management and administration of institutions is undertaken by Local Committees, or is supervised by the local authorities.

## DEMOBILIZATION

It has been provided that enlisted apprentices who wish to complete their time after the War shall, if over age of 21 years, receive wages at least equal to those received by the builders' labourer, with progressive increases year by year until they have finished their apprenticeship. Apprentices on War work, or who have been working at their trade in the Army, are to be reckoned as completing part of their time. The apprentices who joined the Army during the last year of apprenticeship are to receive their indentures and be classed as journeymen.

The whole agreement is subject to the provisions of the local joint boards of employers and employed, and final disputes will be settled by the National Conciliation Board.

# INSURANCE

## THE SOLDIER AND SAILOR AND THE NATIONAL INSURANCE ACTS

**Contributions.** During the period of a man's service, contributions at the rate of threepence per week—of which one-half is deducted from his pay—are made in respect of—

All active service ratings in the Navy and Marines, and all soldiers in the Regular Army (except Naval Warrant officers, Royal Marine gunners, and re-engaged men who have completed the term of their first engagement and have elected not to contribute for the period of their re-engagement).

All men of the Army Reserve and Special Reserve.

All men of the Naval Reserves, Territorial Forces, and men entered or enlisted in the Navy or Army for the period of the War, WHO WERE INSURED AS CIVILIANS BEFORE ENLISTMENT OR MOBILIZATION.

**Insurance Options.** In the case of men of the Naval Reserves, Territorial Forces, King Edward's Horse, and the Irish Horse, and of men who specially entered or enlisted in either the Navy or Army for the period of the War, who were not insured before enlistment or mobilization, it is optional as to whether they insure or not. If they elect not to insure, they will not be entitled to maternity benefits during the War, nor to admission to the Navy and Army Insurance Fund on their discharge (A.O. 378/1914, A.O. 13/1915).

**The New Armies.** A recruit on first joining should be furnished with a special postcard (Army Form O. 1847), on which he should report his enlistment to the Society

of which he is a member, or, if he is not a member of a Society, to the Insurance Commissioners, London, S.W.

Soldiers of the New Armies who, at the time of enlistment, were not insurable under the Act have the option of remaining uninsured, provided they elect to be exempted within one month from the date of enlistment or embodiment.

Men who joined the Colours under the Group System or are called up under the Military Service Acts, 1916, are treated for Insurance purposes as if they had enlisted directly into the New Army.

While in the Reserve waiting to be called up they are treated as civilians for Insurance purposes.

They are not treated as Reservists of the Regular Army who, when called up on mobilization, are insured at once in all cases (A.C.I. 496/1916).

**Reserve Officers, etc.** The National Insurance (Navy and Army) Act, 1914, provides for the continuance in Insurance during the period of the War of officers of the Reserve and of the Territorial Force, and of officers granted temporary commissions who were insured (either as civilians or as soldiers) at the time they were appointed to commissions as officers.

Every officer who was insured as a civilian should obtain from his Commanding Officer two copies of Army Form O. 1847. One copy should be forwarded to the agent, paymaster, or other officer, by whom his pay is being issued, and the other copy to his Approved Society, or, if he is not a member of an Approved Society, to the National Health Insurance Commissioners, Delaware Road, Maida Hill, London, W.

In the case of an officer commissioned from the ranks, the paymaster of the unit in which he was serving as a soldier will, when adjusting his pay account, prepare Army Form O. 1845 in respect of his service in the ranks and forward it to the officer by whom his pay is being issued, who will note the date of enlistment so as to be in a position to issue a full certificate on Army Form O. 1844, or O. 1845, on termination of service, demobilization or death, as the case may require.

The contribution will be 3*d.* a week as for soldiers. The paying officer will recover the officer's share of 1½*d.* from his pay.

On the termination of service, or demobilization, or death of an officer, the same procedure will be followed as in the case of a soldier.

In the case of an officer commissioned from the ranks, the certificate on Army Form O. 1844 or O. 1845 will include the period of service as a soldier as well as that as an officer.

**Discharged Men.** By Statutory Order 801/1916, Article 25 of the National Health Insurance (Arrears) Consolidated Regulations, 1916, was amended by the publication of the following—

'Notwithstanding anything contained in these Regulations, no man discharged from service as a seaman, marine or soldier, after the beginning of the present War, shall be suspended from or cease to be entitled to medical or sanatorium benefit on account of arrears.'

**Civilian Contributions.** The civilian contributions of a man in the Services are not paid during his term of service. His contribution or arrears card, and also any notice that may be sent to him after his enlistment or mobilization, should be endorsed 'enlisted' or 'called up,' as the case may be, and returned—

To his Approved Society, if he is a member of a Society, or—

To the Insurance Commissioners of the County in which he was resident if he is not a member of an Approved Society.

A specially addressed envelope for the purpose can be obtained at any post office.

His Insurance book should in all cases be kept; it will be necessary if maternity benefit is claimed, and in any case will be required on his discharge.

**Men Engaged in Munition Work.** Soldiers engaged upon munition work retain the rights to which they are entitled under Army Regulations. If injured or killed while upon munition work, the employer is liable to pay such compensation as may be due under the terms of the Work-

men's Compensation Act and of the Employers' Liability Act or at Common Law. If the benefits due under the Army Regulations are in excess of the compensation receivable from the employer, the War Office will make good the deficiency (A.C.I. 851/1916).

Dr. Macnamara, the Parliamentary Secretary for the Admiralty, stated in the House of Commons on February 14, 1916, that civilians employed in naval establishments are awarded compensation by the Treasury under the Superannuation Acts, 1887, and the Admiralty has no power to augment allowances which are assessed in accordance with the provisions of those Acts.

Any claim which a workman engaged upon civilian employment, directly or indirectly connected with the War, and in respect of which his eligibility for pension or gratuity is recognized under the Injuries in War (Compensation) Acts, may have under the Workmen's Compensation Acts is limited by the amendment to the National Insurance Act set forth in the National Insurance (Part I) Amendment Act, 1915, which provides that—

'Where any pension, grant or allowance has been granted to any insured person in pursuance of the Injuries in War (Compensation) Act, 1914, or the Injuries in War (Compensation) Act, 1914 (Session 2), or the Injuries in War (Compensation) Act, 1915, or any similar Act which may hereafter be passed and with respect to which Regulations made by the Insurance Commissioners with the consent of the Treasury provide that this Section shall apply, then as from the prescribed date such pension, grant or allowance shall, for the purposes of Section 11 of the National Insurance Act, 1911, be treated as if it were compensation under the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906.'

Men engaged upon war work abroad are provided for by the National Insurance (Part II) Amendment Act, 1915 (1), which sets forth that—

'Where a workman during the continuance of the present War and a period of one year thereafter is or has been employed outside the United Kingdom in an insured

trade within the meaning of Part II of the National Insurance Act, 1911, on work connected with or arising out of the present War, and the contributions, which would be payable in respect of that workman if he were employed in the United Kingdom, are or have been by agreement between the workman and his employer paid in the manner prescribed by that Part of that Act, those contributions shall be deemed to have been properly paid for the purposes of that Part of that Act, and the workman shall accordingly for those purposes be deemed to be employed in an insured trade.'

**Maternity Benefit.** Maternity benefit is the only benefit payable while a man is in the service. The full benefit of 30*s.* is payable whether a man is 'married on the strength' or not, and whether or not he is a member of an Approved Society, providing that for twenty-six weeks he has paid twenty-six contributions, towards which the contributions paid in the service count.

The benefit is payable to the wife, and must be claimed by her.

To avoid delay in the payment of maternity benefit, application should be made at least a month before the expected date of confinement.

If the man is not a member of an Approved Society, information of the fact should be given when the application is made, as to whether any cards were stamped for him before he entered the service. If he is a Deposit Contributor, his book should be enclosed when the application is made, if possible, and, if not, the number of the book should be given. In every case full particulars should be given, showing the husband's full name, his ship or regiment, his rating or rank, and his official or regimental number.

Soldiers who are members of Approved Societies and who are serving abroad, and whose wives are living abroad with them, may be paid maternity benefit by the Navy and Army Insurance Fund instead of being claimed from the Approved Society of which the man is a member. Paragraph 4 of A.O. 94/14 is in consequence cancelled.

Soldiers recalled from the Army Reserve, Special Reserve and Territorial Force who are not members of Approved Societies, should claim maternity benefit in respect to their wives to the Regimental Paymaster and not the Insurance Commissioners. This provision is made by A.O. 281/1915, and cancels paragraph 5 of A.O. 378/1914.

**Procedure in Case of Death, etc.** In the case of a soldier who dies or deserts, his card will be stamped to the date up to which pay is charged and will be forwarded to the National Health Insurance Commission, 29, Queen Anne's Gate, London, S.W., with a note showing the date of decease or desertion. If a man is discharged or demobilized, the card will be stamped to the date of discharge or demobilization, and will be forwarded to the Commanding Officer of the man's unit, who will pass it on to the man for his disposal.

**Benefits on Discharge.** The contributions paid by the man, and by the authorities on his account during the term of his service, entitle him on his discharge, provided he remains insured under the Acts, to the following benefits—

1. Medical Benefit; that is, the attendance of a doctor and medicine.
2. Sanatorium Benefit; that is, treatment in a sanatorium or in some other way in case of consumption.
3. Maternity Benefit.
4. Sickness Benefit, ordinarily 10*s*. a week for the first twenty-six weeks of incapacity from following employment.
5. Disablement Benefit at the rate of 5*s*. a week after the Sickness Benefit has been paid for the full twenty-six weeks.

It should be noted that neither maternity nor sickness benefit are payable until the contributor has been insured for twenty-six weeks, and has paid twenty-six contributions, to which those made before or after entering the service count.

A man who is granted a pension for total disablement will, as a condition attaching to the pension, have his

normal rate of sickness benefit reduced by 5*s*. a week and will not be entitled to disablement benefit. No reduction is made in the case of a partial disablement pension or of pensions other than those granted in consequence of the present War.

Medical, sanatorium and maternity benefits are not affected by the receipt of a total disablement pension.

Men receiving pensions other than for total disablement will receive the normal benefits under the Acts, subject to the usual conditions.

The ordinary weekly rate of sickness benefit for men over 21 is 10*s*., but men who first became insured after October 12, 1913, get lower rates (with a minimum of 5*s*.), according to age at entry into Insurance. Many discharged men who were not insured before enlistment will therefore get a lower rate than 10*s*. a week.

*If benefit is urgently required before receipt of the discharge postcard* (O. 1845) the man while waiting for the postcard should take his Army Discharge Certificate (B. 2079) or certificate of transfer to the Reserve to the office of the local Insurance Committee. If he is a member of an Approved Society he should also take his Discharge Certificate (B. 2079) or certificate of transfer to the local Representative of his Society.

*He should on no account part with his discharge certificate* (B. 2079) *or certificate of transfer to the Reserve.*

It should be noted that over issues of benefits are recoverable under the terms of the National Insurance (Part I) Amendment Act, 1915, 1 (2), which provides that—

'The Society, Committee, or other body by which the sickness and disablement benefits of any such person are administered, may, pending the settlement of his claim for pension, pay him benefit at the unreduced rate, and where benefit at the unreduced rate has been paid pending such settlement or has been paid between the prescribed date and the passing of this Act the amount of the difference between the benefit at the unreduced rate and at the reduced rate for such period shall be treated as an advance, and shall, without prejudice to any other

method of recovery, be recoverable by deductions from or suspension of any benefits which may subsequently become payable to the person in question, or may, if the Admiralty or Army Council think fit, be repaid by them out of any arrears in their hands of the pension due to that person.'

**A.S. 183.** Circular A.S. 183, issued by the National Health Insurance Commission, is of vital importance in this connection. The purport of the Circular is to make clear the conditions under which payment of Sickness or Disablement Benefit may be continued to persons who have become permanently incapable of following their ordinary employment, with particular reference to the case of soldiers discharged with pensions.

The view is taken that, although an insured person may be incapable of following his ordinary occupation, he is not to be regarded as incapable of work for that reason, and, consequently, is not necessarily to be considered as complying with the statutory requirement for Sickness or Disablement Benefit.

If, however, it is reasonably apparent that he may, after a period of convalescence, be able to resume his pre-War occupation, he may be regarded as temporarily incapable of work, and benefits issued to him accordingly.

The Insurance Commissioners express the opinion that while a total Disablement Pension may be granted in the first instance to a man who, in consequence of wounds, or disease, arising out of his Military service has been rendered incapable of following his pre-War occupation, that pension should on review be reduced to a Partial Disablement Pension, when and if the man has become fit for and can be reasonably expected to undertake some other form of work.

Special reference is made to the National Insurance (Part I Amendment) Act, 1915, and the view is held that a man to whom a Total Disablement Pension has been granted may be expected to satisfy the conditions laid down in this Act, and consequently to be entitled to the reduced benefits therein provided; whereas a man

receiving a Partial Disablement Pension may not be entitled to such benefits, '*unless incapacitated by some disease or disablement other than that in respect of which he was discharged from Military service.*'

The onus of proof as to a man's title to benefit is thrown to a very large extent upon the Society of which he is a member.

The necessity for this will be clear from the fact that a man may be in receipt of a Total Disablement Pension temporarily and yet have sufficiently recovered as to be capable of work, while on the other hand a man may be temporarily in receipt of a Partial Disablement Pension only and yet be totally incapable of work. It follows then that each case must be judged upon its merits. The outstanding point in this connection is that capacity for work must not be interpreted as capacity for pre-War occupation.

The Society is instructed that in the case of a man who is in receipt of a Partial Disablement Pension, but whose condition has deteriorated since the award, benefit shall be paid if the deterioration appears to be temporary in character on medical evidence; but if the deterioration appears to be permanent and progressive, the Pension Authorities should be requested to review the case with the object of revision. Pending such reconsideration the Society should continue to pay the benefit.

The burden likely to be borne by the Society in consequence of the inadequacy of the pension or allowance provided from the State funds is pointed out, and the Society is urged to secure, if possible, relief. That is to say, an increased pension for its member. It is pointed out that the Society should only act upon medical evidence which definitely asserts that the present incapacity is due to an injury or disease directly attributable to War service.

A note to the circular states that 'Societies should inform any of their members who are known to be incapable of work, although for some reason not entitled to benefit, of the necessity of continuing to furnish medical

certificates in order that their arrears during sickness may be remedied.'

It is important to note that special arrangements are in force for offering to tuberculous soldiers residential treatment immediately on discharge from a military hospital where the officer in charge of the hospital has certified that such treatment is essential.

But any discharged soldier who is suffering from tuberculosis may, and should in his own interest, at once apply to the local Insurance Committee for sanatorium benefit. This may take the form of residential treatment in an institution or of treatment at a dispensary, or in the patient's own home.

**Procedure on Discharge.** It is necessary, in order that the soldier on discharge may claim the benefits to which he is entitled under the Act, that he shall have documentary proof that his contributions may have been paid during service. This evidence is provided by the stamped card which should be handed to him on discharge (Army Form O. 1845), which shows the period of service and that insurance has been credited up to the date of discharge. No card is issued to a man who was not insured during enlistment and has elected to remain uninsured during service. Similar cards (Army Form O. 1844) are forwarded to the Insurance Commissioners directly the death or desertion of a soldier is notified.

A discharged soldier who is a member of an Approved Society should complete and sign the Army Form O. 1845, and forward it to the secretary or local agent of his Approved Society. He should ask the secretary or agent to give him a contribution card, and to arrange for a medical card to be sent to him at once.

If the man is incapable of work (whether by wounds or disease), he should obtain weekly medical certificates from his panel doctor and send them to his Society.

A discharged soldier who is not a member of an Approved Society should complete and sign the Army Form O. 1845, and send it to the Insurance Commissioners, Maida Hill, London, W. He will then receive a form of inquiry to fill up in order that the Commissioners may

know whether he is entitled to receive benefits out of the Navy and Army Insurance Fund.

On his discharge he should at once endeavour to join an Approved Society, and if he can do so, the amount necessary to entitle him to its benefits will be transferred from the Navy and Army Insurance Fund to the Society. If he has been discharged on other than medical grounds he may be accepted by a Society; but if on account of the condition of his health no Society will accept him, he may apply to be attached to the Navy and Army Insurance Fund, but he must make application within three months from the date of his discharge, and produce evidence of the state of his health, and also that he has been refused admission to an Approved Society.

The National Insurance (Navy and Army) Act, 1914 (Session 2), relates in this connection that—

'The requirements as to proof of state of health of a seaman, marine, or soldier on his discharge from service as the condition to which he may be entitled to benefits payable out of the Navy and Army Insurance Fund, shall not apply in the case of a seaman, marine, or a soldier who, on his discharge from service during or within the prescribed period after the conclusion of the present War, is certified by the Admiralty or Army Council to be suffering from any disease, or disablement, or bodily or mental unfitness, but every such man shall become entitled to benefits payable out of that fund as from the date of his discharge in like manner as if he had satisfied such requirements as aforesaid.

'PROVIDED that if in any case the Insurance Commissioners are of opinion that the state of the man's health on discharge is not such as to disqualify him for admission to an Approved Society, the Commissioners may, by notice, fix a time (not being less than three months from the date of such notice, and not being more than six months from the date of his discharge) at which he shall cease to be entitled to benefits out of the fund, unless he satisfies them that he has been unable by reason of the state of his health to obtain admission to an Approved Society.' Application should be made in the

first instance to the National Health Insurance Commission, 28, Queen Anne's Gate, London, S.W. (see A.O. 14/1915).

A member of an Approved Society during service continues to be a member on his discharge, and will obtain benefits through his Society; he thus re-enters civil life as if he had been insured as a civilian during the period of his service. He should immediately on his discharge communicate with his Society.

Discharged men who were not insured before service (i.e., civil servants, municipal employees, clerks in receipt of more than £160 a year, persons working on their own account, etc.), but elected to become insured in the Army, will in some cases wish to continue to be insured after discharge. If they return to work in their previous occupation, they can only remain insured if they are entitled to become voluntary contributors.

Unemployment Insurance contributions are not payable during Army service. Soldiers who were insured prior to embodiment should hand in their unemployment books at the nearest Labour Exchange, or other office of the Unemployment Fund (A.O. 378, 1914).

**Insurance, Naval.** The principal provisions in regard to Health Insurance of seamen and marines are contained in Section 46 of the National Insurance Act, the general object of which is to secure to these men any benefits obtainable by civilians, but which are not already provided by the terms of service, and also to place them when they re-enter civil life in as good a position as they might have occupied had they continued in civilian employment.

**Contributions.** The contributions required are the same as those obtaining in the Army.

**Membership.** A man on joining the service may continue his membership of an Approved Society, and men or boys who are not insured on entry, or who are deposit contributors, are allowed a period of six months after entry, or after attaining the age of 16 years, within which to join an Approved Society. If they do not exercise the option within the time allowed, they automatically

become members of the Navy and Army Insurance Fund, but can, at any time during service, transfer to any Approved Society prepared to admit them to membership.

The Navy and Army Insurance Fund is practically the Society for men who were not members of an Approved Society. It bears the cost of benefits payable to men who, not being members of Approved Societies at the time of their discharge, and been prevented by ill-health from then joining such Societies, apply within the prescribed time after discharge for admission or re-admission to membership.

Membership of the Navy and Army Insurance Fund ceases at once on discharge from His Majesty's service. Men who have been members of it up to the time of discharge must then—

1. Join Approved Societies within three months after discharge, if discharged in the United Kingdom, or within six months if discharged abroad; or—

2. Apply within the same time-limits for re-admission to the Fund on the ground of ill-health; or—

3. Become deposit contributors if they have done neither (1) nor (2).

If, however, the wife of such a man is confined prior to the date on which he joins an Approved Society, and within the period of three or six months in which it is open to him to join such a Society, she remains entitled to maternity benefit from the Fund.

**Ratings to whom the Act applies.** Insurance is compulsory for the following—

1. Petty Officers and men of the Royal Navy and Coast Guard, and Non-Commissioned Officers and men of the Royal Marines who have not completed the period of their first engagement, or who, having completed such period, have not re-engaged for pension.

2. Boys of the Royal Navy and Royal Marines, if and when they have attained the age of 16.

3. All men serving under non-continuous and special service engagements.

Insurance is optional for Petty Officers and men of the Royal Navy and Coast Guard, and Non-Commissioned

Officers and men of the Royal Marines from the date when they complete the period of their first engagement and re-engage for pension. Such men may, however, continue insured, provided they elect that the statutory deduction should continue to be made from their pay after re-engagement.

Insurance is also optional for—

1. Naval Pensioners (other than Naval Reservists) borne in the Fleet and serving under non-continuous service engagements.

2. Warrant Officers of the Royal Marines, except Royal Marine Gunners.

Men who are promoted to Warrant Officers, Royal Marine Gunners, or to Commissioned Officers, cease, as from the date of their promotion, to be insurable under Section 46 of the National Insurance Act, 1911. Those, however, who are members of Approved Societies, and have been insured for five or more years at the date of their promotion, have the right to become ' voluntary contributors ' at the same rate of contribution as if they were compulsorily insured in civilian employment. In such cases the whole contribution is payable by the contributor.

**The Statutory Deduction of 1½d. per Week.** No contributions are charged for weeks during the whole of which a rating is off pay in prison, or under detention, or D.S.Q. in hospital, but a contribution is charged for the fractional portion of the week in which he re-enters from prison, detention, etc. As men undergoing confinement in cells do not cease to be borne for pay, insured persons so confined are chargeable with the statutory deduction for such periods.

**Benefit.** The wife of an insured seaman or marine is, on confinement, entitled to ' Maternity Benefit ' in respect of her husband's insurance, provided that twenty-six weeks have elapsed since his entry into insurance, and at least twenty-six weekly contributions have been made in respect of him. The wife of a man who on re-engagement elects to discontinue his insurance ceases to be entitled to the benefit from the date of her husband's

re-engagement, or the date of completion of his first engagement, whichever is the later. Similarly, the wife of a man who, on promotion, ceases to be insurable under Section 46 is not entitled to maternity benefit in respect of a confinement taking place subsequent to his promotion.

Maternity benefit can only be paid to the husband himself if the wife dies, or if he is authorized by her to receive it on her behalf; in the latter case he is required to pay it over to her.

If the wife is herself an insured person, she is entitled, subject to any conditions imposed by the rules of her Approved Society, to receive maternity benefit from it in addition to that paid in respect of her husband's insurance.

**Discharge.** On discharge from the service of an insured person (or on his ceasing to be insured on promotion, or by his own election on re-engagement), a certificate on Form S. 1034, showing details of his insurance, is given to him, a duplicate of it being forwarded to the Accountant-General. As the certificate takes the place of an Insurance Book for the period of the man's service, he should send his copy to the Approved Society to which he belongs at the time of his discharge, or of which he becomes a member after discharge.

**Position of the Seaman or Marine on Discharge.** Men who are entitled to pensions or gratuities on discharge draw them in full, in addition to the benefits which they can claim under the National Insurance Act, nor are those benefits diminished on account of the men being in receipt of pensions or gratuities.

A man who, on his discharge, is awarded a life pension of £26 a year or more, is entitled to claim exemption, if he wishes to do so; but otherwise a seaman or marine who has left His Majesty's service will, in most cases, be required to be insured when employed in civil life, and his position will depend on—

(*a*) Whether he is a member of an Approved Society at the time of his discharge.

(*b*) Whether he contributed all the time he was in the service.

**Where Benefits are not Issuable.** Many men who join the Forces from localities in which the Insurance Act does not apply are often insured under A.O. 378/1914, or 13/1915, in ignorance of the fact that they are not entitled to benefits under the Insurance Act after discharge if they returned to their former place of residence.

Such men had the option of discontinuing insurance within a specified time, and contributions already made were refunded if the man had been serving less than four months when he decided to discontinue.

**Insurance of Discharged Soldiers.** In reply to a question in the House of Commons on November 15, 1916, Mr. Pretyman said that 'the Accident Offices Association have decided not to make any increase in the premium charged for Employers' Liability Insurance, owing to the employment of disabled soldiers and sailors.'

Mr. Meehan brought to the notice of the House of Commons the fact that many disabled soldiers were refused payment of disablement benefit by Insurance Societies on the ground that it was never contemplated that disabled soldiers should be thrown on the funds of those Societies.

In reply to this, Mr. Forster pointed out that under certain circumstances the Insurance Act provides for a deduction of 5*s*. per week from Insurance benefits, but there is no regulation to prevent Societies from refusing such payment.

Claims for maternity benefit in respect to soldiers recalled from the Reserve, and men of the Territorial Forces who are not members of an Approved Society, should be addressed to the Secretary, National Health Insurance Commission, 29, Queen Anne's Gate, London, S.W.

The National Insurance (Navy and Army) Act, 1914, provides for the continuance in insurance during the period of the War of Officers of the Reserve and Territorial Forces and of Officers granted temporary commissions who were insured as civilians at the time they commenced military duty in connection with the War (378/14).

The right of option is clearly specified in Army Order 13/1915, which Act provides that all soldiers who were not insured in civil life before enlistment or mobilization 'may remain uninsured, provided they so elect before January 3, 1915, notwithstanding that the month within which they are required to notify their election to remain uninsured may have expired before that date.'

**Desertion or Death.** In the case of a soldier who dies or deserts, his card will be stamped to the date up to which pay is charged and will be forwarded to the National Health Insurance Commission, 29, Queen Anne's Gate, London, S.W., with a note showing the date of decease or desertion. If a man is discharged or demobilized, the card will be stamped to the date of discharge or demobilization and will be forwarded to the Commanding Officer of the man's unit, who will pass it on to the man for his disposal.

On or after March 1, 1915, a man who has been awarded a total disablement pension is entitled, from the date of his discharge, to sickness benefit for twenty-six weeks at the reduced rate of 5*s.* per week, but is not entitled to disablement benefit.

The rate of benefit is not affected by pension for partial disablement.

Until Nov. 21st, 1917, the Pensions Issue Office was authorized to withhold provisionally 5*s.* weekly from any arrears of total disablement pension due with a view to recovery of any benefit overpaid by the man's Approved Society.

Section 12 (*b*) National Health Insurance Act provides that in the case of a member of an Approved Society who is an inmate of a sanatorium, or similar institution, in which he is receiving treatment in accordance with the provisions of the Act, the sum which would otherwise have been payable on account of any such benefit to or in respect of such person shall be paid to the Insurance Committee towards the general purposes thereof.

The position of disabled men entitled to benefits under the National Health Insurance Act is somewhat complicated, but it may be stated shortly as follows—

1. Men who are in receipt of the maximum total disability pension, sickness benefit is paid at the rate of 5*s*. per week, but no disablement benefit is issuable while in receipt of maximum pension.

2. Men in receipt of the maximum pension who since discharge have for 104 weeks followed an insurable employment, and in respect of which 104 contributions have been paid, are not affected by the foregoing.

3. No reduction of sickness benefit made in the case of a man who has for 26 weeks from the date of his discharge followed an insurable employment and in respect of which 26 contributions have been paid.

**Insurance Discharge.** It is necessary, in order that the soldier on discharge may claim the benefits to which he is entitled under the Act, that he shall have documentary proof that his contributions have been paid during service. This evidence is provided by the stamped card which should be handed to him on discharge. Such card has been provided (Army Form 01845) which shows the period of service and that insurance has been credited up to the date of discharge. No card is issued to a man who was not insured during enlistment and has elected to remain uninsured during service. Similar cards (A.F. 01844) are forwarded to the Insurance Commissioners directly the death or desertion of a soldier is notified.

A discharged soldier who is not a member of an Approved Society is entitled to benefits from the Navy and Army Insurance Fund.

**Maternity Benefit.** If the soldier is a member of an Approved Society, application should be made one month before the date of the expected confinement; if not, the claim should be made to the Regimental Paymaster.

# HOSPITAL STOPPAGES AND DEDUCTIONS

**Hospital Stoppages, etc.** The provision for deductions from a soldier's pay, towards maintenance and treatment, is set forth in the Army Act, Clause 138 (2), which recites that a deduction may be made from 'all ordinary pay for every day on which he is in hospital on account of sickness certified by the proper medical authority attending on him at the hospital to have been caused by any offence under this Act committed by him.' The scale of authorized stoppages is given under paragraph 73 of the Separation Allowance Regulations, as follows—

'When patients are admitted into Military hospitals under the conditions prescribed by the Regulations for the Army Medical Service, the daily rate of stoppage will be as follows—

(*a*) Officers and soldiers admitted on account of wounds received in action or illness contracted while on service in the Field. . . . . Nil

(*b*) Officers not coming under (*a*) . . . . . 2*s.* 6*d.*

(*c*) Soldiers (including Reservists called out for duty or training) not coming under (*a*)—

(i) Ordinary stoppage . . 7*d.* (men); 6*d.* (boys)

(ii) If suffering from sickness certified by the Medical Officer attending to him to have been caused by an offence under the Army Act committed by him . . . Full Pay

(iii) When supplied with Medical comforts in non-dieted hospitals or in quarters. . 4*d.*

(iv) When treated in non-dieted hospitals established in camps . . . . . Nil

| | |
|---|---|
| (*d*) Soldiers detained in hospital after discharge or transfer to the Army Reserve . . . | |
| Civilian subordinates— | |
| (i) When suffering from contagious or infectious disease and admitted to hospital for the safety of the troops. . . . . | Nil |
| (ii) When incapacitated through personal injuries by accident arising out of and in the course of their employment, or incapacitated by a disease specifically attributable to the nature of their work, provided the incapacity is not due to their own serious and wilful misconduct, and, in cases of injury, that they have not declined the scheme of compensation under the Workmen's Compensation Act, 1906— | |
| Those entitled to full pay during the first period of incapacity. . . . . | 1*s*. |
| Others . . . . . | Nil |
| (iii) Civilian subordinates not coming under (i) and (ii) officers' civilian servants and persons not connected with the Army, when admitted under the exceptional circumstances detailed in the Regulations for the Army Medical Service . . . . . | 2*s*. |

It will be clear from the terms of this Regulation that three classes of men are directly affected by it—

1. Those 'admitted on account of wounds received in action or illness contracted whilst on service in the Field.'

2. Those 'suffering from sickness certified by the medical officer attending him to have been caused by any offence under the Army Act, committed by him.'

3. Men 'detained in hospital after discharge or transferred to the Army Reserve.'

In the case of 1 and 3, no deductions are authorized; but in the case of 2, a stoppage of full pay may be made, a procedure against which there is no apparent ground for complaint. It does not appear that 'ordinary stoppage' can be applied in the case of (*a*), as stoppage under this heading is given as nil, neither can 'ordinary stoppage' apply to (11), as a stoppage of full pay is authorized under this heading. It must, however, be assumed that

this stoppage may be made at the discretion of the Military authority.

Paragraph 405 of the King's Regulations provides 'that the cost of maintenance of a soldier temporarily detained in a civil lunatic asylum will be adjusted as provided in the Allowance Regulations.' This is applicable only to men who have not been discharged from the Army, but it will be noticed that the Regulation refers to detention in a civil Institution. The paragraph referred to (78 of the Allowance Regulations) says: 'The cost of maintenance of a soldier temporarily detained in a civil lunatic asylum is chargeable against the public subject to the stoppage from the man's pay as prescribed by paragraph 73.' Obviously the man is expected to bear some portion of the cost of his maintenance and treatment. It is clear that the deductions authorized, and the regulations governing these deductions are applicable to men detained in Military or civil Institutions, in fact, paragraph 74 of the same regulations states explicitly that 'when a soldier or other person, entitled to treatment in a Military hospital, is, for special reasons, treated at the public cost in a civil hospital as provided in the Regulations for the Army Medical Service, the rate of stoppage prescribed by paragraph 73 will be recovered and credited to the public,' and reference to the scale will show that no deductions are authorized except in the case of men whose detention in hospital has been rendered necessary by other than misconduct. Consequently, all stoppages from the pay of men who do not come within this provision are contrary to the terms of this regulation. Army Order 337/1914, paragraph 12, has reference to hospital stoppages. The order provides that 'hospital stoppages for troops in barracks will be maintained, except that the officer commanding unit will exercise the powers of the Brigade Commander under Allowance Regulations, paragraph 67.' This order has been amended to Army Order 25/1915, which provides that (*b*) and (*c*) of paragraph 73 may be relaxed, and a remission of the stoppage authorized 'in whole or in part where the injury or sickness has been caused by Military

service, or any other especial cases where circumstances justify a remission or a reduction.'

Clearly, however, the terms of this Army Order are superfluous, for paragraph 73 specifically provides that no deduction shall be made in the case of men detained in hospital 'on account of wounds received in action or illness contracted while on service in the Field.'

The same Army Order provides that paragraph 75 of the Allowance Regulations 'will be relaxed greatly during the period of the War.' Paragraph 75 reads that—

'If any injury has been received in the actual performance of Military duty, under circumstances beyond the soldier's own control, the whole stoppage may be remitted by the brigade commander.'

Again it appears obvious that there are no stoppages to remit and consequently no especial circumstances as set forth.

If a man's disability is due to wounds or illnesses contracted on service in the Field, no stoppage is authorized. If his disability is due to his own misconduct, stoppage of full pay is authorized, and there is no ground upon which remission, either in whole or in part, may be made. The wording of this paragraph seems to convey that (1) of paragraph 73 is intended to be used at the discretion of the Military authority, for the term 'Military duty' is subject to interpretation, and the power of interpretation is entirely in the hands of that authority. Whatever the interpretation may be, it cannot logically cover men in hospital suffering from wounds or sickness due to or aggravated by active service, nor can it be applicable to lunatics whose disability has been brought about by service, while detained in Military or civil Institutions.

A soldier discharged from the Army on account of wounds may receive treatment in a Military hospital, and while receiving treatment his pension is paid to the full amount allowed for total disablement, together with any allowance for children born before the date of his discharge.

Usually a stoppage of 1*s.* a day is made for his maintenance while he is in the hospital.

Application should be made for admission to a Military hospital to the Secretary of the Royal Hospital, Chlesea.

It is provided that from September 29, 1917, for the remaining period of the present War no stoppage shall be made from the pay of any soldier in respect of his admission to hospital unless the disability is due to an offence under the Army Act or to the soldier's own fault.

Hospital stoppages are maintained as at present laid down in the case of any soldier who is admitted to hospital as the result of alcoholism or venereal disease, as certified by the medical officer, or other cause, notified in Part II Orders, as due to the soldier's own fault.

Army Council Instruction 774/1917 provides that soldiers who have been admitted to hospital suffering from venereal disease, or who contract such disease while in hospital, will on their discharge be sent direct to their unit, and will not be granted furlough.

**Admission to Hospital: Discharged Soldiers.** Invalided soldiers who require hospital treatment, when disability is due to wounds or injuries or disease attributable to War service, may be admitted to hospital and reported to the Royal Hospital, Chelsea. Their pensions are subject to an appropriate stoppage (A.C.I. 1756/16).

A discharged soldier may be admitted into a Military hospital for the treatment of wounds, disease, etc., caused or aggravated by Military service, if it is likely that his cure may be effected or his condition improved by treatment, providing that a period of three years has not elapsed from the date of his being invalided out of the Army.

The pension issuable is the maximum rate while the man is in the hospital and is subject to a stoppage of 1*s.* per day (A.C.I. 210/17).

**Men in Hospital.** Men in hospital are not allowed to have money or valuables in their possession without permission of the officer in charge of the hospital.

Men may receive cash payments up to 3*s.* 6*d.* per week.

When a soldier of an Imperial unit is subject to hospital stoppages, the rate should not exceed 1*s.* per week for a private if he is making an allotment, or 2*s.* per

week for a private who is not making an allotment, with corresponding rates for higher ranks (A.C.I. 2175/16).

**Visitors to Men in Hospital.** Free rail conveyance is granted to men dangerously ill in Military hospitals in the United Kingdom to relatives unable to bear the cost themselves, as defined in A.O. 362/1917.

Upon receipt of telegram, a third-class return railway warrant will be issued at any police station in Great Britain or Ireland, at the discretion of the police, but only to one person.

Permits are issued from the War Office, Whitehall, and Alexandra House, Kingsway, London, W.C., for relatives to visit cases of dangerous illness in France, but in this case two persons may receive a warrant (A.C.I. 480/17).

**Payment on leaving Hospital.** A soldier not invalided from abroad, leaving hospital to rejoin his unit by rail, may receive an advance of pay up to a maximum of 2*s.* 6*d.*, at the discretion of the Medical Officer in charge of the hospital (A.C.I. 1538/16).

**Furlough from Hospital.** A man granted furlough from hospital under 9 of A.C.I. 1412/1916, for the fitting of an artificial limb, will receive £1 in advance of pay when sent home from the hospital, and the paymaster will pay the man weekly in advance until receipt of the notification of his admission to the hospital (A.C.I. 1731/16).

## HOSPITAL TREATMENT

With reference to the stoppage of 1*s.* a day which is made from the allowances otherwise payable in the cases of discharged men who are undergoing a course of institutional treatment, the deduction is made in all cases where the institution is supported wholly or partly out of public funds, or where the Local War Pensions Committee or the Ministry of Pensions are required to make any payment towards the cost of treatment.

If the man is a patient in an institution which makes no charge for treatment, and is not supported in any way

from public funds, the Local Committee will deduct the 1*s.* a day, but repay the money to the man on his discharge from the institution at the completion of his treatment therein.

Article 6 (2) of the Royal Pay Warrant, 1917, sanctions the deduction of these stoppages. The article says—

'A deduction of such an amount and under such conditions as the Ministry of Pensions may determine may be made from any allowance granted under Subsection 1 of this Article, on account of the cost of the disabled man's maintenance in an institution.'

Army Council Instruction 210/1917 provides that while a discharged man is receiving hospital treatment his 'pension will be at the maximum rate and it will be subject to a stoppage of 1*s.* per day.'

The conditions of admission into a hospital for treatment include a reasonable probability of the man's health being improved or restored, providing that three years has not elapsed from the date of his discharge.

## DEDUCTIONS

The following penal deductions may be made from the ordinary pay due to a soldier of the regular forces under the terms of the Army Act (Section 138)—

1. All ordinary pay for every day of absence either on desertion or without leave, or a prisoner of war, and for every day of imprisonment awarded by a civil court or court martial, or if he is on board one of His Majesty's ships, by the commanding officer of that ship, for every day of detention or field punishment awarded by a court martial or by his commanding officer, and for every day whilst he is in custody on a charge for an offence of which he is afterwards convicted by a civil court or court martial, or on a charge of absence without leave for which he is afterwards awarded detention or field punishment by his commanding officer.

2. All ordinary pay for every day on which he is in hospital on account of sickness certified by the proper medical officer attending on him at the hospital to have

been caused by an offence under this Act committed by him.

3. The sum required to pay a fine awarded by a court martial, his commanding officer, or a civil court, and—

4. The sum required to pay any sum ordered by the Army Council, or any officer deputed by them for the purpose, to be paid as mentioned in this Act for the maintenance of his wife or child, or of any bastard child, or towards the cost of any relief given by way of loan to his wife or child.

Provided that—

(*a*) The total amount of deductions from the ordinary pay due to a soldier in respect of the sums required to pay any compensation, fine, or sum awarded or ordered to be paid as aforesaid, shall not exceed such sum as will leave to the soldier, after paying for his messing and washing, less than one penny a day.

Section 139. Any deduction of pay authorized by this Act may be remitted in such manner and by such authority as may be from time to time provided by Royal Warrant, and subject to the provisions of any such Warrant, may be remitted by the Army Council.

Section 141. Every assignment of, and every charge on, and every agreement to assign or charge, and deferred pay, or Military reward payable to any officer or soldier of any of His Majesty's forces, or any pension, allowance, or relief payable to any such officer or soldier, or his wife, widow, child or other dependant, or to any person in respect of any Military service, shall, except so far as the same is made in pursuance of a Royal Warrant for the benefit of the family of the person entitled thereto, or as may be authorized by any Act for the time being in force, be void.

# INCREASE OF PAY, SPECIAL RATES, ETC.

## SOLDIERS' INCREASED PAY.

It is provided that as from September 29, 1917, and for the remaining period of the present War, the sum of 1*d.* per day War pay in respect of each complete year of service with the Colours, rendered since the commencement of the present War, shall be granted to all soldiers except soldiers of the Non-Combatant Corps. Service, within the meaning of the preceding paragraph of this Article forfeited for desertion or fraudulent enlistment, shall not be allowed to count towards War pay unless restored in accordance with the King's Regulations and Orders for the Army. Any period of penal servitude, or of imprisonment or detention exceeding twenty-eight days, undergone by the soldier, and any continuous period of absence without leave exceeding twenty-eight days, will not be reckoned as service for the purpose of the grant.

It should be noted that these grants do not apply to men in receipt of special rates of pay, e.g. men enlisted under the conditions of Army Order 283 of 1914, or under subsequent instructions at the rates of pay laid down therein, or similar rates granted under the Warrant published in Army Order 282 of 1914. Nor do they apply to men in receipt of ordinary rates who are enlisted for service in Colonial units or contingents, except as stated below, nor to men who are in receipt of Colonial rates of pay, e.g. men of the Royal Flying Corps Squadrons when serving in Canada.

Men in receipt of special rates of pay who for any reason are brought on to ordinary rates of pay will be entitled to the benefits of the Warrant from the date of commencing to draw ordinary rates. Subject to the provisions of the Order their whole service, whether at special or ordinary rates will reckon for the purpose of the benefits.

Any man in receipt of special rates of pay will have the option of drawing ordinary rates and the benefits of the Order in lieu of his special rate. Such election when made will be final, and will be recorded on his documents. He will not be entitled to re-elect his special rate at any subsequent date. Soldiers of the South African Overseas contingent who are in receipt of British rates of pay will be entitled to the benefits of the foregoing Warrant so long as they remain in receipt of those rates. Similarly, soldiers of the contingent who have the right to elect or re-elect British rates will if they make such election or re-election be entitled to the benefits while in receipt of British rates.

No arrears of the grant will be paid for the period before September 29, 1917, but all service as defined in the Warrant since the commencement of the War (whether on a current or a previous attestation) will be allowed to reckon in calculating the addition to the soldier's pay.

From September 29, 1917, and for the remaining period of the present War, the rates of pay laid down for warrant officers and non-commissioned officers down to and including the ranks of corporal, bombardier, or 2nd corporal of Household Cavalry, Cavalry of the Line, Royal Horse and Field Artillery, Royal Garrison Artillery, Foot Guards, Infantry of the Line, Army Cyclist Corps, Machine Gun Corps, the non-technical personnel of Tank Corps, the Labour Corps, the Corps of Military Mounted Police and Military Foot Police, and of the Garrison and District Staff, is increased by the sum of 3*d*. per day.

For the remaining period of the present War, in the case of any soldier below the rank of serjeant the depôt of whose unit is situated in the United Kingdom, the

Channel Islands, or the Isle of Man, with the exception of boys, of soldiers of the Non-Combatant Corps, and of soldiers employed in agriculture or otherwise under conditions which bring their earnings up to civil rates of wages, when for any day on which he is entitled to receive his full emoluments his total pay assessed does not amount to the minimum sum herein laid down for his rank or appointment, there is added for that day such an amount as will increase the pay so assessed to the minimum sum herein laid down for his rank or appointment.

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| Trooper, gunner, driver, sapper, pioneer (R.E.), private . | 1 | 6 |
| Paid lance-corporal or paid acting bombardier . . | 1 | 9 |
| Corporal or 2nd corporal . . . . . | 2 | 0 |

In assessing the total pay for this purpose there is taken into account, in addition to regimental pay, any proficiency pay, service pay, engineer corps or working pay under Article 845 of the Warrant of 1914, to which the soldier may be entitled; but if entitled to Class I proficiency pay or Class I service pay the minimum increase is 3*d*.

The minimum pay shall be at the following rates, according to the soldier's rank or appointment—

For soldiers serving at Royal Engineer rates: Regimental pay, engineer pay and service pay if entitled thereto.

For soldiers serving at the rate of arms which earn corps pay: Regimental pay, corps pay and service pay if entitled thereto. The following classes of pay will not be taken into account—

(*a*) The War pay of 1*d*. for each year of War service.

(*b*) Working pay under Articles 925 to 966 of the Pay Warrant.

(*c*) Additional pay.

It follows that the minimum rates for the Cavalry, Artillery, Infantry and other proficiency pay-earning arms will be—

For soldiers entitled to proficiency pay or service pay Class II or to no proficiency or service pay—

Private, 1*s.* 6*d.*; paid lance-corporal or paid acting bombardier, 1*s.* 9*d.*

For soldiers entitled to proficiency pay Class I, or service pay Class I, whether at 6*d.* or 7*d.*—

Private, 1*s.* 9*d.*; paid lance-corporal or paid acting bombardier, 2*s.*

A corporal of Infantry of the Line with less than six months' service, and therefore not entitled to proficiency pay, will get 2*s.* if in receipt of proficiency pay; Class II, 2*s.* 2*d.*; Class I, 2*s.* 5*d.*

The grant will only be drawn if the soldier is entitled to his full emoluments and consequently will not be issuable if the soldier is subject to hospital stoppages (as now modified) or to any forfeiture or reduction of his pay under the following provisions of the Pay Warrant—

(1) Any forfeiture of proficiency pay under Article 1068.

(2) Any forfeiture of service pay under paragraph 13 of Appendix V.

(3) Any forfeiture or reduction of engineer or corps pay under sub-paragraphs 2, 3, 4, and 5 of Article 844, or Article 848.

(4) Any forfeiture or reduction of working pay issuable under Article 845, incurred under Article 966 (in accordance with the provision of Army Order 119 of 1917).

It is not intended that the soldier shall forfeit this benefit for lack of efficiency other than as provided above. A soldier's pay will not therefore be reduced below the minimum in consequence of the forfeiture or reduction of proficiency pay under Article 1069, Pay Warrant.

A soldier will not be regarded as being in receipt of less than his full emoluments by reason of stoppages of pay under Section 138 (excepting those under paragraphs (1) and (2) thereof) or under Section 145 of the Army Act.

The increased rate of pay which under this Order will be admissible for any soldier from September 29, 1917, will be notified by the Paymaster to the soldier's

Commanding Officer. The notification will be made without delay. In the case of troops serving at home or Colonial stations it will be made by means of the "original" pay and mess book; in the case of soldiers serving with the Expeditionary Forces it will be made by means of a special form.

As affecting the Navy the increases are—

| | |
|---|---|
| A.B. ratings . . . . . | 2*d.* a day |
| Leading ratings . . . . | 3*d.* ,, |
| Petty officer ratings . . . . | 5*d.* ,, |
| Chief petty officer ratings . . . | 5*d.* ,, |

with an increase of 3*d.* a day to A.B. ratings after three years instead of after six years, as at present.

Messing allowance at 7*d.* (at present 5½*d.*).

Free kit (now free kit on entry).

## PROFICIENCY PAY

The regulation tests as laid down in paragraph 683 of the King's Regulations for qualification for Class 1 proficiency pay under active field service conditions have been suspended in the case of troops serving with an expeditionary force overseas on field service for the period of the War.

Non-commissioned officers who are not qualified by rank for Class 1 proficiency pay, and men eligible by length of service to receive such pay, and also those who completed their service qualification before May 1, 1916, should have been rated by their Commanding Officers between May 1 and September 30 in each year (for the year 1915 the date of qualification might have been extended to October 31). A soldier will not be certified for Class 1 proficiency pay until he has completed two years' service in his unit.

A man who has been rated for proficiency pay on active service under a C.O. certificate will be reclassified under the conditions in force on his return, and will be dealt with after reclassification in accordance with such conditions.

Men who were serving with an expeditionary force and have been sent home sick or wounded at any time since August 4, 1914, without having been classified as laid down in Army Order No. 368/1915, will be classified by the C.O. under whom they were serving at home, with effect from July 1, 1915, if otherwise qualified, but in no case will such a certificate be valid for more than twelve months (A.O. 368/1915, C.F. 300/1916).

A man eligible for proficiency pay under 1061 of the Pay Warrant, 1914, whether serving at home or abroad, in order to be eligible must have at least two years' service with the Colours as defined in 1066 Pay Warrant and A.O. 96/1915.

If enlisted as a boy he must have attained the age of 20 years, except as provided in A.C.I. 1207/1916.

A.O. 112/1916 declares non-combatant corps ineligible for proficiency pay. The man must also be certified by his C.O. as efficient. The grant may be withdrawn when efficiency is no longer evident. Such men as above are entitled to pay at Class 2 rate.

A man serving at home is eligible for Class 1 rate if in addition to the above he is a Warrant Officer or N.C.O. or above the rank of serjeant, or possesses qualifications entitling to Class 1 rate as in 683 K.R., or entitled in virtue of previous classification under 1070 or 1074 by Warrant or classified C1 since mobilization, or returned from an expeditionary force in receipt of C1.

Men qualified for C1 as above retain that rate until an opportunity occurs for carrying out the tests as 683 K.R. Men C1 who have served with an expeditionary force and return home owing to wounds, injury or sunstroke received in the performance of Military duty, or sickness due directly and indirectly and wholly to Military service, retain C1 rate until the end of the War irrespective of test (A.C.I. 2441/1916).

The provisions of A.C.I. 2313/1916, by which the number of points prescribed for Class 1 proficiency pay was reduced by 10, was extended to 21/4/17 (A.C.I. 694/1917).

Men are entitled to proficiency pay who serve in the following corps—

Cavalry, Artillery, Infantry, Machine-gun Corps, Corps of School of Musketry, and Army Cyclist Corps.

Previous service counts towards the two years' service required for proficiency pay.

This allowance is issuable to ex-soldiers and members of Territorial units who had two service prior to the present War, provided in the case of Territorials that they attended camp for fifteen days in each year.

If a man were drawing proficiency pay on discharge he would resume on being called up.

Prisoners of war are credited with service while prisoners for proficiency pay. If in receipt of Class 1 rate at the time of capture, they will retain it as A.C.I. 955/1916. Men who were not drawing Class 1 rate, but who would have drawn it on completion of two years' service on classification made before their capture, would be credited with that rate on completion of the necessary period of service (A.C.I. 2097/1916).

Men transferred from R.H.A., R.F.A., and R.G.A., regular or T.F., to Anti-Aircraft Artillery, who were not serving in an expeditionary force, and in receipt of proficiency pay Class 1 at the time of transfer, will retain this classification while certified as efficient.

An Army Order issued December 4, 1917, authorizes that, as from September 29, 1917, and for the remaining period of the present War, the qualifying period for the grant of proficiency pay, shall be reduced from two years to six months, subject, in the case of those enlisted as boys, to the additional modification that they must have attained the age of 18½ years instead of 20 years as hitherto, and that proficiency pay shall be issued to all soldiers eligible for that emolument who on or after September 29, 1917, have fulfilled the conditions for the grant of proficiency pay as now modified.

The grant of proficiency pay Class II (or in the case of a soldier holding the rank of serjeant or higher rank, Class I) will in future be automatic on the soldier eligible for that emolument completing six months' unfor-

feited service, or, in the case of a boy, having attained the age of 18½ years in addition. Except with regard to the qualifying period of service the conditions and procedure for the grant of proficiency pay Class I will remain as heretofore.

**Pay.** A.C.I. 259/1917 provides that an employer must pay the O.C. Agricultural Company the living-in rate of wages in respect of men for whom he provides accommodation. It is further provided that when men are provided with food and accommodation by their employers, billeting money is not paid. When the employer provides lodging, fuel and light only, and not food, he will be required to pay the living-out rate of wages for the men. The offset to this is a credit equivalent to what he would have received if the men had been billeted upon him under the Army Act. In every case the men are to be paid by their O.C. the living-out rate less 3*s.* 6*d.* per day, no matter the rate paid by the employer.

Men employed with motor tractors and ploughs are on the strength of 898 Mechanical T.C., A.S.C., Mosely Hill, Liverpool.

Payment will be made to the soldier at the current local rate for the class of work on which he is engaged, less a deduction of 3*s.* 6*d.* per day, or a proportion of such an amount.

The soldier will draw Army pay and allowances in addition to the above (A.C.I. 634/1917).

**Transport Workers' Battalion.** For every day engaged on civil labour, or the number of hours' work equivalent to or more than a normal day's work, the men receive civilian rates as under A.C. I. 498/1916. If prevented through unavoidable circumstances from a full normal day's civil labour, they will be paid Army pay, and the civil pay earned for those days will not be issued to them, but will be withheld until such time as the aggregate number of hours becomes equivalent to or more than the number of hours comprising a normal day's work (A.C.I. 2224/1916).

**Working Pay.** Working pay is not issued to soldiers who are employed on work which ordinarily forms part

of their training. Services which are usually performed by the Royal Engineers may be paid for with working pay under the conditions of Articles 925 and 845 of the Pay Warrant, when performed by soldiers of infantry units other than the Works Formations (A.C.I. 2277/1916).

Men receive Military pay and working pay as laid down in the Pay Warrant when employed on W.D. work or ordinary Military fatigues, but no civil pay (A.C.I. 2160/1916).

When a working party is employed upon other work than above, the men will receive, in addition to Military emoluments, the local current rates of civil pay for the work undertaken, less 3*s.* 6*d.*, as directed in A.C.I. 1597/1915, and 1974/1916.

Officers, N.C.O.'s and men loaned as working parties will continue in receipt of their ordinary pay; but N.C.O.'s and men will not draw any working pay under the provisions of the Pay Warrant.

Officers will be entitled to working pay as if the men were in receipt of it.

The employer will be required to pay for the men's services at the current rates of civil labour.

**Transfers.** With reference to 2084/1916, it is provided that men who are found unsuitable for the corps to which they have been posted, and are transferred, should on transfer receive pay and allowance of the corps to which they are transferred.

**Engineer Pay of Road Construction: Quarrying Companies, R.E.** *Road Construction Companies.* Men enlisted as pioneers should be paid 6*d.* per day engineer pay from the date of enlistment.

Every R.E. tradesman enlisted should be paid 6*d.* per day engineer pay under 830 P.W./14, and after twenty-eight days' service in accordance with A.O. 469/1914, 1*s.*, 1*s.* 4*d.*, 1*s.* 8*d.*, or 2*s.*, according to trade qualifications.

Labourers and boys of 19 years of age enlisted as men will be paid as pioneers, that is 6*d.* per day.

N.C.O.'s of both these companies are to be paid engi-

neer pay in accordance with 837 P.W./1914, unless eligible for higher rates by trade qualifications.

Warrant Officers, N.C.O.'s and men who are in receipt of 2*d.* under Instruction 1632/1916 have the option of accepting ordinary infantry rates of pay and coming under the conditions of 1181, or of retaining the 2*d.* subject to existing conditions, including A.C.I. 170/1916.

Soldiers who in their spare time engage in civilian employment after they have performed all Military duty required, are permitted to retain the whole of their civil earnings without deduction (A.C.I. 78/1916 and 5/1917 are cancelled; A.C.I. 1597/1916 continues operative).

**Transport Workers Battalion.** Separation allowance is issued in all cases where the man is receiving civil or Military pay.

If a man while engaged with the Transport Workers Battalion lives at home, and is in consequence ineligible for separation allowance, he is entitled to receive family allowance.

If in receipt of civil pay and this pay is of a less amount than the Army pay to which he would be entitled as a soldier living at home, the difference may be paid as a special allowance.

In the case of a man engaged with the Transport Workers Battalion dying or suffering injury, he or his dependants are entitled to recover under the Workmen's Compensation Act, Employers' Liability Act, or Common Law. Neither he nor they are entitled under such circumstances to pension or gratuity.

In the case of men insured and entitled to benefits under that Act, any award made under the Workmen's Compensation Act, Employers' Liability Act, or Common Law, will be taken into account when assessment is made of any emoluments that may be due from the Army funds, if in receipt of Military pay, pension, or gratuity (A.C.I. 498/16).

If a man engaged with a Transport Workers Battalion who is a Territorial and joined the Regular Forces to engage in that unit, the gratuity issued under A.O. 426/1914 will be an amount calculated on the total

mobilized service, including embodied service with the Territorial unit (24/15).

Men attached to the A.S.C. and employed with steam tackle motor tractors, ploughs, etc., are paid the current rate of wages, subject to a deduction of 3*s.* 6*d.* per day. Army pay and allowances are paid in addition (A.C.I. 634/1917).

## ALLOWANCE TO MEN IN AGRICULTURAL COMPANIES, LABOUR CORPS

A soldier receives Civil wages at the living-out rate less 3*s.* 6*d.* per day, but he is entitled to be housed and fed at public cost, or to receive allowances in lieu thereof. If fed or accommodated by his employer, the soldier, in addition to his maximum wages, is entitled, if married and living in his own home, or with a Class B dependant, to family allowance at separation allowance rates. If unmarried, and living at home with a Class A dependant, drawing separation allowance, he is entitled to lodging allowance of 6*d.* per day; but if married, and living at home, and no dependant is in receipt of separation allowance, his lodging allowance is 9*d.* per day. If neither fed nor accommodated by his employer, he receives maximum wages and is entitled, if married and living in his own home, or with a Class B dependant, to the family allowance given in paragraph 175 A of the allowance regulations. If unmarried, and living with a Class A dependant, receiving separation allowance, he is entitled to a consolidated allowance of 1*s.* 9*d.* per day. If unmarried and living in his own home, but not with a dependant in receipt of separation allowance, he is entitled to consolidated allowance of 2*s.* per day.

A soldier cannot be billeted either in his own home or with the employer for whom he works (A.C.I. 1018/1917).

**A.C.I. 1466/1916.** Ref. 1056/1916. When men are loaned for agricultural work to farmers living in the neighbourhood of Military stations and provided with

Army rations and Army quarters, the farmer will issue pay to the men at the daily rate of 2*s.* 6*d.*, or in Scotland 3*s.* The balance at the rate of 1*s.* 6*d.* per day will be paid in a lump sum by the farmer to the Officer in charge of the party. This amount will be credited to Army funds.

**Non-Combatant Corps.** 2090/1916. Men loaned to Government Departments under exceptional circumstances will only be entitled to their Army pay and will not receive working pay under A.O. 112/1916 or civil rates of pay under A.C.I.1597/1916.

# METHOD OF DEALING WITH MEN ENLISTED AT SPECIAL RATES OF PAY

The procedure to be adopted in dealing with men enlisted at special rates of pay (i.e., at the rates authorized in accordance with A.O. 283 of 1914, or at similar rates approved under subsequent authority) coming under the categories enumerated below will be as follows—

(*a*) A man who is efficient and fit for service abroad in his trade.

He will be entitled to retain his special rate of pay, even though it become necessary compulsorily to transfer him to another corps otherwise than on disciplinary grounds. In disciplinary cases, the question as to his retention of his rate of pay will be referred to the Army Council for decision.

(*b*) A man who is fit for general service but not efficient at his trade.

He will be compulsorily transferred to a corps for which he is fitted, and receive the normal rate of pay of the rank and arm of the service to which he is transferred.

(*c*) A man who is efficient, but found to be permanently unfit for service abroad in his trade.

(i) If his services can be immediately dispensed with, he will be given the option of being discharged (and exempted from the operations of the Military Service Act), or of accepting the ordinary rate of pay of his own corps, or of any other corps to which it may become necessary compulsorily to transfer him.

(ii) If his services cannot be immediately dispensed with (i.e., if he is required to work at his trade at home), he will be given the option of remaining in the service at ordinary rates of pay, or of being discharged (and exempted from the operation of the Military Service Acts) so soon as he can be replaced by a man possessed of sufficient technical skill and efficiency serving at ordinary rates of pay.

*Note* (i) If he elects to continue at ordinary rates of pay, he will draw those rates from the date of his election, and may be compulsorily transferred to another corps with the ordinary rate of pay attaching thereto.

*Note* (ii) If he elects to be discharged, he will be retained in the service and continue on his special rate of pay pending his replacement by a man serving at ordinary rates of pay, i.e., *so long as he is required to work at his trade.*

*Note* (iii) A man who has been enlisted on terms which entitle him on discharge (except for misconduct) to the special gratuity of £5 under paragraph 13 of A.O. 283 of 1914, will retain his right to such gratuity, although he may have been compulsorily transferred to another corps, or have elected to remain in the service at ordinary rates of pay.

(*d*) *A man who is found to be neither efficient at his trade nor fit for general service.*

He will be discharged in accordance with the procedure laid down in paragraph 3 (A.C.I. 1681/1916).

A.C.I. 2084 has reference to men whose cases are not covered by the foregoing instruction, and provides that soldiers compulsorily transferred from one corps to another owing to exigencies of service, or on grounds of medical unfitness contracted in and by Military service, will retain the rates of pay and allowances of which they are in receipt at the time of transfer, if more advantageous than those of their new corps, under the conditions of A.O.'s 210 of 1916 and 211 of 1915, as amplified by A.C.I. 704 of 1916.

Soldiers transferred at their own request and those compulsorily transferred as unfitted for the duties of their

corps through inefficiency (whether culpable or not), misconduct, or on account of medical unfitness not contracted in or by their Military service, will receive the pay and allowances of the corps to which they are transferred from the date of transfer.

Men transferred on the above grounds will receive only Army rates of pay of the rank and Army service under which they are serving, or to which they are transferred, from the date of arriving in the United Kingdom.

## MILITARY POLICE

Military police rates of pay under Article 854 P.W. 1914 will not in future be issued to soldiers temporarily employed as Military police at home but not belonging to the corps. Such men will continue to receive regimental pay except in the London district, where soldiers employed on garrison Military police duties will continue to be paid under the above article.

## MUNITION WORKERS

Soldiers who have been released for munition work, and discharged from the Army while in civil employment, may, if they obtain a leaving certificate and proceed to a fresh place of residence immediately on discharge from the Army, be granted a warrant for the journey. Warrants are not issuable in cases in which soldiers who remain at their place of employment on being discharged from the Army and later desire to remove to another place. Warrants are not issuable to reservists in Section A, B and D of the Army Reserve, especially reservists and men of the T.F. who were not mobilized, but allowed to remain in civil employment, or the reservists of Classes W, W (T), P P (T) and T of the reserve, formed during the War. In cases in which the fare of a man entitled to a warrant under this instruction has been paid by his employer or himself, a refund of the third-class railway fare may be made, application for which should be certified by the Officer in Charge of Records of the unit to which he is attached (A.C.I. 864/1917).

Men released for munition work and their dependants retain the rights to which they are entitled under the Army Regulations.

If injured or killed while upon munition work, the employer is liable to pay out compensation due under the terms of the Workmen's Compensation Act, the Employers' Liability Act, or at Common Law.

If the benefits due under the Army Regulations are in excess of the compensation receivable from the employer the War Office will make good the deficiency (A.C.I. 851/1916).

If they suffer financial loss through the closing of the works for machinery repairs, lack of material, etc., and if their civil pay falls below their army emoluments as a result, the civil employer shall make up the reduced civil pay to the amount of the soldier's emoluments.

Holidays are not recoverable, for these are paid from army funds, except in the case of a man with dependants living at home, in which case the difference between the man's living at home rate and his separated rate will be recoverable from the Officer in Charge of Records (A.C.I. 2301/1916).

Men released from the Regular or Territorial Forces for munition work are not eligible to continue serving for the duration of the War.

N.C.O.'s and men of the Regular Army so engaged may not re-enlist to complete twenty-one years' service under the provisions of A.D. 49/79/1916.

Men not fit for general service may be employed on munition work.

All soldiers engaged on munition work who were released from the Colours under A.C.I. 344/1916, and who have since their release completed the term of engagement upon which they were serving, calculating the additional year under Section 87 of the Army Act, will be discharged from the Army, discharge to be dated two weeks later than date of the receipt of this instruction.

Enrolment as an Army Reserve munition worker holds good, although a man is finally discharged from the Army.

An Army Reserve munition worker is given a Railway Warrant to the town in which the works are situated to which he is to be attached. He is informed—

1. That he is liable to be ordered to report for service with the Colours at any time by the competent Military authority.

2. That he should on no account leave the employment of the above-mentioned firm of employers unless he receives instructions from the Military authorities calling him to the Colours, or unless he receives instructions on behalf of the Ministry to transfer to the employment of

some other firm of employers named by the Ministry of Munitions.

3. That he will be subject to the ordinary working conditions in force at the works of the above-mentioned firm.

4. The rate of wages to which he is entitled under the terms of his enrolment as an Army Reserve munitions worker is at the rate current at the job upon which he is employed, whichever rate is the higher.

5. That he will receive over and above his wages the following allowances—

(*a*) *Children's Allowance.* An allowance of 2*s.* 6*d.* per week if, at the date of signing the agreement, he had four and not more than five children, who, being sons, were under 14, and being daughters, were under 16, years of age. An allowance of 5*s.* per week if at the date of signing the agreement he had six or more children, who, being sons, were under 14, and being daughters, were under 16 years of age.

(*b*) *Subsistence Allowance.* A subsistence allowance at the rate of 2*s.* 6*d.* per day for seven days per week, if on investigation he is found to have dependants for whose maintenance he is responsible and from whom he is obliged to be separated owing to his being so employed.

6. The allowances to which he is entitled by the terms of the undertaking will be paid him by the firm with his wages.

7. In the event of his desiring to make any representations as to the payment of his wages or the conditions under which he is employed by the firm or any matter arising out of these instructions, he should write to the Ministry of Munitions and make any such representations there. It is absolutely essential that he should address his letter to the Secretary, Ministry of Munitions, 6, Whitehall Gardens, London, S.W.

8. Any change of home address from that given upon the form when originally enrolled should at once be communicated to the Ministry of Munitions.

When the employer of a man released to munitions wishes to dispense with his services, he must give two weeks' notice to the Ministry of Munitions, who is supposed to find another employer or recall the man back to his unit.

Civil servants released for munition work are regarded as on leave, but without pay; their munition service counts for increment of salary but not for pension (459/1915). Men so released who become entitled to discharge on termination of engagement while so employed are not affected by Army Order 202/1916, which provides for the retention of men under the Military Service Act. Neither are such men required to complete the extra year under the terms of Sec. 87 of the Army Act (338/1916).

A verbal instruction has been issued that when a soldier is released for munition work he must, if possible, live in his own home. If on the certificate of his employer he cannot do so, Separation Allowance is issuable, less the amount of the allotment.

**Clothing Allowance.** Each man is granted a clothing allowance in money to meet the cost of renewal and repair of uniform, etc., and is paid at once £2 10*s*., and a quarterly allowance afterwards of £1 15*s*., payable in advance. The first payment under this regulation was made on January 1, 1917.

Kit allowance of 2½*d*. per day ceased upon the same date.

If discharged from the Army while engaged on munition work a man is permitted to retain boots, etc., but he must return to the Depôt of Uniform Clothing. He is entitled to the usual allowance for plain clothing on discharge (17*s*. 7*d*.). This order does not apply to men who were transferred to C.W. or C.W.T., nor to any man of Class B Reserve who was engaged on munition work.

# BOUNTIES ; N.R. AND OTHER RESERVE UNITS

## BOUNTIES

The question of Bounties is very complicated, due largely to the technical character of the regulations and instructions which govern their issue.

Bounty is a money inducement intended to secure recruits for the Naval and Military services, or to retain men already engaged in those services who may be entitled to discharge.

The amounts offered as bounty varied according to the stress of necessity. At the beginning of the last century, no less a sum than £60 could be obtained by an accepted substitute ready and willing to take the place of a man selected by the militia ballot. In 1804 the bounty offered to the infantry soldier was £16 16*s.*, while in the year 1815 (Waterloo year) the amount offered was less than half that sum.

At the time of the Crimean War, an infantryman was not worth more than £8, although the value of a cavalryman was estimated at £10 ; and at the close of the South African War certain men were offered £10 to £15 each if they would remain in the service.

At the outbreak of the present War, officers serving in the Territorial Forces were entitled to £5, plus £5 15*s.* for equipment, and the men were entitled also to £5, with an allowance of 10*s.* for equipment.

Bounties on and since the outbreak of War have been especially offered to reservists and men whose period of engagement has expired and who have completed

the additional year's service required by the Army Authorities, Section 87.

**Conditions of Service.** As the terms of this section are of the greatest importance in view of the regulations governing the payment of bounties that have been made since the commencement of War, it may be well to give such sections of the Act as have reference to extended service in full.

Section 87 provides that—

'Where the time at which a soldier of the regular forces would otherwise be entitled to be discharged occurs while a state of war exists between His Majesty and any foreign power, or while such soldier is on service beyond the seas, or while soldiers in the reserve are required by proclamation, in pursuance of the enactments relating to the calling out of the reserve on permanent service, to continue in, or re-enter upon Army service, the soldier may be detained, and his service may be prolonged for such period not exceeding twelve months, as the competent Military authority may order; but at the expiration of that period, or any earlier period at which the competent Military authority considers his services can be dispensed with, the soldier shall, as provided by this Act, be discharged with all convenient speed.'

Sub-section 3 provides that—

'If a soldier required under this section to be discharged or sent to the United Kingdom desires, while a state of war exists between His Majesty and any foreign power, to continue in His Majesty's service, and the competent Military authority approve, he may agree to become a soldier of the regular forces in the same manner in all respects as if his term of service were still unexpired, except that he may claim his discharge at the end of such state of war, or, if it is so provided by such agreement, at the expiration of any period of three months after he has given notice to his Commanding Officer of his wish to be discharged.'

The foregoing applies to men actually serving with the Colours and consequently has not application to men of the National Reserve.

**The National Reserve.** The National Reserve consists of men in Classes 1 and 2. Class 1 is made up of Sections A, B and D men who have completed the term of their engagement with the Colours.

Reservists (Class 1), whether Warrant Officers, N.C.O.'s or men, are entitled under Article 9 of the National Reserve Regulations, on mobilization, to the gratuity of £10; and Reservists (Class 2) are entitled to the gratuity of £5, providing that they are found fit and are accepted for service.

If a man is temporarily unfit, the gratuity is withheld, and is not payable until he is accepted for service.

Article 18 of the regulations provides that, on mobilization, each Territorial Force Association will be informed by the War Office of the number of Class 1 Reservists required for each Army or Department, and instructions issued as to where, when, and in what numbers the men should report themselves.

In the case of Class 2 men, the Association may at once register National Reservists in numbers equivalent to the difference between the War Establishments and the present total strength of the Territorial Force units allotted to the County, together with an excess of 25 per cent. on that Establishment.

**A.O. 398/1914** deals specifically with National Reservists, many of whom were not aware that they should not present themselves for enlistment until they had received instructions through their County Associations. This order provides for the issue of bounties to men who presented themselves for enlistment without waiting to be called.

The bounty is that issuable to Classes 1 and 2 under the National Reserve Regulation, and should be paid to all men registered before August 11, 1914, who have since mobilization enlisted in the Regular Army, Special Reserve, or Territorial Force, without being called up by the Authorities.

The exceptions to these provisions are that Class 1 Reservists who enlisted into Territorial Force units are not entitled to the gratuity, and Class 2 Reservists who enlisted into foreign service units of the Territorial Forces are entitled only to a gratuity of £5.

**A.O. 409/1914** has reference to men of the Special Reserve. These are not entitled, on mobilization, to the bounties provided by paragraphs 514/518 of the Special Reserve Regulations, which are purely training bounties. This order, however, does provide that recruits who enlisted on or before August 4, 1914, and who had began but not concluded recruit training when mobilized, may be granted the recruits' bounty of 30*s.* (20*s.* in the A.S.C.), which sum, however, will not be issued until demobilization.

If the man is discharged for improper enlistment, or for making a false declaration on attestation, or on account of disability brought about by his own action, or on conviction of felony, or for misconduct, bounty is not issuable ; but if the man is discharged for any other reason before demobilization, or is killed in action, or dies from any cause resultant from Military service, the bounty to which he would have been entitled is credited to his final account. Men who were up for annual training at the date of mobilization are not required to refund any portion of the training bounty they may have received.

**A.O. 86/1916** was published on February 20, 1916, and provides for the payment of a bounty of £15 to any N.C.O. or man who, having completed his term of service (not less than twelve years), together with the extra year required under Section 87 of the Army Act, agrees to continue in the service for the duration of the War.

This bounty was not issued, however, to Warrant Officers, Class 1, and only to men serving at the time who, after the date of publication, agreed to continue in the service for the duration of the War on completion of their present engagement. The terms of this order do not apply to any Warrant Officer, N.C.O., or man who had re-enlisted before the date of this order, to continue in the service until the end of the War; nor is the bounty issuable to men who re-engaged to complete twenty-one years' service under A.O. 49/1916 or A.O. 1/1916.

The bounties provided under the orders quoted above are issuable to the men enlisted or mobilized while they were in force, that is to say, they cannot be precluded

from receiving such bounties by any subsequent order.

**A.O. 209/1916,** however, sweeps away the provisions of those orders, and rigorously enforces the provisions of the Military Service Act, 1916 (Session 2), and it is under the terms of this order that all bounties are now issued, unless eligible prior to the date when this order was published, June 20, 1916.

The broad condition of issue under the terms of this order was laid down by Mr. Forster in the House of Commons, February 12, 1917, when he said—

'Bounty is given only to men who were serving on an Army engagement on August 4, 1914.' This reply was in answer to a question by Mr. Jowett regarding a man who, after serving twelve years prior to the South African War, in which he served one year and seven months, and volunteered again in September, 1914.

This is the principle upon which this order rests, and which by its provisions cancels A.O. 86/1916. The order provides for the issue of 'Bounty to soldiers retained in the service or recalled to the Colours under the provisions of the Military Service Act, 1916 (Session 2), and to soldiers who have voluntarily undertaken to continue to serve, re-enlisted, re-engaged, etc.'

**To Whom Issuable.** The bounties as specified are issuable to any Warrant Officer, N.C.O., or man, whether serving on a regular Special Reserve or Territorial Force attestation, the depôt of whose unit is situated in the United Kingdom. The conditions are—

(*a*) That the man must be retained in the service for the duration of the War under the Military Service Act on the expiration of his engagement, together with the extra year's service required by the Army Act; or—

(*b*) He must have been discharged from the service since the commencement of the present War on the termination of his engagement as defined by the regulations and he must be recalled to the Colours; or—

(*c*) He must have already agreed to continue in the service, or re-engaged, and it is provided that if the man has already received bounty issuable under the terms of A.O. 86/1916, the amount of such bounty shall be de-

ducted from the bounty issuable under the terms of the order.

The bounty is also issuable to a man who, having been discharged from the service since the commencement of the present War on the termination of his engagement, has voluntarily attested or re-enlisted for the duration of War, or re-enlisted under the terms of A.O. 79/1916, which provides for the re-enlistment of certain N.C.O.'s and men discharged from the regular army since the commencement of the present War, on the termination of their engagement to re-enlist, in order that they might complete twenty-one years' service with a view to pension, or who may be liable to serve under the terms of the Military Service Act, and who may, if liable under the Military Service Act, re-enlist before being called to the Colours, or who, not having attained the age of 41 years before the date appointed under that Act, and 'being ordinarily resident in Ireland and not, therefore, liable to recall under its provisions,' voluntarily enlists.

**The Scale.** Men who come within the scope of these requirements are eligible to receive the following bounties—

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| For less than twelve years' service . . | 15 | 0 | 0 |
| For more than twelve and less than twenty-two years' service. . . . . | 20 | 0 | 0 |
| For twenty-two or more years' service . | 25 | 0 | 0 |

These bounties are issuable on the date when the soldier completes his current engagement, together with the additional year required under the Army Act on which date his extended period of service commences.

Men who desire to re-engage or re-enlist in order to complete twenty-one years' service, with a view to pension, may do so, if eligible, under the terms of Army Orders 46 and 79/1916, and have claim to bounties issuable under this order.

**When not Payable.** Bounty is not issuable to an attested man, whether under the Military Service Act or voluntarily, unless and until he is called to the Colours.

The provisions of this order are not applicable to—

(*a*) Men who were not serving on August 4, 1914.

(*b*) Men not liable under the Military Service Act on account of age, but who, subsequent to the date of this order (June 20, 1916), voluntarily re-enlisted or re-engaged for the duration of the War.

(*c*) Men serving with a unit whose depôt is outside the United Kingdom, except in the case of a soldier transferred to such a unit from a unit whose depôt is within the United Kingdom.

The provisions of this order are extended by A.O. 297/1916, which provides that where soldiers of the Territorial Force who were serving on mobilization have, during the period of the War, a bounty of £15, will be issuable under the conditions of the above-mentioned order 209/1916, providing that the soldiers in question are retained in the service beyond the date on which they would have been due for discharge had they remained on their Territorial Force engagement and after having served the extra year required by the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act.

The terms of the order do not apply to any cases of re-enlistment into the regular army sanctioned at the soldier's own request, or where, prior to the issue of A.O. 282/1915, Territorial Force soldiers enlisted in the regular army in the ordinary way. The units to which the terms of this order apply are—

Yeomanry, Farriers, Shoeing Smiths, etc., who have re-enlisted into the regular cavalry, artillery, etc.

R.A. specialists re-enlisted into regular units and men re-enlisted in siege batteries or in A.A. Sections.

R.E. men who have re-enlisted into the tunnelling companies, special companies and signal units.

Cyclists enlisted in the Army Cyclists' Corps.

A.S.C. men of the divisional supply columns re-enlisted into the regular A.S.C.

R.A.M.C. men re-enlisted into the regular units.

All Arms. Men re-enlisted in the R.F.C., the Machine Gun Corps, or Corps of the School of Musketry.

A.O. 282/1915, referred to above, was issued on July 22, 1915, under the terms of which paragraphs 144/145 of the Territorial Force Regulations are sus-

pended; consequently, the bounties issuable under the terms of A.O. 297/1916 are not payable to Territorial soldiers who enlisted into the regular army in the ordinary way, prior to July 22, 1915.

**How Paid.** If a man re-engages or is retained in the service, and bounty is issuable to him, only one-third of the amount is payable at the commencement of his extended period of service; the balance, with interest at 5 per cent., will be paid him on his discharge, or, in the event of his death, will be credited to his estate.

A man who re-enlists, or is recalled to the Colours, is given the option of receiving the whole or any part of the bounty issuable in cash, the balance to be paid, with interest, on discharge or demobilization, or, in the event of his death, to be credited to his estate.

It should be noted that, in addition to the bounties issuable to National Reservists, Class 1, on mobilization, a man, on completing his service plus the extra year, is entitled to the additional bounty provided under A.O. 209/1916 if retained.

A man discharged as an invalid during the War, who enlists again, is entitled to bounty when he completes the attestation from which he was discharged.

If any man has received bounty under the terms of A.O. 86/1916, he will, if retained, receive £5 or £10 as he is entitled under A.O. 209/1916, to £20 or £25. The interest payable on bounties is set forth in A.O. 251/1916, and simply means a payment of 1*d.* for every completed month over £1, or unpaid balance, from the date of the new period of service.

**Men Retained.** A man retained in the service receives a bounty. Men over 41 who volunteer on the expiration of their engagement do not receive bounty. If any man has qualified for bounty under paragraph 1 (III) or (IV) of A.O. 209/1916, and he became non-effective before the date of that order, the amount due is paid to him or credited to his estate. No bounty is issuable, however, in the case of a man who had agreed to continue in the service under Army Order 252 or 253 of 1915, or who had re-engaged, if he became non-effective before entering upon

the extended period of his service. A man who re-engaged to complete twenty-one years since August 4, 1914, and before the issue of A.O. 49/1914, is eligible for bounty under paragraphs 1 (IV) and 5 of the order.

**Men Who Re-engage.** A man who has been permitted before the discontinuance of discharge on termination of engagement, under the provisions of A.O. 202/1916, to continue in the service beyond twenty-one years under the terms of paragraph 270 of the King's Regulations, will only be eligible for bounty if he gives three months' notice under paragraph 272 of those Regulations, and is retained in the service under the Military Service Act after completing a year's service (A.O. 76/1915) beyond the expiration of three months' notice.

To obtain bounty, such a man will not require to give notice of his wish to be discharged, and not to have attained the age of 41 on completion of fifteen months' further service. A man permitted to continue beyond twenty-one years, under paragraph 270 of the King's Regulations since the discontinuance of discharge on termination of engagement under A.O. 202/1916, will be eligible on completion of twenty-two years' service if he has not then attained the age of 41 and become eligible to retention under the Military Service Act.

A man who re-engages, or agreed to continue in the service, and is subsequently released from the Colours for employment on munition work, is eligible for bounty under the conditions of A.O. 209/1916, although still a munition worker when bounty becomes due. A man who, while released for munition work from the Colours, reaches the end of his current engagement, with the extra year required by the Army Act, or the provisions of the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act, and is retained in the service under the Military Services Act, is eligible for bounty. Bounty will not, however, be admissible for an ex-soldier engaged as a civilian on munition work who becomes eligible for recall under the Military Services Act, but is not actually recalled to the Colours.

**Men in T.F.** Men serving on T.F. attestations who were deemed to have enlisted in the regular army for the period

of the War under the M.S.A. and passed to Army Reserve, Class B, are not entitled to any bounty under 209/1916 on the termination of their T.F. engagement with the extra year required under Section 9 (5) of the Territorial Forces Act of 1907, as that attestation is cancelled by the Military Service Act (A.C.I. 2204/1916).

**Enlistment for Period of War.** Men enlisted on a War engagement on August 4, 1914, and not on August 5, 1914, other than men in Category C of the Special Reserve, are not entitled to bounty at the expiration of that engagement during the War under 209/1916.

**Men Transferred to Naval Units.** Time-expired soldiers joining or transferred to the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, Royal Naval Air Service, Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve, and Royal Naval Division, who were retained in the service or recalled to the Colours under the M.S.A., 1916, otherwise eligible under A.O. 201/1916, do not forfeit their claim if they are transferred to or join the Royal Naval Division.

The bounty is not admissible for an ex-soldier who elects to serve in a Naval unit other than the Royal Naval Division, nor for an ex-soldier who joins the Naval services above mentioned before being recalled to the Colours, or to an ex-soldier who has voluntarily enlisted in the R.N.V.R., or R.M. unit of the R.N.D. (A.C.I. 2302/1916).

A man who became due for discharge on termination of engagement before mobilization and continued to serve without re-engaging, and has not since claimed his discharge, will be eligible for bounty subject to the condition of the A.O. if he claims his discharge and is retained in the service under the Military Service Acts beyond twelve months from the date of claiming discharge.

Service in the National Reserve on August 4, 1914, is not to be regarded as service on an Army engagement for the purpose of the bounty (paragraph 7 of A.O. 209 of 1916). Service in the T.F. Reserve on August 4, 1914, is service on an Army engagement (A.C.I. 1670/1916).

Territorials who re-engaged in the ordinary way on

August 4, 1914, for a further twelve months, are entitled to full bounty.

Men who have completed the term of their engagement with the whole or part of the extra year under Section 87 of the Army Act will be immediately discharged, although they may have drawn bounty under A.O. 209/1916 and A.C.I. 1670/1916. No issue of bounty under 209/1916 should be made to men who have been retained in the Army as munition workers but released from the Colours under A.C.I. 344 and who have already received a bounty.

When discharged the balance of two-thirds will not be paid to those men who have received an advance of one-third. No recoveries will be made in cases in which the bounty or portion of it has already been issued, but in the event of such men being recalled to the Colours under the M.S.A., they will only be entitled on final discharge to the balance which they have not already received.

No distinction is made in the case of men who voluntarily re-engaged under A.O. 86/1916 and received the £15 bounty. They will be discharged at once, and no recovery will be made.

All future cases of munition workers becoming time-expired will be dealt with under A.O. 338/1916.

Men discharged from the Army, time-expired under this instruction come at once, under the M.S.A. No. 2, unless accepted by being over 41 years of age for twelve or more years' service, will be at once entered in Section B of the Army Reserve (A.C.I. 316/1917).

A man to whom re-engagement bounty is due, and who receives any portion of it, is not entitled to the balance if transferred to Class W and discharged before being recalled to the Colours. A.C.I. 316/17. 789/17.

A man who was permitted to continue in the service beyond 21 years on the 15/3/07, and who has not received notice to terminate that engagement does not fulfil the conditions of A.O. 209 of 1916.

If more than one month elapses between completion of any period of service and re-engagement, the bounty issuable is that for the term of the first completed service.

A man is not eligible for a Bounty—

1. If he has attained the age of 41 years prior to the passing of the Military Service Act, or

2. If he has not completed more than 12 years' service.

## The National Reserve

According to the latest issue of National Reserve Regulations, members of this body are to be divided into classes as follows—

Class I. Officers and other ranks under 42 years of age who satisfy the medical requirements as to their physical fitness to join a combatant unit for service in the field at home or abroad. Until further orders this class is open for Officers and other ranks who have previously served in the Regular or Auxiliary Infantry only.

Class II. Officers, Warrant Officers and Serjeants under the age of 55 years, and rank and file under the age of 59 years, who satisfy the medical requirements as to their physical fitness to join a combatant unit for home defence, or for duty in fixed positions, or for administrative work at home. This class is open for those who have served in any branch of H.M. service.

Class III. This class will consist of those who are unable to take any obligation, and will be divided into three sections—

(*a*) Officers and other ranks who are qualified by age, etc., for Class I.

(*b*) Officers and other ranks who are qualified by age, etc., for Class II.

(*c*) Officers and other ranks who are not qualified for either Class I or II, and who will be regarded as honorary members of the National Reserve.

On reaching the age limit for either Class I or II, a member will be struck off the strength of that class; he may, however, voluntarily transfer his name to the next class.

Although members are not required to undertake a

definite liability for service, those who desire to register their names in Classes I or II are invited to sign an honourable obligation to the effect that they will present themselves for service when required at the appointed place in time of imminent national danger.

Members of these two classes will then, so far as their services are required, be made use of to reinforce existing units of the Regular Army, or to fill up existing vacancies, and provide for wastage on and after mobilization of the Territorial Force, strengthen garrisons, guard vulnerable points, be employed as specialists or tradesmen in technical branches, or in hospitals, veterinary, remount, clerical, recruiting or other Military duties.

**Pay, Allowances and Gratuities on Mobilization.**—Members of all ranks and classes who are duly accepted for service on mobilization, whether with the Regular Army or Territorial Force, will recover the current Army rates of pay and allowances, on the ranks and appointments in which they are employed.

In addition to the above, all Warrant Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers and men of Class I will, on mobilization, receive a gratuity of £10, and those of Class II a gratuity of £5.

Members who are discharged for disabilities due to Military service will be eligible for disability pensions on the same terms as Regular soldiers under the Pay Warrant.

The widow and children of members who die from the direct consequences of Military service are eligible for pensions and compassionate allowances on the same terms as widows and children of Regular soldiers under the Pay Warrant. Periods of service rendered by members who are pensioners, if recalled and re-enlisted on account of imminent national danger, will count towards an increase of pension.

**Medical Inspection.**—Members in Class I will be required to undergo a modified medical examination.

Members in Class II.—No medical examination is required.

**Special note to Members of Class II.**—Members of Class II who are willing to be allotted on mobilization

to any particular Territorial unit should specify the unit on the back of the Army form.

Regulation 11 of the National Reserve Regulations provides that periods of service rendered by National Reservists who are pensioners, if recalled and re-enlisted on account of imminent national danger, will count towards an increased pension. This regulation was, however, cancelled by Army Order 358/1914. An exception is made, however, in the case of men who are discharged medically unfit, or are disabled in consequence of wounds received while on Military service.

Special Reservists and soldiers of the Territorial Forces will on discharge or re-transfer to the Reserve on demobilization, or on disembodiment, become entitled to the gratuity provided by Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant of 1914, that is, a gratuity of £1 for each full year and for any uncompleted portion of a year with the Colours allowed to reckon to service subject to certain conditions. If the man is discharged to temporary pension, is no longer physically fit for War service, without pension, the gratuity is not less than £2, in other cases not less than 30*s*.

Reservists recalled to the Colours and discharged, or transferred to the Reserve on demobilization, are entitled to a gratuity ; but the total amount previously issued in respect of their Colour service and the amount due in respect of their mobilized service with the Colours must not exceed the maximum as given above, except in the case of Reservists, Section D, who, in respect of previous Colour service have received the full gratuity. These men will on discharge receive only such gratuity as may be issuable under the terms of the Warrant in the case of a man without previous Colour service, and the amount of the gratuity would be based in all cases on mobilized service with the Colours only. By the terms of A.O. 502/1914, soldiers who enlisted for three years' service or less with the Colours and who, owing to the War, are retained for a longer period, are also entitled to a gratuity under the conditions of Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant. This gratuity is payable to the representatives of a soldier,

if retained with the Colours and who dies while serving, providing that he would have been entitled to such gratuity had he been discharged for physical unfitness without pension.

No gratuity is issuable in the case of a soldier who is sentenced to death by Court Martial or by the Civil Power, or who dies in a state of mutiny.

The gratuity issuable under the terms of A.O. 427/1914 is payable to the representatives of a man who enlisted under the terms of A.O. 283/1914, but the special gratuity of £5 referred to in paragraph 12 of A.O. 283/1914 is only issuable to the soldier himself on discharge, except for misconduct.

Every National Reservist who may be entitled to bounty or gratuity should apply through the Officer commanding of his unit, or to the Secretary of the Territorial Force Association by whom he was registered, for a certificate showing that he was registered in Class 1 or 2 prior to August 11, 1914.

**Extra Pay, National Reserve.** Members of the National Reserve who enlisted in the Regular Army or Territorial Force are eligible for proficiency pay, engineer pay, or corps pay, under the Regulations governing the grant of these emoluments, subject to the modification that if a re-enlisted soldier was under his prior attestation or engagement entitled to engineer pay or corps pay in virtue of a trade qualification, he may receive the rate of pay to which he is entitled until re-tested.

By A.O. 81/1915, paragraph 415, of the King's Regulations, as amended by A.O. 340/1913, are further amended by the insertion of the following—

'The character of a mobilized reservist on re-transfer to the Reserve, or on discharge, will be assessed on that period of service only during which he was mobilized.'

**Pay Reservists.** Engineer pay is issuable to non-commissioned officers and men of the Royal Engineers Special Reserve and Territorial Forces on mobilization for seven days of the week at the rates and under the conditions prescribed for the regular force in Articles 829 to 848 of the Pay Warrant 913. The rates of Regimental pay

are those prescribed for the regular forces in Article 823.

The procedure by which soldiers are transferred to the Reserve originated with A.O. 415/1915, which provides that men may be transferred to the Army Reserve and remain with that Reserve until such time as their services may be required without emoluments from the Army funds. This order was amended and extended by A.O. 110/1916, which provided that men should not only receive no emoluments from Army funds during the period of their service in the Reserve prior to being called to the Colours, or in the event of their subsequent relegation to the Reserve during any further period of service therein.

The original National Reserve was intended to be a register of officers and men supplementary to the Army. It was made, however, a unit of the Army by its transformation into the Royal Defence Corps.

A man registered in Class III is not eligible for the National Service gratuity, which only applies to men registered in Classes I and II.

Reservists, Class 1, are expected under the regulations to have presented themselves for enlistment in the Regular Army or Special Reserve at the outbreak of War. If rejected on medical or physical grounds the Army Council may award a gratuity of £5; the evidence usually required is the certificates of the Recruiting Officer before whom the man first presents himself for enlistment. If a man, however, enlists in the Territorial Force, without having previously presented himself at the Recruiting Office, he is not eligible for gratuity.

By War Office letter, 9 Reserve/1259 F.M. dated August 12, 1914, all men who were registered in Classes I and II before the 11th inst., and who were or have been called up for enlistment by proper authority, will receive the gratuities on enlistment.

Men registered in Class II prior to August 11, 1914, will be eligible for the higher gratuity of £10 on being called up and being enlisted for general service, even though they did not elect for general service until after that date.

The Army Council have issued instructions that a National Reservist to be eligible (if otherwise eligible) for a National Reserve gratuity must have joined for duty before the 1st December, 1915.

### RESERVE PAY, ETC.

| | |
|---|---|
| Section A men . . . | 1*s.* 0*d.* per day. |
| „ B and D men . . | 6*d.* „ |

Men transferred after two years' service are entitled to 4*d.* per day, providing they enlisted after October 19, 1905. If called out in aid of the Civil Power, a reservist is granted 6*d.* per day extra pay, and a recruit 4*d.* for each drill, in addition to his reserve pay when called on for Army service.

### RESERVE PAY—FLYING CORPS

R.F.C. men of the Military section or wing transferred to the Reserve are entitled to a payment of £10 per annum upon passing a quarterly flying test.

## Additional Reserve Units.

**Class P. (P.T.) Reserve.** Men of these units should be fit for service in a category not lower than C3, whose services are considered to be temporarily of greater value to the country in civil life than in the Army, but who, as a result of Military service, have contracted disability, which would, if they were discharged, have rendered them eligible for consideration for a disability pension, or who are qualified by length of service to receive pension.

Men transferred to Class P. or P.T. will be supplied with a civilian great-coat on transfer.

The payment of pension to a man transferred to this unit, whether for service or disability, ceases when the man is recalled to the Colours.

The officer in charge of the Records obtains the man's signature to A.F.W. 3529 for this purpose.

Class P. and P. (T.) of the Reserve are composed of men of the Regular Army or T.F.

Qualification for a service pension necessitates that a disabled soldier must have fourteen or more years' service on an Army engagement.

**C.W. (W.T.) or T. Reserve.** Men have been transferred to C.W. or W.T. after service with the Colours on substitution or otherwise, and it has been claimed that they should have been transferred to P. or P.T .of the Reserve.

Instruction is given that any man who has served with the Colours and has been transferred for any reason except on compassionate grounds to C.W., W.T., or T. without being medically boarded, on transfer shall be asked to state—

(*a*) Whether he was suffering from a disability at the time of his transfer to C.W., W.T., or T. of the Reserve, and if so, the nature of it.

(*b*) If suffering from a disability when transferred to Class W., W.T or T. of the Reserve, whether he claims that it was caused or aggravated by Military service.

The officer in charge of the Records is instructed to report as to whether, in his judgment from an inspection of the Records, the man would have been eligible for C.P. or P.T. had he been brought before a medical board, and if so, the O.C.R. is instructed to bring to the notice of the D.D.M.S. of the Command any case in which such a probability exists (A.C.I. 448/1917.)

**Class W., W. (T.) or T. of the Reserve.** Men transferred to these units will receive Army pay, separation or dependants' allowance as in course of issue, and ration allowance at the current rate, whether they reside at their own homes or not, for the first seven days after their transfer.

Paragraph 3 of A.C.I. 2119/1916, remains in force. This provides that for the first seven days of a man's civil employment, he will receive no civil pay, but army emoluments only.

Army Order 110/1916 provides that 'Whereas under the provisions of the M.S.A. Act, 1916, it is provided that 'certain men shall be deemed to have enlisted in our

Regular Forces for general service with the Colours, or in the Reserve for the period of the War, and to have been forthwith transferred to the Reserve. . . . Our will and pleasure is that such men while serving in the Reserve shall receive no emoluments from Army funds either during their service therein PRIOR TO BEING CALLED TO THE COLOURS, or in the event of their subsequent relegation to the Reserve during any further period of service therein.'

There are two points in connection with this order that are quite clear—

(*a*) The men covered by the terms of this order are regarded as being in the Reserve, and

(*b*) Their subsequent relegation after general service to the Reserve is anticipated.

This order is the vehicle by which men enlisted and not at the moment desirable for general service are brought within the jurisdiction of the Military authorities to the extent of attestation and registration. The date of this order is March 1, 1916.

Army Order 203/1916 was published on June 8 in that year. This order established Class W. of the Reserve 'for all soldiers whose services are deemed to be more valuable to the country in civil than in military employment.'

Clause 2 of the order provides that men transferred to this unit 'will receive no pay or other emoluments from Army funds, and will not wear uniform.'

Clause 3 provides that they 'will be liable at any time to be recalled for service with the Colours, either individually or collectively, and by means of either individual or public notification.'

The purpose of this order is not clear, despite the statement that the new unit is intended to embrace men whose services are deemed more valuable in civil than in Military employment, because—

(*a*) Many of these men are unable to follow any employment; and—

(*b*) Those who are able to follow employment are not able to obtain it very often, because the employer will not

engage men who are not discharged from the Army, and who are in consequence liable to be called up again for service.

As a matter of fact men transferred to Class W. of the Reserve are, in the vast majority of cases, men who, were it not for their relegation to this unit, would be discharged from the service under paragraph 392, xvi, of the King's Regulations, i.e., 'no longer physically fit for service,' and who are classified medically C1, C2 and C3, which fact alone proves the lessened earning capacity, that is, or is not due to a greater or less extent to Military service.

The relation of these men to the National Insurance Act is invidious.

The deductions from a soldier's pay of contributions are compulsory, except in specified cases, as provided for by Army Orders 378/1914, 13/1915 and 36/1915. Other exceptions are provided for in Section 46, Clause 1, of the Act.

The Act specifically details the benefits to which men who are members of Approved Societies and Post Office contributors are entitled, before and after discharge.

The Act provides that discharge in the case of a seaman, marine or soldier on the completion of any term of service who is transferred to a Reserve shall include such transfer.

Army Order 110/1916 provides for the transfer of men to a Reserve on their enlistment, and in an instruction issued with this order it is stated that men so deemed to have been transferred to the Reserve will be ineligible on such transfer or discharge to the Gratuity provided by Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant of 1914.

Classes T. and P. P. (T.) were created by A.O 355/16, published October 10, 1916, for certain men whose services are deemed for the time being more valuable to the country in civil than in Military employment.

Class T. consists of skilled men of certain specified trades 'who otherwise would pass to Class W. Army Reserve on leaving the Colours, or on transfer from Class B. Army Reserve.' The latter are men who have not completed the period of Colour service for which they originally

enlisted, or men the residue of whose term of Colour service has been converted into service in the Reserve. Men in Class T. Army Reserve receive no pay or other emoluments from Army funds.

Classes P. and P. (T.) are companion classes of the Army and Territorial Forces Reserve. The object of this class of the Reserve is said to be the prevention of the relegation of men to Class W. W. (T.) or T. of the Reserve. The date of transfer to Class P. or P. (T.) is twenty-one days after the date on which the transfer is approved, and the soldier and also his dependants are treated for all purposes of pay, allowances, gratuity on discharge, civilian clothing and pension, etc., as if the man had been discharged on the date of transfer.

**Class W.** Men who are not fit for general service, and who have been passed to Class W. of the Reserve, may enrol as Army Reserve Munition Workers, the intention being that they should act as substitutes for men released from general service.

**Miners.** Special War Office instructions were issued on August 30, 1916, that miners were not to be transferred to Class W. of the Reserve unless fit to resume their employment.

Men whose disabilities are caused or aggravated by Military service, or who are qualified by length of service to receive a service pension, are not to be transferred to Class W. of the Reserve, but to Class P.

**Army Council Instruction** A.O.I. 2429/1916 reads as follows—

'Recall to the Colours and admission to Military Hospital of men in Class W. Army Reserve, or W. (T.) T.F. Reserve, suffering from disabilities directly attributable to or aggravated by Military service.'

It has been decided to extend the operation of paragraphs 4 and 5 of A.C.I. 2217 of 1916 as follows—

1. When a Class W. Reservist reports to a Military Officer of Hospital suffering from a disability which he claims is directly attributable to or has been aggravated by Military service, his case should be brought to the notice of the D.D.M.S. of the Command concerned, with

relevant medical evidence to establish his contention as to the cause of his disability.

If from this evidence the D.D.M.S. considers the man to be suffering from a disability directly attributable to or aggravated by Military service, he will have the man brought before a Medical Board at the Military station most convenient to the man's place of residence.

2. If the disability is decided by the Medical Board to be attributable to or aggravated by Military service, the man will be admitted to the nearest Military Hospital at which accommodation is available, the Officer in charge of Hospital notifying the Officer in charge of Records at the same time. The man will be re-transferred from the Reserve to the Colours, and again taken on Army Pay and allowances as from the date of his admission to hospital. The Officer in charge of the Military Hospital should issue to the man a copy of A.F.O. 1847 (Insurance postcard re-admitting him to Army Insurance obtainable by indent in the ordinary way), dated accordingly, and notify the Regimental Paymaster of the man's admission under this Instruction (quoting number). When further treatment in hospital is unnecessary the man will be medically boarded, and if his health is sufficiently restored, he will be re-transferred to Class W. or W. (T.) of the Reserve. Should this not be the case, he will be passed to Class P. or P. (T.) or discharged from the Army under the usual procedure.

If the man is discharged from the service A.F.O. 1845 (Insurance postcard) will be sent to him direct by the Regimental Paymaster (following the procedure of paragraph 3, A.C.I. 2018 of 1916); if he is transferred to Class P. or returned to Class W., A.F.O. 1845 will be transmitted by the Regimental Paymaster to the Officer in charge of Hospital, to be handed to the man before the latter leaves hospital (on the lines of paragraph 4, A.C.I. 2018 of 1916).

The Statutory Committee issued on March 12, 1917, Circular No. 31.

This Circular has especial reference to Class W. or W. (T.) of the Reserve.

The Circular notes that cases have arisen where soldiers

who have been erroneously transferred to Class W. or W. (T.) Reserve are not physically fit to undertake civil employment and so maintain themselves and their dependants. It is further noted that such cases cannot be dealt with under the Regulations of the Statutory Committee, as men attached to this unit of the Reserve are not discharged soldiers, ' but are transferred by the War Office to the Reserve to enable them to undertake civil employment.'

The War Office has apparently requested the Statutory Committee to make arrangements for suitable temporary advances in cases of necessity where (1) there is a prima-facie case for the transfer of men from Class W. or W. (T.) or T. to Class P. or F. (T.) or for their discharge as disabled ; and also (2) that their disability appears to be due to their Army service. The temporary advances that may be made must not exceed 14*s.* per week.

The Local Committee are requested that should it appear that the man is suffering from disability directly attributable to War service, or aggravated by such service, report should at once be made of the case to the Officer-in-charge, Regimental Records, of the man's Unit, who will take the necessary steps to have the man examined by the Army Medical Authorities. If the man's disability is found to be attributable to or aggravated by Military service and requiring hospital treatment, this will be given to him, and he will be re-transferred to the Colours, receiving Army Pay and allowance from the date of transfer. When such treatment in hospital is no longer required, the man will be transferred back to the Reserve or discharged from the Army.

**C.W. Reserve (T.).** Men under this specification transferred to munition work are entitled to £2 10*s.* with which to provide civilian clothing, and a quarterly clothing and kit allowance of 35*s.*, in advance as from January 1, 1916. This regulation does not apply to men transferred from the regular forces (A.C.I. 2216/16).

**Class W of the Reserve.** A man transferred to Class W of the Reserve is not entitled to any gratuity under the terms of Article 1117 of the Pay Warrant.

According to Mr. Forster (House of Commons, February 14, 1917) ' men are not to be transferred to C.W. of the Reserve unless they are fit to take up the work for which they are transferred.' The trouble is that they are not transferred to any work, but because they are not capable of active service, and are transferred to find work (if they can) such as they are capable of performing.

Men who have lost their right eye will, if otherwise physically fit, be categoried B or C (ii) or (iii).

Men who have lost their left eye, otherwise physically fit, will be passed into Class W. Army Reserve. They may be called up later (if necessary) for general service.

In reply to a question by Sir Montague Barlow, the Under-Secretary of State for War stated that no man is transferred to Class W. of the Reserve, except on compassionate grounds unless he has been certified by a medical board as sufficiently robust to earn a normal day's wage at the employment awaiting him, nor can he be transferred to the Reserve unless definite employment is awaiting him. The existing instructions referred to came into force on July 30 last. All men transferred to Class W. under previous instructions are sent a prepaid Army form on which they are asked to state whether they are without employment or unable to follow their civil occupation. Any man whose reply is in the affirmative is recalled to the Colours forthwith, and is either retained with the Colours or discharged, according to the medical category in which he is found to be.

Civil servants and other Government civilian employees transferred to Class W. W. (T.) or T. of the Reserve are not entitled to Army pay, separation or dependants' allowance and ration allowance in respect of the first seven days after return to civil employment.

# RETENTIONS AND RE-ENGAGEMENTS

The Army Act, Section 84, provides that—

'1. Subject to any general or special regulations from time to time made by the Army Council, a soldier of the regular forces, if in Army service, and after the expiration of nine years from the date of his original term of enlistment, may, on the recommendation of his Commanding Officer, and with the approval of the competent Military authority, be re-engaged for such further period of twenty-one years of Army service, reckoned from the date of his attestation, and inclusive of any period previously served in the Reserve.

'2. A soldier of the regular forces during his period of re-engagement shall be liable to forfeit his previous service during such period of re-engagement in like manner as he is liable under this part of this Act during the term of his original enlistment.

'3. A soldier of the regular forces who so re-engages shall make before his Commanding Officer a declaration in accordance with the said regulations.'

Section 87 sets forth that—

'1. Where the time at which a soldier of the regular forces would otherwise be entitled to be discharged occurs while a state of war exists between His Majesty and any foreign power, or while such soldier is on service beyond the seas, or while soldiers in the Reserve are required by proclamation, in pursuance of the enactments relating to the calling out of the Reserve on permanent service to continue in or re-enter upon Army service, the soldier may be detained, and his service may be prolonged for

such further period not exceeding twelve months, as the competent Military authority may order; but at the expiration of that period, or any earlier period at which the competent Military authority considers his services can be dispensed with, the soldier shall, as provided by this Act, be discharged with all convenient speed.

'3. If a soldier required under this section to be discharged or sent to the United Kingdom desires, while a state of war exists between His Majesty and any foreign power, to continue in His Majesty's service, and the competent Military authority approve, he may agree to continue as a soldier of the regular forces in the same manner in all respects as if his term of service were still unexpired, except that he may claim his discharge at the end of such state of war; or, if it is so provided by such agreement, at the expiration of any period of three months after he has given notice to his Commanding Officer of his wish to be discharged.'

**Army Order No. 49/1916** provided that soldiers below the rank of serjeant, including Section D Reservists, were allowed to re-engage when within three months of completing their existing engagement, including the extra year's service required under the Army Act. Men approved under Army Order 252/1915, were permitted to be engaged to qualify for pension by twenty-one years' service, provided that they gave notice within three months of the date of the order, i.e., January 14, 1916. No man was permitted to re-engage under the terms of this order unless he could complete fourteen years' qualifying service and eighteen years' total service before reaching the age of 45 years.

Service with the Colours or in the Reserve counts under Article 1135 of the Pay Warrant of 1914 for the purpose of establishing the date at which the soldier may be assessed for pension. This is in accordance with paragraph 11 of the National Reserve Regulations, but that paragraph was cancelled by Army Order 358/1914, consequently it must be taken that service rendered by National Reservists who were pensioners, if recalled and re-enlisted on account of imminent national danger, will

not count towards an increase of pension. Another condition to the qualifying effect of such service was, that it was only applicable to men mobilized from Sections A or B of the Reserve, and a Section D man might only count his Reserve service as qualifying service if invalided upon Military duty.

In the case of a private soldier re-engaging under the terms of this order, it was required that to be eligible for pension he must have completed fourteen years' service, on completing twenty-one years' service with the Colours. These provisions were extended in Army Order 79/1916, under the terms of which a soldier not higher in rank than a Warrant Officer, Class 2, who had been discharged after the commencement of the War, was permitted to re-enlist in his old corps in order that he might complete twenty-one years with a view to pension providing that he was an acceptable man and not below the rank of corporal. The same conditions apply as to age and qualifying service as in Army Order 49/1916, and it is provided also that all service with the Colours or in the Reserve count under Article 1135 of the Pay Warrant for the purpose of establishing the date at which a soldier shall be assessed for pension, providing that the soldier was mobilized from Sections A or B of the Reserve. The terms of this order also place the same restriction upon a Reservist of Section D, and upon a private soldier with regard to qualifying service. It is further provided that any Warrant Officer (Class 2), N.C.O., or man discharged after January 14, 1916, and re-enlisted, will be required to refund any gratuity received by him on discharge. It is further provided that such men will be replaced on the married establishment if they were on that establishment at the time of their previous discharge.

## TIME-EXPIRED MEN

Time-expired men are not entitled upon retention of service under the M.S.A. to one month's furlough. This leave was sanctioned by General Routine Order No. 1637,

a confidential document, and such furlough may be granted provided the exigencies of the Service permit. (P.W. 976).

**1622/1916 A.C.I.** Re-enlisted soldiers who have completed not less than eighteen years' service with the Colours are eligible to be recommended for the medal for long service and good conduct, provided that 419, 1748, 1749 of the King's Regulations are fulfilled.

Time spent in the Army Reserve or in civil life is not taken into account in determining the length of time that an applicant has been clear of an entry in the regimental conduct sheet.

**Ex-Warrant and Non-Commissioned Officers** are invited to enlist in the Regular Army for the duration of the War.

1. An ex-Warrant Officer on re-enlistment will forthwith be promoted to the rank he held on discharge from the Army.

2. An ex-Regular Non-Commissioned Officer, if accepted for service at home and abroad, will at once be promoted to the rank he held on discharge; if not ex-regular he will at once be promoted corporal.

3. An ex-Non-Commissioned Officer accepted for service at home only, if an ex-regular, will be given at once the acting non-commissioned rank corresponding to the rank he held on discharge; if not an ex-regular, he will be given at once the acting rank of corporal. Acting rank carries with it the pay of the full rank.

4. Ex-Non-Commissioned Officers who belong to the National Reserve, and were registered in Classes I and II before August 11, 1914, should apply before enlisting to the Secretary of the County Association in which they were registered for Army Form N.R.I.; if this is completed by the Secretary and presented to the Recruiting Officer it will enable them to obtain the gratuity of £10 if enlisting for general service, or £5 if enlisting for home service only. Pay will be given at Army rates according to rank.

A C.O. may at any time bring forward for discharge a soldier who has been permitted to continue in the service beyond twenty-one years.

The man will be discharged under 392 xxi K.R. He should receive a month's notice.

A Warrant Officer with the same service will be discharged under 392 xxiv and xxvii, and a re-enlisted pensioner under xxi and xxiv.

A man discharged under xxi is not entitled to pension, and the same ruling applies to men discharged under xxv.

It should be especially noted that if men discharged under the above regulations are again accepted for service, they are eligible for bounty under the terms of A.O. 209/1916, and for the advantages of Article 5 (*a*) of the amended Warrant.

## LEAVE OF ABSENCE

Men retained under M.S.A. 1916 (Session 2) are entitled to leave of absence under A.C.I. 646 and 869/1916 on the termination of their engagement provided they are recommended by their C.O.'s. This leave is, of course, subject to the exigencies of the Military situation, but according to Mr. Macpherson no man is entitled to claim a leave of absence. Every effort is made, however, to grant to N.C.O.'s and men, time expired and retained in the service, a month's leave. The leave is dependent on the exigency of the service (House of Commons, February 19, 1917).

Under the terms of A.O. 40/1918 a soldier who has been compulsorily retained in the service during the present War beyond twenty-one years under Section 87 of the Army Act may on discharge substitute his actual service for that of twenty-one years in the assessment of pension.

The regulations still hold good that a soldier to be eligible for Service pension when discharged on termina-

tion of engagement must have served at least twenty-one years with the Colours and Army Reserve, and if a private must reckon fourteen years' qualifying or pensionable service on completing twenty-one years' service. If an N.C.O. he must reckon at least three years' qualifying service as corporal or higher rank on completion of twenty one years' service.

These regulations apply, however, to the date of discharge, and not to the completion of twenty-one years' service, but no addition will be made to any pension calculated on this basis in respect of Army service beyond twenty-one years.

The service of a soldier discharged as a N.C.O. on medical grounds or on completion of service who, not being a pensioner, has voluntarily re-enlisted during the War, and who is finally discharged as a N.C.O., may count his total service as if it had been continuous before his final discharge or the completion of his twenty-one years' service, and according to the rank and class for pension he holds.

These regulations are retrospective in respect of any case since the beginning of the present War and apply to the assessment of pensions awarded under the terms of A.O.I. 1918.

A man over 41 at termination of his engagement is not retained against his wish if he has twelve years' service.

The Army Act, Section 79, provides that—

'In reckoning the service of a soldier in the regular forces for the purpose of discharge or of transfer to the reserve—

'1. The service shall begin to reckon from the date of his attestation; but

'2. Where a soldier of the regular forces has been guilty of any of the following offences—

(*a*) Desertion from His Majesty's service, or

(*b*) Fraudulent enlistment,

then either upon his conviction by court martial of the offence, or (if, having confessed the offence, he is liable to be tried) upon his trial being dispensed with by order

of the competent Military authority, the whole of his prior service shall be forfeited, and he shall be liable to serve as a soldier of the regular forces for the term of his original enlistment, reckoned from the date of such conviction or such order dispensing with trial, in like manner as if he had been originally attested at that date.

'Provided that the Army Council may restore all or any part of the service forfeited under this section to any soldiers who may perform good and faithful service, or may otherwise be deemed by the Army Council to merit such restoration of service, or may be recommended for such restoration of service by a court martial.'

# MEDALS AND DISTINCTIONS

Medals forfeited prior to re-enlistment may, by the provisions of Army Order 383/1915, be restored free of charge if the medals were recovered. If medals were not recovered and not in the possession of the soldier, they may be restored subject to a payment of 7*s.* 6*d.* for the medal and 1*s.* 6*d.* for the clasp, as provided in Article 1241 of the Pay Warrant of 1914. This provision was extended to men rejoining the Colours under the provisions of the Military Services Act, 1916, by Army Order 240 of 1916. Men entitled to these medals may wear their distinctive ribbons. In the case of men who are killed or die of disease, and who were eligible for these distinctions, duplicates may be issued free of charge to the next-of-kin.

These distinctions may, if the next-of-kin resides in the United Kingdom and they so desire, be publicly presented. The Victoria Cross will be presented by the King. The Military Cross, Distinguished Conduct Medal, and the Military Medal, will be presented by the G.O.C. at a parade of troops. Free railway warrants only are issued, except in special cases. No monetary award is issuable with the Military Medal or Military Cross, and the additional pension provided in Articles 775 and 1157 is not issuable to men holding commissions when the distinction is won.

**The V.C.** This distinction carries with it a special pension of £10 per annum from the date of the account in respect of which the decoration has been awarded.

An additional pension of £5 is granted for every bar awarded.

The pension may be increased to a sum not exceeding £50 a year at the discretion of the Army Council in the

event of the annuitant being unable to earn a livelihood in consequence of age or of infirmity occasioned by causes beyond his control.

**The D.C.M.** The D.C.M. carries with it 6*d.* per day additional pension if a man is discharged to pension. If a man is discharged without pension, transferred to the Reserve, or granted a commission, a gratuity is issuable of £20 by Army Order 326/1916. Article 1230 of the Pay Warrant of 1914 was amended by the addition of the words, 'an additional £20 for each bar added.'

In the event of the soldier's death, the gratuity is credited to his estate. If discharged to pension, 3*s.* 6*d.* per week in lieu of the gratuity is granted, but if the man dies before the amount of £20 has been paid, or if the pension, being temporary, expires before the total amount of £20 has been paid, the difference will be issued to a soldier or credited to his estate (A.C.I. 1608/1916).

**The Military Medal.** This distinction has precedence over the Military Medal, which carries with it no financial benefit.

**The Military Cross.** The Military Cross granted to Warrant Officers carries with it 6*d.* per day addition to any pension that may be awarded. The conditions of such award are laid down in Article 1157 of the Pay Warrant of 1914.

The Military Cross, when granted to commissioned officers, carries with it no addition to pension.

**Meritorious Medal.** The grant of this distinction was extended to N.C.O.'s below the rank of serjeant by the provisions of A.O. 352/16.

**Croix de Guerre** (War Cross). The Croix de Guerre carries with it no gratuity. This distinction, if awarded with Palm Leaf, is the nearest foreign approximation to the V.C.

**The Mons Star.** Army Order 350/1917 sets forth the terms under which the 1914 Star is to be issued to the Military forces, under the command of Field-Marshal Sir J. D. P. French G.C.B., G.C.V.O., K.C.M.G,, in France and Belgium up to midnight November 22–23, 1914.

The decoration will be a Star in bronze.

No clasp will be issued with the Star.

The riband will be red, white, and blue, shaded and watered.

Provided the claims are approved by the Army Council, the Star will be granted to all officers, warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men of the British and Indian Forces, including civilian medical practitioners, nursing sisters, nurses, and others employed with Military hospitals, who actually served in France or Belgium on the establishment of a unit of the British Expeditionary Forces between August 5, 1914, and midnight of November 22–23, 1914.

Officers (including chaplains and acting chaplains) and nursing staffs (excluding the rank and file of the Royal Army Medical Corps) if not now serving, will submit their claims direct to the Secretary, War Office; if now serving, through their present commanding officers or heads of departments, stating their rank and situation on original date of disembarkation, which must be specified.

In the case of deceased officers and other ranks, applications from their legatees or next-of-kin should, in the former case, be addressed to the Secretary, War Office (A.G. 10), and in the latter case to the Officers in Charge of Records concerned.

**Silver War Badge.** The badge may be awarded to men discharged under paragraph 392 xxi of the King's Regulations.

Officers and Nurses, V.A.D. units, civilians who served with the R.A.M.C. under an agreement for a period of service and who were employed with the allied armies overseas, providing such employed had official recognition (33/2).

By an Order in Council dated February 15, 1916, Clause 33 of the Order dated December 28, 1865, was cancelled and the following was substituted—

Any medal to which an Officer, Seaman, or Marine is entitled, but which is not issued at the time of his death, shall be disposed of as follows—

(1) When bequeathed by will, the medal shall be sent to the legatee.

(2) When not bequeathed by will, the medal shall be sent to the person standing nearest in the following order of relationship—

1. Widow.
2. Eldest surviving son.
3. Eldest surviving daughter.
4. Father.
5. Mother.
6. Eldest surviving brother.
7. Eldest surviving sister.
8. Eldest surviving half-brother.
9. Eldest surviving half-sister.

An amendment of the conditions governing the award of the Silver War Badge granted under Army Orders 316 of 1916, and 50 of 1917, has been authorized.

Under the amended conditions the badge will be issued to men who have served with the Military Forces subsequent to August 4, 1914—

Those who, having served as officers *and being still of Military age*, have retired, resigned or relinquished their commissions—

(i) After service overseas in the armed Forces of the Crown, on account of disablement or ill-health caused otherwise than by misconduct.

(ii) After service at Home, and have been medically examined and finally discharged from liability to further Military service under Sub-section (5) of Section 1 of the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, as permanently and totally disabled, otherwise than from misconduct.

Those who, having served as soldiers *and being still of Military age*, have been discharged under the conditions set forth above.

Those who, having served as officers *and being now over Military age*, have retired, resigned or relinquished their commissions.

Those who, having served as soldiers *and being now over Military age*, have been discharged otherwise than for misconduct.

Civilians who have served with the Royal Army

Medical Corps under a fixed agreement for a period of service, or who have been employed with the army overseas (provided such employment received official sanction), who have resigned their Military employment on account of wounds or sickness, and who, if of Military age, have received a final discharge under Sub-section (5) of Section 1 of the said Act.

Nurses and members of Voluntary Aid Detachments who have been discharged on account of old age, wounds, or sickness, such as would render them permanently unfit for further service.

The expression 'Served overseas in the Armed Forces of the Crown' is to be interpreted as follows—

'Served overseas' is intended to cover the cases of all those who have served out of the United Kingdom (that is Great Britain and Ireland, including the Channel Islands and the Isle of Man). It will apply to all those who have served in the Naval Forces of the Crown at sea.

'Armed Forces of the Crown' will include the Royal Naval service, the Royal Marines, any of His Majesty's Regular, Reserve or Auxiliary Forces, and any of the Expeditionary Forces raised by the Governments of His Majesty's Dominions.

The expression 'Military age' is as defined in the Military Service Acts.

**Chevrons for Service Overseas.** The award of chevrons is to denote service overseas undertaken since August 4, 1914.

The following are eligible to participate in the award—

Officers and soldiers of the Regular Army, Special Reserve and Territorial Force, and officers, Naval ratings and Royal Marines of the Royal Naval Division.

Officers, soldiers and followers of the Indian Army and Indian Army Reserve.

Officers and soldiers of Overseas Forces.

Native troops in East and West Africa.

Members of Queen Alexandra's Imperial Military Nursing Service, retired members of the Army Nursing Service, members of Queen Alexandra's Military Nursing

Service for India, the Territorial Force Nursing Service, and Oversea Nursing Services.

Members of the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps.

Civilians attached to British Forces in an official capacity.

Native Labour Corps.

Chinese Labour Corps.

Members of officially recognized Voluntary Aid Detachments.

Personnel working under the Joint War Committee of the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, and under the St. Andrew's Ambulance Association, if under the direct authority and supervision of the War Office.

Personnel of the Women's Legion employed under War Office authority.

The date for the award of the first chevron is that on which the individual left the United Kingdom in the case of those who proceeded from home; and August 5, 1914, in the case of those serving abroad. In the case of Oversea troops, the date of leaving their own country, or where employed in local operations, the date of crossing the frontier or that on which they commenced to take part in active operations. Additional chevrons will be awarded for each successive aggregate period of twelve months' service outside the United Kingdom; in the case of Oversea troops, away from their own country or within a sphere of active operations.

The qualifying service for additional chevrons will include periods of leave up to one month where the individual returns overseas at the conclusion of such leave. Periods of absence without leave, in prison or detention, in hospital from sickness due to avoidable causes, or in captivity as a prisoner of war, will be excluded when calculating the twelve months required to qualify for an additional chevron.

Draft conducting officers and others sent overseas on duty of a temporary nature are not eligible for the award of chevrons because of such service.

Chevrons are of two colours—*red* and *blue*. The first

chevron, if earned on or before December 31, 1914, is *red*; if earned on or after January 1, 1915, it is *blue*; and all additional chevrons after the first are *blue*.

The chevrons may be worn in plain clothes by retired officers, ex-officers, pensioners, ex-soldiers and others who would, had they remained in the service, have been entitled to wear them on uniform clothing, should they wish to do so, but no issue will be made from Government stores.

# WAR LEGISLATION AND SPECIAL REGULATIONS

## THE COURTS EMERGENCY ACT

The Courts Emergency Powers Act, No. 2/1914, grants relief in certain circumstances occasioned by the present War. This relief extends to the recovery of moneys and to other similar matters.

From the date of the passing of the Act, August 31, 1914, no person may proceed to execution on or the enforcement of any judgment or order of any Court whether made before or after the passing of the Act, or the recovery of moneys to which this sub-section applies, except with the sanction of the Court.

No distress may be levied, nor may possession of any property be taken, nor can any security be realized except by the mortgagee in possession. A deposit may not be forfeited and an insurance policy to which the section applies cannot lapse except with the sanction of the Court.

It is important to note that this provision applies to 'any sum of money due and payable in pursuance of a contract made before the officer or man joined His Majesty's Forces.'

The section does not apply to any sum of money other than rent at or exceeding £50 per annum due and payable upon an agreement made after August 4, 1914, nor does it apply to any life insurance premiums in respect of which are payable at not longer than monthly intervals and have been paid for two years prior to the above-mentioned date. If a debtor against whom a bankruptcy petition

has been presented is able to prove that his inability to meet his obligations is due to circumstances attributable directly or indirectly to the present War, the Court may stay the proceedings for such time and subject to such conditions as it may think fit.

The Amended Act of 1916 empowers the Court to authorize the grant of a new lease for a term of twenty-one years or upwards on a dwelling-house to which the income of rent and mortgage interest (War Restrictions Act, 1915) applies, if the Court is satisfied that the terms of the tenancy are not less favourable to the tenant than the terms previously agreed upon.

These provisions were further amended by the Courts Emergency Powers Act of 1917, July 10, by which it is provided that any contract for the construction of any building or work or for the supply of any materials for any building or work entered into before August 4, 1914, is not enforceable, and upon application the Court may suspend or annul any contract, or stay any proceedings for the enforcement of the contract or any term thereof or any rights arising thereunder on such conditions (if any) as the Courts may think fit, if it was found that a contract entered into might be enforced with serious hardship in consequence of 'the acquisition or use by or on behalf of the Crown for the purposes of the present War of any shop or other property,' and it has been provided that such contract may be suspended or annulled or proceedings for the enforcement of such contract may be stayed as the Court think fit. These provisions apply to any obligation relating to the supply of water, heat, light, traction or other power under any Act of Parliament, the only stipulation being that the obligation entered into may not be finally annulled.

The obligations attaching to a contract of tenancy also obtain relief by a provision that where any 'person is bound to do or abstain from doing or is under any liability if he abstains from doing or does any act or thing, and by virtue of any enactment relating to the defence of the realm or any regulation made thereunder the doing of such act or thing is wholly or partially restricted or ordered,

he shall not, during the continuance of the contract or on or after the termination thereof, be liable to any mandatory order or any injunction or interdict in respect of such act or thing, or be liable to pay any sum of money or incur any forfeiture or other penalty in respect of the failure to do or the doing of such act or thing, if and in so far as the failure to do or the doing of such act or thing is attributable to compliance with such restriction or order as aforesaid.'

It is provided, however, that—

'If any restriction is removed during the currency of the contract, the obligation shall be fulfilled as soon as may be after the restriction is removed.

'If the restriction has not been removed before the termination of the contract, the person to whom the relief is given shall be liable to pay as damages a sum not exceeding the expenditure (if any) which would have been entailed by the fulfilment of the obligation.'

If the non-fulfilment of any contract (not being a contract of tenancy) was or is due to the compliance on the part of any person with any requirement of a Government department with the object of preventing transactions which might be contrary to national interests in connection with the present War, proof of that fact shall be a good defence to any action or proceeding in respect of the non-fulfilment of the contract.

## THE INCREASE OF RENT MORTGAGE INTEREST (WAR RESTRICTIONS) ACT, 1915

This Act became a necessity in the early days of the war.

It provides that the landlord of a dwelling-house to which the Act applies cannot legally recover payment of rent above that payable on August 3, 1914. The terms of the Act have, in the main, been complied with because of the results that follow transgression, but there are devious ways by which the landlord of cottage property may turn the circumstances of the war to advantage. A 'clear rent book' is a vital necessity to tenants of

cottage property when applying for a new residence, and it is the only evidence of respectability or stability that many landlords will accept. One ingenious method is for the landlord to carry forward, week by week, the amount of increased rent he proposes to exact, and to enable him to do this safely he deliberately, in many cases, carries away the old rent book, and supplies a new one in which the illegally accrued arrears are set down as a lump sum with, of course, no explanation as to how they have been incurred. It cannot be too widely known that these arrears are not recoverable. This, however, will not help the tenant much in search after another house if need arises.

The Courts (Emergency Powers) Act, 1917, especially provides that 'if any person in any rent book or similar document makes an entry showing or purporting to show any tenant as being in arrear in respect of any sum which by virtue of the said Act, is irrecoverable, or if, where any such entry has before the passing of this Act been made by or on behalf of any landlord, the landlord, on being requested, by or on the behalf of the tenant so to do, refuses or neglects to delete the entry, he shall on summary conviction be liable to a fine not exceeding ten pounds.' If any sum or sums have been paid, whether before or after the passing of this Act, on account of any rent or mortgage interest, which under the terms of Rent and Mortgage Interest (War Restrictions) Act, 1915, would have been irrecoverable by the landlord or mortgagee, such sum may be recovered within six months after the date of payment, or, in the case of a payment made before the passing of this Act, within six months after it became law. The landlord may increase the rent to recover the cost of improvements or structural alterations, and these do not include decorations or repairs. It should be noted that in such cases the increase of rent may not exceed '6 per cent. per annum on the amount so expended.'

The landlord may also increase the rent by the amount of the increase in rates, water rates and other charges ordinarily paid by the tenant and compounded with the

rent, but he may not transfer to the tenant any burden or liability borne by him.

No increase of rent is due or recoverable from the tenant until after four weeks' notice in writing, accompanied by a statement setting forth the grounds upon which the increase is demanded.

No fine, premium or bonus may be demanded for the renewal or continuance of any tenancy, and any such payment made to the landlord in respect of any dwelling-house to which the Act applies since November 25, 1915, is recoverable or may be deducted from the rent, providing the tenancy agreement was entered into on or after August 4, 1914. This provision is not applicable to a lease of a dwelling-house for a term of twenty-one years or upwards.

The Act applies to a dwelling-house (or a part, if separately let as a dwelling) where the rent or rateable value of the house or part did not, on August 3, 1914, exceed £35 a year in the Metropolitan Police District and the City of London, £30 in Scotland, and £26 elsewhere.

A tenant may not be ejected so long as he pays the rent agreed upon and performs the required conditions of his tenancy, unless he has committed waste or been guilty of a nuisance or annoyance to his neighbours; or the premises are reasonably required by the landlord for the occupation of himself or some one employed by himself or one of his tenants; or there is some other reason which is considered sufficient by the Court for his ejectment.

No increased rate of interest demanded on or subsequent to August 4, 1914, is recoverable, nor may the mortgagee 'call in his mortgage' or 'take any steps for exercising any rights of foreclosure or sale' so long as interest at the standard rate is paid and is not more than twenty-one days in arrear, and providing all other required covenants are kept and observed.

There are two important qualifications to this provision. It does not apply to a mortgage where the principal money secured thereby is repayable by means of periodical instalments extending over a term of not less than ten years from the creation of the mortgage, nor does this provision affect any power of sale exercisable by a mortgagee who

was at November 25, 1915, a mortgagee in possession, or in cases where the mortgagor consents to the exercise by the mortgagee of the powers conferred by the mortgage. Nor does it apply in the case of a mortgage of a leasehold interest if the mortgagee satisfies the county court that his security is seriously diminishing in value or is otherwise in jeopardy, and that for that reason it is reasonable that the mortgage should be called in and enforced; under such circumstances, 'the court may by order authorize him to call in and enforce the same, and thereupon this subsection shall not apply to such mortgage.'

The expression 'standard rent' means the rent at which the dwelling-house was let on August 3, 1914, or where the dwelling-house was not let on that date, 'the rent at which it was last let before that date, or, in the case of a dwelling-house which was first let after the said third day of August, the rent at which it was first let.'

The expression 'standard rate of interest' means in the case of a mortgage in force on August 3, 1914, 'the rate of interest payable at that date, or, in the case of a mortgage created since that date, the original rate of interest.'

This Act will continue in force during the continuance of the present War and for a period of six months thereafter and no longer, but its expiration will not render recoverable any rent or interest which during its continuance was irrecoverable, or affect the right of a tenant to recover any sum which during the continuance was under this Act recoverable by him.

## THE EXECUTION OF TRUSTS (WAR FACILITIES ACT, 1914)

By the provisions of this measure a trustee, whether acting alone or in conjunction with others, may transfer his obligations by a duly executed power of attorney, providing that he is—

(*a*) A prisoner of war, or interned in a neutral country.

(*b*) On active service, or engaged abroad in work connected with the Red Cross, or similar organization.

The Act has no application in Scotland.

## THE DEATH DUTIES ACT, 1914

By the provisions of this measure the relief afforded by the Finance Act of 1900 is continued, but its application extends only to the widow and children or the parents of the deceased man.

## DEBTS

A Court decision has been given that a tradesman who has supplied the wife of a soldier with necessities on credit cannot recover, the assumption being that separation allowance is sufficient, and its payment implies a revocation of the husband's authority to pledge his credit (208/1).

The War Office cannot assist in the recovery of debts.

## PRISONERS

Men who are taken prisoners of war continue to receive credit for Army pay and other emoluments. Separation allowance is also issued to wives and dependants. If a man is taken prisoner through his own misconduct, pay, allotment and separation allowance continues, but other emoluments are discontinued.

## THE ARMY ACT: DEDUCTIONS

The following penal deductions may be made from the ordinary pay due to a soldier of the regular forces—

1. All ordinary pay for every day of absence either on desertion or without leave, or a prisoner of war, and for every day of imprisonment awarded by a civil court, or court martial, or if he is on board one of His Majesty's ships, by the Commanding Officer of that ship, for every day of detention or field punishment awarded by a court martial or by his Commanding Officer, and for every day whilst he is in custody on a charge for an offence of which he is afterwards convicted by a civil court or court martial, or on a charge of absence without leave for

which he is afterwards awarded detention or field punishment by his Commanding Officer.

2. All ordinary pay for every day on which he is in hospital on account of sickness certified by the proper medical officer attending on him at the hospital to have been caused by an offence under this Act committed by him.

3. The sum required to pay a fine awarded by a court martial, his Commanding Officer, or a civil court; and

4. The amount required to pay any sum ordered by the Army Council, or any officer deputed by them for the purpose, to be paid as mentioned in this Act for the maintenance of his wife or child, or of any bastard child, or towards the cost of any relief given by way of loan to his wife or child—

Provided that—

(*a*) The total amount of deductions from the ordinary pay due to a soldier in respect of the sums required to pay any compensation, fine, or sum awarded or ordered to be paid as aforesaid shall not exceed such sum as will leave to the soldier, after paying for his messing and washing, less than one penny a day. (Section 138 Army Act.)

Any deduction of pay authorized by this Act may be remitted in such manner and by such authority as may be from time to time provided by Royal Warrant, and subject to the provisions of any such warrant may be remitted by the Army Council. (Section 139.)

Every assignment of, and every charge on, and every agreement to assign or charge, and deferred pay, or Military reward payable to any officer or soldier of any of His Majesty's forces, or any pension, allowance, or relief payable to any such officer or soldier, or his wife, widow, child, or other dependant, or to any person in respect of any Military service, shall, except so far as the same is made in pursuance of a Royal Warrant for the benefit of the family of the person entitled thereto, or as may be authorized by any Act for the time being in force, be void. (Section 141.)

## RETENTIONS IN TIME OF WAR

The following has particular reference to a state of War, and is, therefore, at the moment of particular interest—

1. 'It shall be lawful for His Majesty in Council in case of imminent national danger or of great emergency, by proclamation, the occasion being first communicated to Parliament if Parliament be then sitting, or if Parliament be not then sitting declared by the proclamation, to order that the soldiers who would otherwise be entitled in pursuance of the terms of their enlistment to be transferred to the reserve shall continue in Army service.

2. 'It shall be lawful for His Majesty by any such proclamation to order the Army Council from time to time to give, and when given to revoke or vary, such directions as may seem necessary or proper for causing all or any of the soldiers mentioned in the proclamation to continue in Army service.

3. 'Every soldier for the time being required by or in pursuance of such directions to continue in Army service shall continue to serve in Army service for the same period for which he might be required to serve if he had been transferred to the reserve and called out for permanent service by a proclamation of His Majesty under the enactments relating to the reserve.

4. 'Any man who has entered the reserve in pursuance of the terms of his enlistment may be called out for permanent service by a proclamation of His Majesty under the enactments relating to the calling out of the reserve on permanent service.' (Section 88.)

## FIELD PUNISHMENT

By Section 44 (5) of the Army Act, the House of Commons abolished in 1881 corporal punishment and introduced summary punishment.

Offences for which field punishment may yet be inflicted are set forth in the above Section of the Army Act.

The King's Regulations, paragraph 487 (*a*) sets forth that 'when proposing to deal with a case summarily, a

C.O. will satisfy himself that the evidence produced before him is sufficient to disclose the exact nature of the offence. If he is not so satisfied he should remand the case for further inquiries, so that the offence as entered in the guard report may be substantially the charge upon which the accused would be arraigned in the event of his electing to be tried by a D.C.M. under the provisions of Section 46 (8) of the Army Act.'

Paragraph 46 (8) of the Army Act provides that 'where a Commanding Officer has power to deal with a case summarily under this section, and, after hearing the evidence, considers that he may so deal with the case, he shall, in every case where the award or finding involves a forfeiture of pay, and in every other case, unless he awards one of the minor punishments referred to in this section, ask the soldier charged whether he desires to be dealt with summarily or to be tried by a district court martial, and if the soldier elects to be tried by a district court martial the Commanding Officer shall take steps for bringing him to trial by a district court martial, but otherwise shall proceed to deal with the case summarily.'

**Paragraph 46 (9)** says: 'Nothing in this section shall prejudice the power of a Commanding Officer to award such minor punishments as he is for the time being authorized to award, so, however, that a minor punishment shall not be awarded for any offence for which detention exceeding seven days is awarded.'

## ABSENTEES

By A.O. 283/1917, Note 1 to Section 72 of the Army Act, was amended to read as follows—

1. In the event of a soldier being absent without leave for a period of twenty-one days, a court of inquiry must be assembled at once, unless before such court of inquiry has been assembled it has come to the knowledge of the soldier's C.O. that the soldier has been apprehended or has surrendered. In that case no court of inquiry will be held, and the facts of the soldier's absence and the deficiency (if any) of his clothing must be proved by oral evidence at any subsequent court martial (K.R. 673).

No court of inquiry will be held in the case of absconded recruits. In calculating the period of twenty-one days, the day on which the soldier became absent and the day on which the court is assembled must be excluded from the reckoning.

Article 977 of the Royal Warrant of 1914 says that a soldier shall forfeit his pay—

On a charge of absence without leave for which he is afterwards awarded detention by his Commanding Officer.

In consequence of his having confessed to having been guilty of desertion or fraudulent enlistment, if the forfeiture during the period of such confinement has been ordered by the competent Military authority.

For every day on which he is in hospital on account of sickness certified by the proper medical officer attending on him at the hospital to have been caused by an offence under the Army Act committed by him.

For any period whilst on active service during which forfeiture of pay has been awarded by a court martial or by his Commanding Officer.

A soldier is regarded as absent or in confinement for one day within the meaning of Article 977 (*a*) and (*c*)—

(1) When he has been absent without leave or in confinement for six consecutive hours, whether wholly in one day or partly in one day and partly in another.

(2) When, owing to his absence without leave or to his being in confinement, he has been prevented from fulfilling some Military duty which was thereby thrown on some other person.

## CONCESSIONS MADE TO CERTAIN DISCHARGED SOLDIERS AND SAILORS ENGAGED UPON WORK OF NATIONAL IMPORTANCE

**National Service.** 1. Instruction No. 29/1918 is of the utmost importance. It sets forth the conditions under which certain classes of discharged men may be exempted from further Naval or Military service.

2. The concessions are applicable to men liable to be dealt with under the Military Service Acts of 1916, or

the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, and are strictly limited to—

3. 'Men in civil life who have served during the present War in the armed Forces of the Crown otherwise than overseas and who—

(1) Have been or may hereafter be discharged in consequence of disablement or ill-health (including officers ceasing to hold a commission in consequence of disablement or ill-health); and—

(2) Are at the time liable under the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, to be called for medical re-examination or for service; and—

(3) Are not for the time being in possession of a valid exemption or protection from Military service.'

The concessions are also applicable to men in civil life who have been or may hereafter be discharged or 'time expired' (i.e., in consequence of the termination of their period of service), provided they have been officially reported as wounded in the present War (i.e., their names have appeared in the official casualty lists) and are not, for the time being, in possession of a valid exemption or protection from Military service, men who have served in the Royal Naval Service, the Royal Marines, any of His Majesty's Regular Reserve or Auxiliary Forces or any of the Expeditionary Forces raised by the Governments of His Majesty's Dominions and the Air Force.

The concessions do not apply to—

(*a*) A rejected man, or a discharged man who has not actually served with a corps or regiment, or a discharged man who (if in the Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve, 'if' Section, or in the Royal Marine Volunteer Reserve) has not actually served as a Naval rating. Such men are liable for service under the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917.

(*b*) Men who are temporarily excluded from the provisions of the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, while engaged upon certified agricultural work, and also—

(*c*) Men who are excluded from the provisions of the same measure in consequence of certified disablement due

to wounds, neurasthenia, or allied functional nerve disease.

(*d*) Men who have served overseas and have left or been discharged in consequence of disablement or ill-health, and who are excluded from the provisions of the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, by previous concessions remaining in force.

(*e*) Men who have been re-examined under the terms of the same measure and whose previous discharge has been confirmed on account of permanent and total disability and whose certificates of discharge have been endorsed accordingly.

(*f*) Men who have been discharged from the service in consequence of disablement or ill-health and whose period of exemption—six or twelve months, as the case may be—has not at the time expired (see Section 1 (1) and Section (4) of the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917).

(*g*) Disabled men classified 'R.R.' on re-examination under the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, 1917, and in respect of whom the period of six months from date of the statutory order under which the re-examination took place has not expired.

(*h*) Men who hold any valid exemption or protection until the same expires or is withdrawn.

The concession is applicable only upon the condition that the men to whom it applies 'obtain and continue in work of national importance.'

The following occupations are scheduled as being of national importance—

1. Shipbuilding and ship repairing.
2. Marine engineering.
3. Timber felling, sawing and hauling.
4. Munitions work, including iron ore mining and agricultural implement making.
5. Agricultural work and food production.
6. Teaching in public schools, elementary, secondary and technical, university, and university colleges and other educational institutions recognized by the Board of Education and the Scottish Education Department.

7. Employment on railways, inland waterways, tramways, etc.

8. Employment in public work such as gas, electrical and water supply undertakings, or on any other work to which priority is given by the Labour Priority Committee or as a substitute releasing a Grade 1 man for service with the Forces.

The list of occupations is by no means complete and is subject to constant revision; as a matter of fact, every case in which a claim may be made will, under the terms of paragraph (1) of this instruction, be acceded on its merits.

This paragraph provides that 'if a man not placed by an Employment Exchange claim that he is already engaged on or that he has himself found work of national importance and furnishes the required particulars,' his case will at once be investigated, and if the claim is substantiated a protection certificate will be immediately issued.

**The Opportunity Month.** Every man to whom the concession is applicable who is not engaged upon work of national importance is allowed one clear month free from all liability either for service or medical examination with a view to service, in order that if he so wishes he may obtain work of national importance and by so doing take advantage of the concession.

This 'opportunity month' commences—

1. From March 16, 1918, in the case of a man discharged in consequence of disablement or ill-health, provided the statutory period of six or twelve months, as the case may be, as set forth in the Military Service (Review of Exceptions) Act, has expired.

2. From the date of discharge in the case of men who have been wounded and who may later be discharged as time-expired.

3. From the expiration of the statutory period following the man's discharge in cases where the discharge is due to disablement or ill-health, and such statutory period has not expired.

4. From the date of expiry or withdrawal of a valid exemption or protection certificate.

An extension of the 'opportunity month' may be granted of a period—

1. Not exceeding one month upon the recommendation of the Local Advisory Committee in cases in which that body has been unable to find suitable employment for the applicant.

2. Not exceeding fourteen days if no such recommendation is made.

These extensions may be prolonged at the discretion of the Minister for National Service.

Until the expiry of the 'opportunity month,' and of any extension therefor, a man may not be recognized to report either for medical examination or service; any notice that may have been issued will be suspended until the expiration of the 'opportunity period.'

If a man to whom the concession is applicable is physically unable to engage upon work of national importance, he may apply for medical examination by a National Service Medical Board, and if found permanently and totally unfit for national service his discharge certificate will be endorsed as showing that he is free from further liability either for service or medical examination.

# WAR ORGANIZATION AND COMMITTEES

## GOVERNMENT COMMISSIONS AND COMMITTEES

**Aeronautics and Air Service Joint Committee.**—Sec., Lt.-Col. Sir M. A. P. Hankey, K.C.B., Committee of Imperial Defence, Whitehall Gardens.

**Agriculture (Fertilizers).**—Committee to arrange maintenance of fertilizers for farming. Sec., H. Chambers, Board of Agriculture, 3, St. James's Square, S.W.

**Aliens' Advisory Committee.**—Sec., W. J. H. Brodrick, Home Office, S.W.

**Aliens' Destitute Committee.**—Sec., E. Sebag-Montefiore, Home Office.

**Aliens' Scottish Advisory Committee.**—Sec., James Phillips, 39, Mornington Drive, Edinburgh.

**Aliens' Restrictions Committee.**—Sec., Lt.-Col. W. Dally Jones, Committee of Imperial Defence, Home Office, S.W.

**Allies (Supplies).**—Commission Internationale de Ravitaillement (International Commission for Purchase of Supplies for Allied Governments). Sec., R. F. H. Duke, Board of Trade (Exhibition Branch), India House, Kingsway, W.C.2.

**American Dollar Securities Committee.**—Manager, G. E. May, 19, Old Jewry, E.C.

**Army Canteens Committee.**—Sec., Major G. Henderson, 22, Grosvenor Gardens, S.W.

**Belgian Refugees' (Ireland) Committee.**—Sec., 62, Upper Mount Street, Dublin.

**British Graves.** Committee on British Graves in France and Belgium. Sec., His Majesty's Office of Works, Storey's Gate, S.W.

**Building (Labour) Committee.**—F. W. Johnston, C.S.I., C.I.E., 6, Whitehall Gardens.

**Capital Issues.**—Committee to consider and advise upon applications received by the Treasury for approval of fresh issues of capital. Sec., D. F. Buckley, Treasury Chambers, S.W.

**Chemical Products Committee.**—Sec., F. Gossling, Gwydyr House (Board of Trade), Whitehall, S.W.

**Clerical and Commercial Employments.**—Government Committee. Sec., M. H. Whitelegge, Home Office, S.W.

**Coal and Coke (Distribution) Committee.**—Secs., Wm. A. Lee and Capt. C. E. Williams, Board of Trade, 7, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Coal Exports Committee.**—Sec., E. J. Elliott, Broadway House, Tothill Street, S.W.1.

**Coal Mining Organization Committee.**—Sec., Home Office, S.W.

**Congestion of Ports Committee.**—Sec., Sir Frederick G. Dumayne, Admiralty, S.W.1.

**Contraband.**—Government Committee. Sec., Foreign Office, S.W.

**Cotton (Exports) Committee.**—Sec., H. S. Gray, Wool Trade Department, Caxton House, Tothill Street, S.W.1.

**Defence of the Realm (Losses) Commission.**—Sec., Mr. D. du B. Davidson, 133, Strand, W.C.2.

**Defence of Realm Regulations (Amendments) Committee.**—Sec., Capt. E. Shawe, War Office, S.W.1.

**Dependants' Appeals.**—Assessment Committee on Soldiers' Dependants' Appeals. Sec., J. J. R. Bridge, Salisbury House, Finsbury Pavement, E.C.

**Dependants (Medical Treatment).**—Committee for Naval and Military Dependants (Medical Treatment). Joint Secs., J. A. Barlow and J. Rae, Wellington House, Buckingham Gate, S.W.

**Distress Committee.**—Government Committee on the Prevention and Relief of Distress. Sec., A. V. Symonds, Local Government Board, S.W.

**Distress (Prevention).**—Local Government Board Committees appointed to co-operate with the Government Committee on the Prevention and Relief of Distress: (1) London, Sec. A. N. C. Shelley, Local Government Board, S.W.; (2) Women's Employment, Sec., Miss Mary MacArthur, 8, Grosvenor Place, S.W.; (3) Professional Classes, Sec., J. E. Talbot, Board of Education, S.W.

**Dominion War Contingents Committee.**—Sec., H. F. Batterbee, Colonial Office, S.W.

**Electrical Trades Committee.**—Sec., J. F. Ronca, 9, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Enemy Exports Committee.**—Sec., Foreign Office, S.W. (See 'Trading with Enemy.')

**Engineering and Shipbuilding.**—Committee on P oduction in Engineering and Shipbuilding Establishments. Sec., H. J. Wilson, Offices of the Chief Industrial Commissioner, 5, Old Palace Yard, S.W.

**Farm Produce.**—Committee for Purchase of Produce for the Forces. Sec., Capt. C. B. Rolfe, 64, Whitehall Court, S.W.

**Foodstuffs.**—Agricultural Consultative Committee on Home-grown Foodstuffs. Sec., A. Goddard, 12, Great George Street, S.W.1.

**Foodstuffs (Requisition).**—Committee on Requisitioning Foodstuffs (Carriage of). Secs., J. A. Salter and F. P. Robinson, 7, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Foreign Trade Debts Committee.**—Sec., H. Mead Taylor, 119, Victoria Street, S.W.

**Fruits (Preserved).**—Licensing Committee on Importation of Canned, Bottled, Dried and Preserved Fruits (except Currants). Sec., H. J. Phillips, 22, Carlisle Place, S.W.

**Grain Supplies Committee.**—Sec., H. D. Vigor, Board of Agriculture, 3, St. James's Square, S.W.

**Imperial Defence History.**—Sub-Committee to consider and advise on the collation of material for a future History of the War. Sec., Major E. Y. Daniel, Committee of Imperial Defence, 2, Whitehall Gardens.

**Indian Wheat Committee.**—Sec., H. D. Vigor, Board of Agriculture, 3, St. James's Square, S.W.

**Iron, etc., Trade.**—Committee on Iron, Steel, and Engineering Trades. Sec., Percy Ashley, Board of Trade, S.W.

**Labour (Scotland).**—Scottish Committee on Substitutionary Labour during the War. Sec., P. R. Laird, Scottish Office, S.W.1.

**Licensed Trade Claims (Defence of Realm Commission).**—Sec., D. du B. Davidson, 133, Strand, W.C.2.

**Liquor Traffic (Control) Central Board.**—Sec., J. C. G. Sykes, C.B., Canada House, Kingsway, W.C.

**Mercantile Marine (Victims).**—Board of Trade Committee to consider grants to members of the Mercantile Marine who have suffered through hostile operations at sea, without being in a position to recover compensation from other sources. Sec., C. F. Bickendike, 47, Victoria Street.

**Munitions (Government Advisory Committee).**—Sec., W. Sutherland, Ministry of Munitions, Whitehall Place, S.W.

**Munitions (Labour Supply) Central Committee.**—Sec., G. E. Toulmin, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Munitions (Parliamentary) Committee.**—Sec., W. Allard, 6, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Munitions Workers (Health) Committee.**—Sec., E. H. Pelham, Board of Education, King Charles Street, Whitehall, S.W.1.

**National Register Committee.**—Sec., I. G. Gibbon, Local Government Board, S.W.

**Neutral Ships (Detention) Committee.**—Sec., Hon. S. O. Henn Collins, 1, Abbey Gardens, Westminster, S.W.1.

**Oversea Prizes Disposal Committee.**—Sec., R. A. Wiseman, Colonial Office, S.W.

**Paper and Wood Pulp Royal Commission.**—Sec., Hon. J. S. Clemens, Central House, Kingsway, W.C.

**Parliamentary Recruiting Committee.**—Clerk, R. H. Davies, C.B., 12, Downing Street, S.W.1.

**Passengers (Holland).**—Home Office Advisory Committee on Passenger Traffic between United Kingdom and Holland. Sec., Col. H. F. Walker, Permit Office, Downing Street, S.W.1.

**Petrol (Control) Supplies Committee.**—Sec., H. W. Cole, 29, Abingdon Street, S.W.

**Prisoners of War Help Committee.**—Sec., B. W. Young, Savoy Hotel, Victoria Embankment, S.W.1.

**Prisoners of War (Treatment).**—Government Committee on the Treatment by the Enemy of British Prisoners of War. Sec., Mrs. A. L. Livingstone, 18, Carlton House Terrace, S.W.

**Prize Cargoes.**—Executive Committee for the purpose of dealing, otherwise than in the Prize Court, with cargo which, though possibly liable in law to condemnation as prize, might with advantage be released. Sec., H. C. Honey, Board of Trade, S.W.

**Prize Claims Committee.**—Sec., L. F. C. Danby, Goldsmith Building, Temple, E.C.

**Procurator-General.**—Advisory Committee to His Majesty's Procurator-General. Sec., A. D. Stocks, Treasury, S.W.

**Professional Classes (Distress).**—Local Government Board Committee to co-operate with the Government Committee on the Prevention and Relief of Distress in connection with Professional Classes. Sec., J. E. Talbot, Board of Education, S.W.

**Profits (Controlled Establishments : Board of Refugees).**—Sec., W. F. Wakefond, 27, Abingdon Street, S.W.1.

**Profits (Excess : Excess Profits Duty Committee).**—Joint Registrars, D. du B. Davidson and J. K. F. Cleare, 133, Strand, W.C.2.

**Railway Executive Committee.**—Sec., Major G. S. Szlumper, 35, Parliament Street.

**Reserved Occupations Committee.**—Sec., D. Todd, Gwydyr House, Whitehall, S.W.1.

**Royal Flying Corps.**—Committee of Inquiry on Administration and Command of the Royal Flying Corps. Sec., Mr. Cotes-Preedy, Grand Committee Room, Westminster Hall, S.W.1.

**Rubber and Tin.**—Committee on all questions relating to the Export of Rubber and Tin from the United Kingdom and British Possessions. Sec., J. K. Grebby, 3, Queen Anne's Gate, S.W.1.

**Ship Licensing Committee.**—Sec., T. Lodge, 1, Robert Street, Adelphi, W.C.

**Shipbuilding (Board of Trade Committee).**—Sec., T. G. Austin, Board of Trade.

**Shipping (Control) Committee.**—Sec., Capt. C. Jones, Montagu House, Whitehall, S.W.1.

**Shipping and Shipbuilding Industries Committee.**—Sec., E. H. Marker, Board of Trade, S.W.

**Sugar Supplies Royal Commission.**—Sec., C. S. Newcastle, Scotland House, S.W.1.

**Textile Industries Committee.**—Sec., T. M. Ainscough, 6, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**Timber (Home-Grown) Committee.**—Sec., H. G. Richardson, 4, The Sanctuary, Westminster, S.W.1.

**Timber (Furniture Woods, etc.).**—Licensing Committee for Importation of Furniture Woods, Hand Woods, and Veneers, and of Stones and Slates. Sec., H. J. Phillips, 22, Carlisle Place, S.W.

**Tobacco (Importation).**—Committee on Importation of Tobacco, unmanufactured and manufactured (including Cigars and Cigarettes). Sec., H. J. Phillips, 22, Carlisle Place, S.W.

**Trade Relations ('After the War' Committee).**—Sec., Hartley Withers, 12, Tokenhouse Yard, E.C.

**Trades (Distributing: Scotland).**—Government Committee on War Organization in the Distributing Trades in Scotland. Sec., P. R. Laird, Scottish Office, S.W.1.

* **Trading with Enemy Committee.**—Sec., W. P. Bowyer, 38 and 39, Parliament Street, S.W.

**War Charities Committee.**—Sec., J. A. Johnston, Home Office. (Mr. Johnston is also Secretary of the Control of Charitable War Funds Committee.)

**War Office Expenditure Committee.**—Sec., G. W. Lambert, War Office, S.W.1.

**War Output National Advisory Committee.**—Sec., W. Mosses, 6, Whitehall Gardens, S.W.1.

**War Risks Insurance Advisory Committees.**—(A) Marine, (B) Aircraft and Bombardment. Sec., J. W. Verdier, 33 and 36, King William Street, E.C.

**War Savings National Committee.**—Joint Secs., W. Allard and T. Cox, 18 and 19, Abingdon Street, Westminster, S.W.1.

**War Savings (Irish) Committee.**—Sec., J. Brennan, 51, St. Stephen's Green East, Dublin.

**War Trade (Advisory) Committee.**—Sec., L. C. Liddell, M.V.O., Winchester House, St. James's Square, S.W.

**Wheat, Flour, etc.**—International Joint Committee for the Purchase of Wheat, Flour, and Maize. Sec., H. D. Vigor, Board of Agriculture, 3, St. James's Square, S.W.

**Women's Employment (Industrial) Advisory Committee.**—Joint Secs., F. Lavington and H. M. Whitelegge, Board of Trade (Employment Department), Queen Anne's Chambers, S.W.

**Women's Employment Committee** for Leinster, Munster, and Connaught.—Sec., Miss Browning, 63, Dawson Street, Dublin.

**Women's Employment (Ulster Central Committee).**—Sec., Mrs. Mercier Clements, 5, College Gardens, Belfast.

**Women's Employment.**—Local Government Board Committee, to co-operate with the Government Committee on the Prevention and Relief of Distress in connection with Women's Employment. Sec., Miss Mary B. MacArthur, 8, Grosvenor Place, S.W.

* A new War Trade Department, set up to take over the bulk of the work done by the Committee on Trading with the Enemy. Sec., Sir N. J. Highmore, K.C.B., 4, Central Buildings, Storey's Gate, S.W.

**Work of National Importance Committee.**—Sec., H. Gibbon Prichard, 26, Abingdon Street, Westminster, S.W.1.

## WAR COMMISSIONS AND COMMITTEES

**Empire Settlement Committee.**—Sec., Mr. E. J. Harding, Colonial Office, S.W.1.

**Food Ministry**—Grosvenor House, W.1.

**Graves (Soldiers) Prince of Wales Committee.**—Sec., Capt. S. C. Taylor, Winchester House, St. James's Square, S.W.1.

**Labour Ministry.**—Sec., Sir D. J. Shackleton, C.B., Montague House, Whitehall, S.W.1.

**Trade Advisory Committees (Disabled Soldiers and Sailors).**—For details, see separate article.

Inquiries from Local Committees regarding the above should be addressed to the Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, S.W.1.

**Land Settlement after the War Committee.**—Sec., Mr. D. C. Barnard, 4, Whitehall Place, S.W.1.

**Military Service (Civil Liabilities) Department.**—Sec., Imperial House, Kingsway, W.C.2.

**Milk Distribution Committee.**—Sec., Mr. J. Mackintosh, 72, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**National Health Insurance Commission.**—Wellington House, Buckingham Gate, S.W.1.

**National Relief Fund.**—Sec., Mr. L. G. Brock, 3, Queen Anne's Gate, S.W.1.

**National Service Department.**—Sec., Windsor Hotel, Westminster, S.W.1.

**Pensions Ministry.**—Westminster House, Millbank, S.W.1.

**Pensions Appeal Tribunal.**—Sec., Mr. J. H. Parry, 22, Abingdon Street, S.W.1.

**Relief of Distress Committee.**—Sec., Mr. A. V. Symonds, C.B., Local Government Board, S.W.1.

1. London.—Sec., Mr. A. N. C. Shelley, Local Government Board, S.W.1.
2. Women's Employment.—Sec., Miss M. R. MacArthur, 8, Grosvenor Place, S.W.1.
3. Professional Classes.—Sec., Mr. J. E. Talbot, Board of Education, S.W.1.

**Petrol Control Committee.**—Chief Clerk, Mr. H. W. Cole, 19, Berkeley Street, W.1.

**Soldiers and Sailors (Disabled) Employment on British Railways Committee.**—Sec., Mr. I. P. Scott Main, 47, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**Soldiers Dependants' Appeals Assessment Committee.**—Sec., Mr. J. J. R. Bridge, 142, Cromwell Road, S.W.7.

**The Veterans' Association,** 47, Bedford Row, London, W.C.1.

**War Charities (Control) Committee.**—Sec., Mr. J. A. Johnston, Home Office, S.W.1.

**War Savings (National) Committee.**—Sec., Mr. T. Chambers, Salisbury Square, Fleet Street, E.C.4.

**War Refugees' Committee.**—Sec., Mr. A. Maudslay, General Buildings, Aldwych, W.C.2.

## EMPLOYMENT OF DISCHARGED MEN

**Addresses.**—Naval Employment Agency, 25, Victoria Street, S.W.

Naval Pensioners and time-Expired Men's Employment Society, 24, Buckingham Street, Strand, W.C.

Incorporated Soldiers' and Sailors' Help Society, 122, Brompton Road, S.W.

## WAR-RELIEF ORGANIZATIONS

**Agricultural Relief of Allies Committee.**—Hon. Sec., Mr. T. McRow. Hon. Asst. Sec., Mr. Frank T. Euren, 16, Bedford Square, W.C.

**Allied Forces Base Hospital.**—Hon. Treas., Earl Howe, 16, Grosvenor Street, S.W.

**Allies Hospital** (Yvetot, near Rouen).—Hon. Sec. and Treas., Mr. J. G. Jones, 135–137, New Bond Street. Hon. Sec. Stores Dept., 36, North Audley Street, W.

**American Women's War Relief Fund.**—Hon. Secs., Lady Lowther and Mrs. L. Harcourt, 31, Old Burlington Street, W.

**Anglo-Russian Hospital.**—Hon. Financial Sec., 116, Victoria Street, S.W.

**Armenian Red Cross and Refugee Fund.**—Hon. Sec., Miss E. J. Robinson, 35A, Elsham Road, Kensington.

**Armenian Refugees (Lord Mayor's) Fund.**—Sec., 96, Victoria Street, S.W., and Mansion House, E.C.

**Army and Navy Pensioners' and Time-expired Men's Employment Society.**—Sec., Mr. L. H. Spence, 24, Buckingham Street, Strand, W.C.

**Australian War Contingent Association.**—Sec. H. W. Edney, 59, Palace Street, Westminster, S.W.

**Belgian Field Ambulance Service.**—Chairman, Mr. W. Joynson-Hicks, M.P., 12, St. James's Place, S.W.

**Belgian Orphan Fund.**—Chairman, Monsieur E. Pollet, Belgian Consul, 37, Bedford Square, W.C. Hon. Treas., Mr. P. Ramlot, 2, Bishopsgate, E.C.

**Belgian Prisoners in Germany, Relief for.**—4, London Wall Avenue, E.C.

**Belgian Red Cross.**—Hon. Sec., M. Louis Lazard, 3, Savoy Court, W.C.

**Belgian Refugee Food Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Lady Williams, 19, St. James's Street, Piccadilly, S.W.

**Belgian Relief.**—National Committee for Relief in Belgium: Hon. Treas., Mr. A. Shirley Benn, M.P., Trafalgar Buildings, Trafalgar Square, S.W.

**Belgian Soldiers, British Club for.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. H. Campbell, 20, Manchester Square, W.

**Belgian Soldiers' Convalescent Home.**—Sir John McCall, Tasmanian Government Office, 56, Victoria Street, S.W.

**Belgian Soldiers (Help to) Fund.**—Correspondence and Funds: Madame Maton, 17, Elm Park Gardens, Kensington, S.W. Gifts in Kind: 112, Fulham Road, Kensington, S.W.

**Belgian War Refugees Committee.**—Hon. Treas., Viscount Gladstone, General Buildings, Aldwych, W.C.

**Bread Fund for Prisoners of War in Germany.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. Alfred J. Bonwick, 10, Adelphi Terrace, W.C.

**British Ambulance Committee to the Service de Sante' Militaire.**—Hon. Sec., 23A, Bruton Street, W.

**British Red Cross Society.**—83, Pall Mall, S.W. (see page 413).

**British Women's Hospital** (Star and Garter Building Fund).—Hon. Treas., 21, Old Bond Street, W.

**Canadian Red Cross.**—Commissioner, 14, Cockspur Street, S.W.

**Canadian War Contingent Association.**—Hon. Sec., Mr. J. G. Colmer, C.M.G., 8, Victoria Street, S.W.

**French Red Cross Society.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. Phillip A. Wilkins, 9, Knightsbridge, S.W.

**French Wounded Emergency Fund.**—Hon. Sec., Miss Evelyn Wyld, 44, Lowndes Square, S.W.

**Government Committee on the Prevention and Relief of Distress.**—Local Government Board, Whitehall.

**Great Britain to Poland Fund to Help Homeless People in Poland.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. Eveleigh Nash, Berkeley Hotel, Piccadilly.

**Game for the Wounded Committee.**—Mr. T. Comyn Platt, 1900 Club, 3, Pickering Place, St. James's, S.W.

**Home Defence Comforts Fund.**—9, Moreton Gardens, S.W.

**Indian Soldiers' Fund of St. John Ambulance Association.**—11, Somerset Street, W., or 33, Surrey Street, Strand, W.C.

**Italian Red Cross Delegation in United Kingdom.**—14, Weymouth Street, Portland Place, W.

**Jewish Victims of the War in Russia Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Lord Swaythling, 28, Throgmorton Street, E.C.

**'Khaki' Prisoners of War Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Viscount Peel, 52, Grosvenor Street, W.

**King Albert's (Belgian) Civilian Hospital Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. Evelyn Cecil, M.P., 62, Victoria Street, S.W.

**King George's Hospital Compassionate Fund.**—83, Pall Mall, S.W.

**Lloyd's Patriotic Fund.**—Sec., Lieut.-Col. A. N. St. Quintin, Brook House, Walbrook, E.C.

**Lord Roberts' Memorial Fund.**—Soldiers' and Sailors' Help Society, 122, Brompton Road, S.W.

**Montenegro, Help for.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. T. O. Roberts, London County and Westminster Bank, 217, Strand.

**Motor Ambulances for Russia.**—Sec., Royal Automobile Club, Pall Mall, S.W.

**National Food Fund.**—3, Blenheim Street, New Bond Street, W.

**National Patriotic Organizations, The Central Committee for.**—Canadian Pacific Buildings, 62, Charing Cross, S.W. Sec., Sir William Gray-Wilson.

**National Relief Fund (Prince of Wales's).**—Collecting Dept: 10, Buckingham Gate, S.W. Administration: 3, Queen Anne's Gate, S.W.

**Newspapers for the Fleet.**—Sec., Major Vane Stow, V.D., Oxford Court, Cannon Street, E.C.

**New Zealand War Contingent Association.**—125, High Holborn, W.C.

**Officers' Families Fund.**—Hon. Sec., Countess Roberts, Lansdowne House, Berkeley Square, W.

**Overseas Motor Transport Columns** (Army Service Corps). —Hon. Treas., Mr. E. S. Shrapnell-Smith, 7–15, Rosebery Avenue, E.C.

**Polish Refugee Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. Vernon Wethered, 2, Kidderpore Gardens, Hampstead, N.W.

**Polish Victims Relief Fund.**—Hon. Sec., 11, Haymarket, S.W.

**Prisoners of War Control Committee.**—4, Thurloe Place, S.W.

**Prisoners of War Help Committee.**—Hon. Sec., Mr. B. W. Young, 5 and 7, Southampton Street, Strand.

**Professional Classes War Relief Council.**—13–14, Princes Gate, S.W.

**Professional Classes War Service Register.**—Board of Trade, S.W.

**Pro-Italia Committee.**—14, Weymouth Street, Portland Place, W.

**Public Schools Hospital Fund.**—83, Pall Mall, S.W.

**Queen Alexandra's Field Force Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Mr. H. P. Leach, 24A, Hill Street, Knightsbridge, S.W.

**Queen Mary's Needlework Guild.**—Hon. Sec., Friary Court, St. James's Palace, S.W.

**Queen's Work for Women Fund.**—Hon. Sec., Lady Roxburgh; Hon. Treas., Lady Pearson, 33, Portland Place, W.

**Red Cross Joint War Committee, British Red Cross Society and Order of St. John.**—Chairman, Hon. Arthur Stanley, M.P.; Chairman, Finance Committee, Sir Robert Hudson, 83, Pall Mall, S.W.

Among the principal departments of the work of the Joint Committee are the following—

Anglo-French Hospital Committee.
Central Joint V.A.D. Committee.
Central Prisoners of War Committee (4, Thurloe Place, S.W.).
Central Workrooms (Burlington House, W.).
Joint Women's V.A.D., Selection Board (Devonshire House, W.).
King George Hospital Committee.
Medical Personnel Department.
Missing and Wounded Inquiry Department (18, Carlton House Terrace, S.W.).
Public Schools Hospital Committee.
'Star and Garter,' Richmond (controlled by B.R.C.S.).
Stores and Transport Department.
Trained Nurses Department.
War Library (Surrey House, Marble Arch, W.).

**Roumanian Flag Day.**—Sec., Mr. Smethan Lee, 1, Central Buildings, Westminster, S.W.

**Roumanian Red Cross Fund.**—Bank of Roumania, E.C.

**Royal Patriotic Fund Corporation.**—Act. Sec., Lieut.-Col. A. Welby, 17, Waterloo Place, S.W.

**St. John Ambulance Association.**—Headquarters: St. John's Gate, Clerkenwell, E.C. Warehouse: 56, St. John's Square, Clerkenwell, E.C.

**Scottish Women's Hospitals for Foreign Service.**—Sec., Miss Curwen, 66, Victoria Street, S.W.

**Serbian Relief Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Earl of Plymouth. Sec., Mr. F. M. Scott, 5, Cromwell Road, S.W.

**Serbian Society of Great Britain, The.**—14, Great Smith Street, Westminster, S.W. Hon. Sec., Dr. R. W. Seton-Watson. Org. Sec., Miss W. E. Hall.

**Soldiers' and Sailors' Dental Aid Fund.**—Hon. Treas., Sir H. Bartlett, 36, Leicester Square, W.C.

**Soldiers' and Sailors' Families Association.**—Sec., Capt. Wickham Legg, M.V.O., 23, Queen Anne's Gate, Westminster.

**Soldiers' and Sailors' Help Society.**—Sec., Major A. Tudor Craig, 122, Brompton Road, S.W. Objects: To assist discharged soldiers and sailors.

**War Refugees Committee.**—Hon. Treas., Viscount Gladstone; Hon. Sec., Algernon Maudslay, General Buildings, Aldwych, W.C.

**Women's Emergency Corps.**—Chairman, the Viscountess Cowdray; Hon. Treas., the Duchess of Marlborough; Sec., Mrs. McGregor, 15, York Place, Baker Street, W.

**Wounded Allies Relief Committee.**—8, Grosvenor Gardens, S.W. Hon. Sec., Sir Lindsey Smith.

## ADDRESSES

**Australian Commonwealth.**—O.C. Military Records Commonwealth, Australia Office, 72, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**Australian Imperial Force Administrative Headquarters.**—130, Horseferry Road, Westminster, S.W.1.

**Artists Rifles.**—Dukes Road, Euston, W.C.

**Appeals Committee.**—119, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

Information regarding missing men may be obtained at the Red Cross Bureau, 18, Carlton House Terrace, London, W.

Secretary, War Office Appeals Court, 119, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

The Superintendent, Pensions Office, Railway Clearing House, Seymour Street, N.W.1.

ASSOCIATIONS

**Sir Frederick Milner Hostel for Deaf Soldiers.**—26, Milton Crescent, S.W.1. Tel., Kensington 3161.

**Accounts.**—Sec., War Office (Accounts 4), S.W.1.

**Canadian Board of Pensions Commissioners.**—103, Oxford Street, London, W.1.

**Canada Ministry of Overseas Military Forces.**—245, Oxford Street, W.1.

**Canada, High Commissioner.**—19, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**Canteens Expeditionary Force.**—110, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**Children's Aid Committee.**—50, South Molton Street, W.

**Death Certificates.**—Sec., War Office, Park Buildings, St. James's Park.

**Distress Government Committee on Prevention and Relief.**—L.G.B., Whitehall.

**Effects.**—Sec., War Office, Imperial Institute, South Kensington, W.7.

**Imperial Association for Assisting Disabled Naval and Military Officers.**—British Columbia House, 1, Regent Street, W. Tel., 780.

**Inns of Court O.T.C.**—18, Stone Buildings, Lincoln's Inn, W.C.

**Kitchener Memorial Fund.**—34–5, Norfolk Street, Strand.

**The Central Registry for Limbless Soldiers.**—St. Stephen's House.

**Lord Kitchener's Memorial Fund.**—Mansion House.

**Missing Men, British Red Cross Society.**—18, Carlton House Terrace, S.W.

**Mercantile Shipping Federation.**—Exchange Buildings, 24, St. Mary Axe, E.C. 3.

**Mercantile Marine Service Association.**—Tower Building, Water Street, Liverpool.

**North of England Protection and Indemnity Association.**—Collingwood Buildings, Newcastle-on-Tyne.

**Marriage Licence, Special.**—Faculty Office, Knightrider Street, Doctors Commons, E.C.

**Medical Rejections Select Committee.**—Westminster Hall, D. Cobes, Pres. Sec.

**New Zealand Expeditionary Force.**—8, Southampton Row, W. 1.

**Navy, Accountant-General.**—4*a*, Newgate Street, E.C.1.

**National Relief Fund.**—3, Queen Anne's Gate, Westminster.

**Officer in Charge of Estates, Canadian Contingent.**—Horseferry Road School, S.W.1.

**Prince of Wales Hospital for Convalescent Officers.**—Marylebone Road, N.W.

**Prisoners of War Committee, Central.**—4, Thurloe Place, S.W.

**Pay, Arrears of.**—Sec. for War (Accounts 4), Park Buildings, St. James's Park.

**Patriotic Fund, Royal.**—17, Waterloo Place, S.W.

**Passport Department.**—Foreign Office, Downing Street, S.W.4.

**British and Allied Prisoners of War Fund.**—Hon. Sec., Miss Ord, Sands Hall, Co. Durham.

**Royal Defence Corps Pay Office.**—23–24, Courtfield Gardens, S.W.

**Roberts, Lord, Memorial Workshop.**—122, Brompton Road, S.W.1.

**South African Appeals Committee.**—119, Victoria Street (Depts. only).

**South African Expeditionary Force.**—Pay Office, 38, Belgrave Road, S.W.

**Sugar Commission.**—Scotland House, Westminster, S.W.

**Shipping and Seamen.**—General Register and Record Office, Tower Hill, E.1.

**South Africa, High Commissioner.**—32, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**Special Medical Board.**—Royal Army Medical College, Millbank.

**South African Expeditionary Force.**—Military Records Branch Office, 65, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

**War Office Appeals Committee.**—119, Victoria Street, S.W.1.

The General Register and Record Office of Shipping and Seamen, Tower Hill, E.C.1.

### Canadian Casualties

Officer in Charge of Records, Green Arbour House, Old Bailey, E.C.4.

### Pensions

**Pensions for Disabled Soldiers.**—The Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Royal Hospital, Chelsea.

**Pensions for Disabled Seamen.**—The Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, London, S.W.

**Pensions for Widows or Dependants of Sailors or Soldiers.**—The Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, 45, Grosvenor Road, London, S.W.

**Pension Issues.**—All questions as to the manner of payment of pensions, the receipt of draft book, etc. : The Pension Issue Office, Baker Street, London, W.

**Pensions for Officers and their Dependants.**—The Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, London, S.W.

### Separation Allowances

**General.**—All questions about the grant, payment or amount of separation allowances should be addressed to the Regimental Paymaster.

**Amount of Pre-War Dependence.**—In the case of dependants other than wives and children, the extent of pre-War dependence is first estimated by the Local Old Age Pensions officer and Old Age Pensions Committee. An appeal against its decision can be made on Army Form O. 1840a, which can be obtained at the Post Office.

**Belated Applications.**—Where a soldier has delayed over a month to apply for an allowance for his dependant he can still make an application through his Commanding Officer on Army Form O. 1838.

**Supplementary Allowances, Grants, and Pensions.**—Application should be made to the Local War Pensions Committee of the Statutory Committee. Its address, which is usually at the Council Offices or County Hall, can be obtained at the War Office.

### General

**Missing Soldiers.**—The Officer in Charge of Records at the regimental headquarters should have the latest information about a soldier. If he cannot supply any information, application may be made by letter to the Secretary, War Office, Alexandra House, Kingsway, London, W.C.

**Prisoners of War.**—All inquiries about the provision of food for prisoners of war should be addressed to the Central Prisoners of War Committee, 4, Thurloe Place, Brompton Road, London, S.W. They are often able to tell that a prisoner is still alive by the fact that he acknowledges receipts of his parcels.

**Deceased Soldiers' Money and Personal Effects.**—Claims should be addressed to the Secretary, War Office, Imperial Institute, South Kensington, London, S.W.

## CENTRAL PRISONERS OF WAR COMMITTEE (BRITISH RED CROSS AND ORDER OF ST. JOHN)

Facilities can be obtained from this Committee for sending parcels and money to prisoners of war in Germany.

## PRISONERS OF WAR IN THIS COUNTRY. INFORMATION BUREAU

**Address :** The Prisoners of War Information Bureau, 49, Wellington Street, Strand, W.C.

# PAYMASTERS, ETC.

## REGULARS AND SPECIAL RESERVE RECORD OFFICES AND PAYMASTERS

| — | Full Postal Address of the Officer who can Supply the Latest Information regarding a Soldier of the Regiment named. | Full Postal Address of Paymaster who can give information as to the Family Allowances of a Soldier. |
|---|---|---|
| CAVALRY. | | |
| 1st Life Guards . . . | Officer Commanding, 1st Life Guards, Hyde Park. | The Command Paymaster, London District, 168, Regent Street, W. |
| 2nd ,, ,, . . . | Officer Commanding, 2nd Life Guards, Windsor. | |
| Royal Horse Guards . | Officer Commanding, Royal Horse Guards, Regent's Park. | |
| Dragoon Regiments (all) | Officer in Charge of Cavalry Records, Canterbury. | The Regimental Paymaster, Canterbury. |
| Lancer ,, (all) | | |
| Hussar ,, (all) | Officer in Charge of Cavalry Records, | The Regimental Paymaster No. 1, York. |
| King Edward's Horse (Special Reserve). | Officer in Charge of Cavalry Records, Canterbury. | The Regimental Paymaster, Canterbury. |
| North Irish Horse . . | Officer in Charge of Cavalry Records, Dublin. | The Regimental Paymaster, Dublin. |
| South Irish Horse (Special Reserve). | Officer in Charge of Cavalry Records, Cork. | The Regimental Paymaster, Cork. |
| ROYAL ARTILLERY. | | |
| Royal Horse Artillery . | The Officer in Charge of Records, Royal Horse and Royal Field Artillery, Woolwich Dockyard. | The Regimental Paymaster, Army Pay Office, Concert Hall, Blackheath, S.E. |
| Royal Field Artillery . | | |
| Royal Garrison Artillery, and Mountain Artillery R.G.A. | The Officer in Charge of Records, Royal Garrison Artillery, Dover. | The Regimental Paymaster, Dover. |
| ROYAL ENGINEERS . . | The Officer in Charge of R.E. Records, Chatham. | The Regimental Paymaster, Chatham. |

| — | Full Postal Address of the Officer who can Supply the Latest Information regarding a Soldier of the Regiment named. | Full Postal Address of Paymaster who can give information as to the Family Allowances to a Soldier. |
|---|---|---|
| THE ROYAL FLYING CORPS (M.W.). | The Officer in Charge of Records, Royal Flying Corps, M.W., South Farnborough. | The Regimental Paymaster, Woking. |
| FOOT GUARDS. | | |
| Grenadier Guards . . | The Officer Commanding Grenadier Guards, Buckingham Gate, S.W. | The Command Paymaster, London District, 168, Regent Street, W. |
| Coldstream Guards . . | The Officer Commanding Coldstream Guards, Buckingham Gate, S.W. | |
| Scots Guards . . . . | The Officer Commanding Scots Guards, Buckingham Gate, S.W. | |
| Irish Guards . . . . | The Officer Commanding Irish Guards, Buckingham Gate, S.W. | |
| INFANTRY OF THE LINE. | | |
| The Black Watch (Royal Highlanders). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Kinnoul Street, Perth. | The Regimental Paymaster, Perth. |
| Seaforth Highlanders (Ross-shire Buffs, The Duke of Albany's). | | |
| The Gordon Highlanders | | |
| The Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders. | | |
| Princess Louise's (Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders). | | |
| The Royal Scots (Lothian Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Hamilton, N.B. | The Regimental Paymaster, Hamilton, N.B. |
| The Royal Scots Fusiliers | | |
| The King's Own Scottish Borderers. | | |
| The Cameronians (Scottish Rifles). | | |
| The Highland Light Infantry. | | |
| The King's Own (Royal Lancaster Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Preston. | The Regimental Paymaster, Preston. |
| The King's (Liverpool) Regiment. | | |
| The Lancashire Fusiliers | | |
| The East Lancashire Regiment. | | |
| The Border Regiment. | | |
| The Loyal North Lancashire Regiment. | | |
| The Manchester Regiment | | |

| — | Full Postal Address of the Officer who can Supply the Latest Information regarding a Soldier of the Regiment named. | Full Postal Address of Paymaster who can give information as to the Family Allowances of a Soldier. |
|---|---|---|
| INFANTRY—*continued.* | | |
| The Cheshire Regiment .<br>The Royal Welsh Fusiliers<br>The South Wales Borderers.<br>The Prince of Wales's Volunteers (South Lancashire Regiment).<br>The Welsh Regiment .<br>The King's (Shropshire Light Infantry). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Shrewsbury. | The Regimental Paymaster, Shrewsbury. |
| The Prince of Wales's Own (West Yorkshire Regiment).<br>The Duke of Wellington's (West Riding Regiment).<br>The King's Own (Yorkshire Light Infantry).<br>The York and Lancaster Regiment.<br>The Northumberland Fusiliers. | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, York. | The Regimental Paymaster No. 1, York. |
| The East Yorkshire Regiment.<br>Alexandra, Princess of Wales's Own (Yorkshire Regiment).<br>The Durham Light Infantry.<br>The Lincolnshire Regiment | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, York. | The Regimental Paymaster No. 2, York. |
| The Leicestershire Regiment.<br>The South Staffordshire Regiment.<br>The Sherwood Foresters (Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire Regiment).<br>The Prince of Wales's (North Staffordshire Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Lichfield. | The Regimental Paymaster, Lichfield. |
| The Royal Warwickshire Regiment.<br>The Gloucestershire Regiment.<br>The Worcestershire Regiment.<br>The Oxfordshire and Buckinghamshire Light Infantry.<br>Princess Charlotte of Wales's (Royal Berkshire Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Old Barracks, Warwick. | The Regimental Paymaster, Warwick. |

| — | Full Postal Address of the Officer who can Supply the Latest Information regarding a Soldier of the Regiment named. | Full Postal Address of Paymaster who can give information as to the Family Allowances of a Soldier. |
|---|---|---|
| INFANTRY—*continued.* | | |
| The Devonshire Regiment<br>Prince Albert's (Somerset Light Infantry).<br>The Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry.<br>The Hampshire Regiment<br>The Dorsetshire Regiment<br>The Duke of Edinburgh's (Wiltshire Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Exeter. | The Regimental Paymaster, Exeter. |
| The Norfolk Regiment .<br>The Suffolk Regiment .<br>The Bedfordshire Regiment.<br>The Essex Regiment. .<br>The Northamptonshire Regiment. | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Warley. | The Regimental Paymaster, Warley. |
| The Queen's (Royal West Surrey Regiment).<br>The Buffs (East Kent Regiment).<br>The Royal Fusiliers (City of London Regiment).<br>The East Surrey Regiment<br>The Royal Sussex Regiment.<br>The Queen's Own (Royal West Kent Regiment).<br>The Duke of Cambridge's Own (Middlesex Regiment). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Hounslow. | The Regimental Paymaster, Hounslow. |
| The Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers.<br>The Royal Irish Rifles .<br>Princess Victoria's (Royal Irish) Fusiliers.<br>The Royal Dublin Fusiliers | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Dublin. | The Regimental Paymaster, Dublin. |
| The Royal Irish Regiment<br>The Connaught Rangers.<br>The Prince of Wales's Leinster Regiment (Royal Canadians).<br>The Royal Munster Fusiliers. | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Cork. | The Regimental Paymaster, Cork. |
| The King's Royal Rifle Corps.<br>The Rifle Brigade (The Prince Consort's Own). | The Officer in Charge of Infantry Records, Winchester. | The Regimental Paymaster, Winchester. |
| Machine Gun Corps . . | The Officer in Charge of Records, M.G. Corps, 91, York Street, Westminster, S.W. | The Regimental Pay master, Machine Gun Corps, Imperial College of Engineering, Prince Consort's Road, South Kensington, S.W. |

| — | Full Postal Address of the Officer who can Supply the Latest Information regarding a Soldier of the Regiment named. | Full Postal Address of Paymaster who can give information as to the Family Allowances of a Soldier. |
|---|---|---|
| Army Service Corps—Horse Transport, Supply and Labour Sections. | The Officer in Charge of Army Service Corps Records, Woolwich Dockyard. | Regimental Paymaster, Horse Transport, Supply and Labour Sections, A.S.C., Cambridge Barracks, Woolwich. |
| Army Veterinary Corps . | The Officer in Charge of Army Veterinary Corps Records, Woolwich. | The Regimental Paymaster, Freemason's Hall, Woolwich. |
| Army Ordnance Corps . | The Officer in Charge of Army Ordnance Corps Records, Red Barracks, Woolwich. | The Regimental Paymaster, Freemason's Hall, Woolwich. |
| Army Pay Corps . . . | The Officer in Charge of Records, Army Pay Corps, War Office, London, S.W. | The Regimental Paymaster, Freemason's Hall, Woolwich. |
| Corps of Military Police. | The Officer in Charge of Records, Corps of Military Police, Aldershot. | The Regimental Paymaster, Aldershot. |
| Non-Combatant Corps . | The Officer in Charge of Records, Warwick. | The Regimental Paymaster, Warwick. |
| Royal Defence Corps . | Officer in Charge of T.F. Records, London District, 4, London Wall Buildings, E.C. | The Regimental Paymaster, Royal Defence Corps, Imperial College of Engineering, Prince Consort's Road, South Kensington, S.W. |

## Training Reserve

| Brigade. | Battalion. | Record Office. | Paymaster. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1st . . . | 1 to 5 . | York . . . | No. 2 York. |
| 2nd . . . | 6 ,, 10 . | York . . . | ,, 1 York. |
| 3rd . . . | 11 ,, 15 . | Lichfield . . | Lichfield. |
| 4th . . . | 16 ,, 20 . | Winchester . | Winchester. |
| 5th . . . | 21 ,, 24 . | Hounslow. . | Hounslow. |
| 6th . . . | 25 ,, 28 . | Warley . . | Warley. |
| 7th . . . | 29 ,, 32 . | Hounslow . | Hounslow. |
| 8th . . . | 33 ,, 37 . | Exeter . . | Exeter. |
| 9th . . . | 38 ,, 42 . | Perth. . . | Perth. |
| 10th . . . | 43 ,, 47 . | Warley . . | Warley. |
| 11th . . . | 48 ,, 51 . | Preston . . | Preston. |
| 12th . . . | 52 ,, 56 . | Hamilton . | Hamilton. |
| 13th . . . | 57 ,, 61 . | Shrewsbury . | Shrewsbury. |
| 14th . . . | 62 ,, 66 . | Shrewsbury . | Shrewsbury. |
| 16th . . . | 67 ,, 71 . | Preston . . | Preston. |
| 17th . . . | 72 ,, 76 . | Preston . . | Preston. |
| 18th . . . | 77 ,, 79 . | Hamilton . | Hamilton. |
| 19th . . . | 80 ,, 83 . | York . . . | No. 2 York. |
| 20th . . . | 84 ,, 87 . | York . . . | ,, 2 York. |
| 21st . . . | 88 ,, 91 . | York . . . | ,, 1 York. |
| 22nd . . . | 92 ,, 96 . | Warwick . | Warwick. |
| 23rd . . . | 97 ,, 102 . | Hounslow . | Hounslow. |
| 24th . . . | 103 ,, 107 . | Hounslow . | Hounslow. |
| 26th . . . | 108 ,, 112 . | Winchester . | Winchester. |

## Territorial Force Associations

| County. | Address. |
|---|---|
| 1. Aberdeen . . | 28, Guild Street, Aberdeen. |
| 2. Aberdeen City . . | 29A, St. Nicholas Street, Aberdeen. |
| 3. Anglesey . . . | The Barracks, Carnarvon. |
| 4. Argyll . . . | Drill Hall, Hanover Street, Dunoon. |
| 5. Ayr. . . . | 6, Wellington Square, Ayr. |
| 6. Banff . . . | 6, Castle Street, Banff. |
| 7. Bedford . . . | 7, Shire Hall, Bedford. |
| 8. Berks . . . | Yeomanry House, Castle Hill, Reading. |
| 9. Berwick . . . | 7, Tower Knowe, Hawick. |
| 10. Brecknock . . | The Armoury, Brecon. |
| 11. Bucks . . . | 17, St. Mary's Square, Aylesbury. |
| 12. Bute . . . | 78, St. Vincent Street, Glasgow. |

| County. | Address. |
|---|---|
| 13. Caithness | Waterloo Buildings, Church Street, Cromarty. |
| 14. Cambridge | 8A, Princes Street, Ipswich. |
| 15. Cardigan | The Barracks, Carmarthen. |
| 16. Carmarthen | The Barracks, Carmarthen. |
| 17. Carnarvon | The Barracks, Carnarvon. |
| 18. Chester | The Castle, Chester. |
| 19. Clackmannan | 18, Bank Street, Alloa. |
| 20. Cornwall | The Armoury, Pydar Street, Truro. |
| 21. Cumberland | Drill Hall, Penrith. |
| 22. Denbigh | Mold, Flint. |
| 23. Derby | Drill Hall, Derby. |
| 24. Devon | 57, High Street, Exeter. |
| 25. Dorset | 57, High West Street, Dorchester. |
| 26. Dumbarton | County Buildings, Dumbarton. |
| 27. Dumfries | Drill Hall, Dumfries. |
| 28. Dundee City | 13, Panmure Street, Dundee. |
| 29. Durham | 53, Old Elvet, Durham. |
| 30. Edinburgh City | City Chambers, Edinburgh. |
| 31. Elgin | Drill Hall, Elgin. |
| 32. Essex | Market Road, Chelmsford. |
| 33. Fife | Kirkcaldy. |
| 34. Flint | Mold, Flint. |
| 35. Forfar | Kirriemuir. |
| 36. Glamorgan | 15, Newport Road, Cardiff. |
| 37. Glasgow City | 201, West George Street, Glasgow. |
| 38. Gloucester | New Inn Chambers, King Street, Gloucester. |
| 39. Haddington | Haddington. |
| 40. Hereford | The Barracks, Hereford. |
| 41. Hertford | Drill Hall, Hertford. |
| 42. Huntingdon | Lieutenancy Office, Huntingdon. |
| 43. Inverness | Waterloo Buildings, Church Street, Cromarty. |
| 44. Kent | Union Street, Maidstone. |
| 45. Kincardine | 28, Guild Street, Aberdeen. |
| 46. Kinross | Lieutenancy Offices, Kinross. |
| 47. Kirkcudbright | Drill Hall, Dumfries. |
| 48. Lanark | Muirhall, Hamilton. |
| 49. Lancaster West | Eldon Chambers, South John Street, Liverpool. |
| 50. Lancaster East | Cross Street, Blackfriars Road, Manchester. |
| 51. Leicester | The Magazine, Oxford Street, Leicester. |
| 52. Lincoln | Old Barracks, Lincoln. |
| 53 Linlithgow | 53, Hanover Street, Edinburgh. |

| County. | Address. |
|---|---|
| 54. London | Duke of York's Headquarters, Chelsea. |
| 55. London City | Friar's House, New Broad Street, London, E.C. |
| 56. Merioneth | The Armoury, Welshpool. |
| 57. Middlesex. | 15, Pall Mall East, London, S.W. |
| 58. Midlothian | 53, Hanover Street, Edinburgh. |
| 59. Monmouth | 35, Stow Hill, Newport (Monmouth). |
| 60. Montgomery | The Armoury, Welshpool. |
| 61. Nairn | Waterloo Buildings, Church Street, Cromarty. |
| 62. Norfolk | 21, Tombland, Norwich. |
| 63. Northampton | Clare Street, Northampton. |
| 64. Nottingham | Derby Road, Nottingham. |
| 65. Northumberland | 6, Eldon Square, Newcastle-on-Tyne. |
| 66. Orkney | 4, Broad Street, Kirkwall. |
| 67. Oxford | 20, Magdalen Street, Oxford. |
| 68. Peebles | 53, Hanover Street, Edinburgh. |
| 69. Pembroke | The Barracks, Carmarthen. |
| 70. Perth | 60, Canal Street, Perth. |
| 71. Radnor | Wylcwm, Knighton. |
| 72. Renfrew | 13, St. James Place, Paisley. |
| 73. Ross and Cromarty | Waterloo Buildings, Church Street, Cromarty. |
| 74. Roxburgh | 7, Tower Knowe, Hawick. |
| 75. Rutland | The Magazine, Oxford Street, Leicester. |
| 76. Selkirk | 7, Tower Knowe, Hawick. |
| 77. Shropshire | St. Mary's Court, Shrewsbury. |
| 78. Somerset | County Territoral Hall, Taunton. |
| 79. Southampton | 30, Carlton Place, Southampton. |
| 80. Stafford | Market Square, Stafford. |
| 81. Stirling | 2, Dumbarton Road, Stirling. |
| 82. Suffolk | 8A, Prince's Street, Ipswich. |
| 83. Surrey | Caxton House, Westminster. |
| 84. Sussex | 34, West Street, Brighton. |
| 85. Sutherland | Waterloo Buildings, Church Street, Cromarty. |
| 86. Warwick | 46, High Street, Warwick. |
| 87. Westmorland | Drill Hall, Penrith. |
| 88. Wigtown | Drill Hall, Dumfries. |
| 89. Wilts | 68, Fore Street, Trowbridge. |
| 90. Worcester | 16, Silver Street, Worcester. |
| 91. Yorks North Riding. | South Parade, Northallerton. |
| 92. Yorks East Riding | Paragon Buildings, Jameson Street, |
| 93. Yorks West Riding | 9, St. Leonards, York. |
| 94. Zetland | North of Scotland Bank, Lerwick. |

## Command Paymasters

| Command Paymaster. | Regimental Paymaster within the Command. |
|---|---|
| Eastern Command, Exhibition Road, South Kensington, S.W. | Canterbury.<br>Chatham.<br>Dover.<br>Hounslow.<br>Warley.<br>Woolwich. |
| Western Command, Chester . . . | Preston.<br>Shrewsbury. |
| Northern Command, York . . . | Lichfield.<br>York. |
| Southern Command, Salisbury . . | Exeter.<br>Warwick.<br>Winchester. |
| Aldershot Command, Aldershot . . | Aldershot (Woking). |
| London District, 168, Regent Street, W. | |
| Scottish Command, Edinburgh . . | Hamilton.<br>Perth. |
| Irish Command, Dublin . . . | Cork.<br>Dublin. |

| Army Pay Office. | Paymaster. |
|---|---|
| Woking (Aldershot) . . | Colonel R. W. Fanshawe. |
| Canterbury. . . . | Lieut.-Col. A. B. Nolan. |
| Chatham . . . . | Colonel J. O'Hara. |
| Cork . . . . . | Lieut.-Col. A. Haynes. |
| Dover . . . . | Colonel C. N. Richards. |
| Dublin . . . . | Lieut.-Col. C. N. Hunter. |
| Exeter . . . . | ,, P. S. Dyson. |
| Hamilton . . . . | ,, A. F. Cooke. |
| Hounslow . . . . | ,, W. B. Lauder. |
| Lichfield . . . . | ,, H. Q. Pinhorn. |
| Perth . . . . | Colonel R. S. Ruston. |
| Preston . . . . | ,, W. G. C. Feilden. |
| Shrewsbury . . . | ,, C. C. Todd. |
| Warley . . . . | Lieut.-Col. H. de C. Huntsman. |
| Warwick . . . . | Colonel W. G. S. Benson. |

| Army Pay Office. | | Paymaster. |
|---|---|---|
| Winchester . . . | Lieut.-Col. | E. C. Eicke. |
| Woolwich (Departmental Corps), 107, Upper Thames Street, London . . . . | ,, | A. J. B. Church. |
| Woolwich (Army Service Corps), Cambridge Barracks. . | Colonel | W. Parry. |
| Blackheath . . . | ,, | J. C. Armstrong, C.M.G. |
| York No. 1 . . . | ,, | C. I. Scott. |
| York No. 2 . . . | ,, | A. F. Hamilton-Cox. |
| Machine Gun and R.D.C., Kensington . . . . | ,, | P. de S. Bass, C.M.G. |
| London District . . . | ,, | W. C. Minchin. |

# APPENDIX I

## THE ROYAL AIR FORCE

**Cadets.** Applicants for cadetship must be $17\frac{1}{2}$ to 30 years of age; not over 6 ft. 1 in. in height, and not more than 182 lb. in weight.

The pay on joining is 1*s.* 4*d.* a day, with a messing allowance of 1*s.* a day.

Uniform, quarters and rations are provided free.

Cadets on joining are posted to a wing or school for training, and are then passed through the various departments.

After initial training, cadets are classed A and B according to merit.

'A' men receive a uniform similar to that of an officer, the value of which is £15.

'A' men on being posted to squadrons for instruction in flying receive service pay of 7*s.* 6*d.* and flying pay of 4*s.* a day, while actually receiving instruction.

'B' men receive service pay of 3*s.* 6*d.* and flying pay of 1*s.* a day.

Both classes on being commissioned receive 10*s.* a day service pay and 4*s.* a day flying pay, and are credited with £35 towards the cost of completing their uniform kit.

If required to proceed overseas before graduation is completed, men may be entitled to wear 'wings' and receive full flying pay, officers at the rate of 8*s.* a day, and serjeant mechanics at 4*s.* a day if pilots and 2*s.* a day if observers.

Applications should be made to the Royal Air Force Reception Depôt locally.

**Men.** The age of enlistment for the duration of the War is 18 to 41 years of age, but in certain cases men up to the age of 50 may be accepted.

Men between 18 and 25 will be accepted for four years' service with the Colours and four in the Reserve, or eight years with the Colours and four in the Reserve.

The technical pay ranges from 2*s.* to 12*s.* and the non-technical pay 1*s.* 4*d.* to 7*s.* 6*d.* a day, according to rank.

**Boys.**—Boys may join the service between the ages of 15 to 17 for eight years with the Colours and four in the Reserve.

The pay is 1*s.* a day with the increase of 1*d.* a day under the terms of A.O. 1/1918.

Boys are given the rating of third-class mechanics on attaining the age of 18 and receive 2*s.* a day.

On enlistment it is necessary to produce—

(*a*) The written consent of parents or guardians.

(*b*) A certificate of good moral character from a clergyman or minister of religion.

(*c*) A certificate of birth.

(*d*) A signed statement from a schoolmaster that the applicant has passed Standard VI or an equivalent thereto.

The following is a list of the Royal Air Force Reception Depôts at which applications may be made—

London : 40, Upper Brook Street, Mayfair, W.1.
Bristol : 8, Tyndall's Park Road.
Cardiff : 12, Newport Road.
Birmingham : Carlton Chambers, Paradise Street.
Nottingham : Midland Bank Warehouse, King Street.
Liverpool : 117, Mount Pleasant.
Leeds : 6, Portland Crescent.
Newcastle : 10, Sydenham Terrace, North Road.
Glasgow : 9, Somerset Place, Sauchiehall Street.

# APPENDIX II

## THE AMENDED PENSIONS WARRANT

This warrant has effect from May 1, 1918. Its terms may be applied to pensions or gratuities that have been dealt with under previous warrants at the discretion of the Minister of Pensions.

The amended pension warrant is a vast improvement upon its predecessor: not only in the scales of awards, but in the conditions governing the issue of pensions which they represent.

In the following notes the first numbers given refer to the amended warrant, the latter to that at present in force.

1 (1). 1 (1). **Disability Pensions.** The words 'while suffering impairment' have been inserted, the apparent intention being to provide for discharged men who have been, or may be, recalled to the Colours.

The word 'minimum' has been deleted from this subsection.

1 (2). This is a new paragraph, which reads—

'Except in those cases where the disablement has reached its final condition, a disablement pension shall be temporary, at the rate appropriate to the temporary disablement, and the grant shall be reviewed from time to time until a permanent assessment can be made or the grant ceases. Where a temporary disablement pension, including renewals, does not run beyond one year, a supplementary gratuity up to £5 may be granted at the termination of such pension.'

This addition should be read in conjunction with Article 5 (1) and (2), but it should be noted that the supplementary gratuity provided is an additional award.

1 (3). This article is the first paragraph of Article 7 in the present warrant.

It will be noticed, however, that the temporary allowance or gratuity that may be awarded, though taking the place of pension, is not in lieu of children's allowances.

2 (2). 2 (1). **Allowances for Children.** The allowances for the children of disabled and pensioned sailors and soldiers, are, under the terms of the amended Warrant, as follows—

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| For a first child . . . . . | 6 | 8 |
| For a second child . . . . . | 5 | 0 |
| For each other child . . . . . | 4 | 2 |

3. 3. **Alternative Pensions.** An important amendment is made to the regulations governing the issue of alternative pensions by the provision that in the case of a man making application who has lost both arms or both legs, or the sight of both eyes, the average earnings, if any, of which he may be capable will not be taken into consideration.

5 (1) (*b*). 5 (1) (*b*). The amended warrant specially provides in this article that the cessation or reduction of any allowance made in respect of the children of a disabled man in receipt of pension may not be taken into consideration in any application for review with the object of the award of an alternative pension.

5 (2). **Power to Review Pension.** This article is an amendment and provides that the Minister of Pensions may at any time review any award that has been made where—

(1) A pension has been granted in excess of the appropriate amount ; or—

(2) Where the pension has been obtained by improper means ; or—

(3) The award has been made in error.

5 A. **Re-enlistment of Pensioner.** This article is also an amendment. It provides that a man in receipt of a disability pension who re-enlists, or is granted a commission, or is recalled to any of the services, is, while he remains in the service, entitled—

(1) If in receipt of a permanent pension, whether disablement or alternative, to receive such pension, but is not entitled to allowance, in respect of children ; and—

(2) If the pension awarded him is temporary he is entitled to receive that pension without allowances for children for the period of the award, when his case will be reviewed.

6 (1). 6 (1). **Grants while under Treatment or Training.** This article is an addition to the warrant, and is a re-statement of the provisions administered by the Local Committees.

Paragraph (*a*) of the amendment provides—

(1) For the maximum disablement pension with scale allowances for children in the case of a man receiving treatment or training and unable in consequence to maintain himself and his family.

(2) Where it is necessary that the man should, while receiving treatment or training, live away from home, provision is made in addition for a further allowance in favour of his wife equivalent to the amount issuable on the widows' scale, and also—

(3) In the case of a dependant maintained by the man up to the time when his treatment or training commences, an amount equal to assessed dependency up to 10*s*., with allowances for children according to scale.

Paragraph (*b*) provides that an alternative pension may be awarded in place of the above. If, however, the pensioner is a lunatic, the allowance may be reduced by the amount awarded to a dependant who is not a relative of the soldier or by such sum as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

6 (4). This article is an amendment of vast importance, and provides that after a man has completed his training he may receive a grant not exceeding £10, for the purchase of tools if required.

6 (3). 6 (3); 7 (2). **Medical Treatment.** The provision for the payment of "any charges, fees, or expenses in respect of treatment or training of a disabled man' in receipt of a pension under Article 6 (3) of the present and also of the amended warrant are, under the terms of

Article 7 (2), extended to a man, to whom a gratuity or temporary allowance has been awarded under Article 7 (1). Payment may be made for the period of the War and twelve months afterward.

8 (1). 8 (1). **Temporary Allowances.** This is an amendment to the payment of 14*s.* weekly as temporary allowance from discharge to the date of the award of pension or gratuity, and provides for the payment of 27*s.* 6*d.* per week for four weeks, with scale allowances for children from the date of discharge.

In addition, all charges, fees and expenses in respect of necessary treatment are paid while such temporary allowances are issued.

10 (3). **Poor Law Relief.** If a widow or dependant (Article 20) is receiving treatment in any institution at the cost, either wholly or in part, of the Poor Law authorities, any award that may have been made her may be administered as the Minister of Pensions may determine.

### Widows and Dependants

11. 11. **Widows.** The scale of widows' pensions is unaltered.

12. 12. **Children's Allowances** (*see* 14 (1)). The allowances for children have been increased to the following rates—

| | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|
| For a first child . . . . . | 6 | 8 |
| For a second child . . . . . | 5 | 0 |
| For each other child . . . . . | 4 | 2 |

13. 13. **Alternative Pension.** The alternative pension issuable to a widow is increased from one-half to two-thirds of any amount that might have been awarded the man had he lived and been totally incapacitated from following any employment.

14 (1). 14 (1). **Widow's Gratuity.** The widow's gratuity of £5 is supplemented by the award of £1 for

each child in respect of whom separation allowance was issued.

The widow's gratuity and children's allowance is now issued to the widows of sailors and soldiers whose death was not due to nor aggravated by service.

18 (1). 18 (1). **Motherless and Illegitimate Children.** The allowances for motherless children are increased to—

10*s.* for the first child, and

9*s.* 2*d.* for each child after the first.

18 (2). 18 (2). The allowance for an illegitimate child is increased to 6*s.* 8*d.* per week.

The allowances may continue beyond the age of 16 and up to 21 years in the case of children or young persons who—

(*a*) Are only in receipt of a nominal wage.

(*b*) Are being educated at secondary schools, technical institutes or universities, or

(*c*) When through mental or physical infirmity the child or young person may be incapable of earning a living, provided that the infirmity existed before the recipient attained the age of 16 years.

19. 19. **Separated Wives.** A widow who was separated from her husband who contributed to her support may receive a pension of not less than 3*s.* 6*d.* and not more than 13*s.* 9*d.* per week, with scale allowances for children if maintained by her.

20 (2). 20 (2). **Unmarried Wives.** The pension issuable to a woman who has been living with a soldier as his wife—

(*a*) Who has no children; or—

(*b*) Where children have been removed from her care because of her misconduct, has been increased from 10*s.* to 15*s.* a week.

21 (1). 21 (1). **Parents and other Dependants.** The amendment provides—

(*a*) For the award of a pension of not less than 3*s.* 6*d.* and not exceeding 15*s.* per week for a parent or parents if dependent on the soldier, and

(*b*) An award within similar limits if 'at any time either or both of the parents is or are incapable of self

support from age or infirmity and in pecuniary need.'

The qualifications as to apprenticeship and study, etc., are eliminated (*see* Pre-War Earnings).

21 (2). (ii). If the amount of pre-War dependence in the case of two or more sons exceeded 15*s.* a week, or 30*s.* a week if both parents are alive, a gratuity may be awarded not exceeding a year's pay of the soldiers in question, or the scale issue of separation allowance with allotment.

21 (2). (iii). The amended warrant provides that if a pension is awarded in respect of a son who has been killed after promotion to commissioned rank, any award that may be made in respect of other son or sons shall not exceed, with that pension, any award that would have been made upon the scale in the second schedule of the Officers' Warrant; or if there are two parents, 30*s.* per week, whichever is the greater.

21 (4). The amended warrant provides that no pension will be awarded a soldier's mother who marries or re-marries after his death.

21 (5). Provides that if a soldier has died of causes not due to, or aggravated by, his Military service, and they were eligible for pension otherwise, a gratuity of an amount not exceeding one year's Military pay or one year's separation allowances with allotment may be awarded the parents of a deceased soldier (*cf.* Article 15).

22 (1); 22 (1). In the amended Warrant the maximum award that may be made the dependant of a soldier has been increased to 13*s.* 9*d.* per week.

**Definitions.** 6 (1) (*a*) the word child and 7 (*e*) the word children includes the child of any soldier born nine months after the soldier's discharge without regard to the date of his marriage.

### Dependant

A dependant is, in the amended warrant, defined as a person who would, in the case of a deceased soldier, have been wholly or partially maintained by him had he not

'been prevented from contributing by circumstances beyond his control' (Part III (5)).

### Pre-War Earnings

In the calculation of the pension payable to, or in respect of a man who was an apprentice when he enlisted, the standard rate of wages may be substituted for pre-War earnings if the man enlisted before he was 26 years of age, '*and that the man is by reason of his disablement incapable of completing or has completed his apprenticeship.*'

The italicized words are an amendment and are applicable to men who when they enlisted were entered at some school, college or university or hospital for the purpose of qualifying for a profession or employment. (Part III [6]).

Article 1245 (6) of the Warrant of 1914 is made applicable to the dependant of a soldier in the same way as to a widow.

Article 1246 of the same warrant is also retained as operative.

# APPENDIX III

## INCREASE OF THE PENSIONS OF SOLDIERS DISABLED, AND OF THE WIDOWS OF SOLDIERS DECEASED IN CONSEQUENCE OF FORMER WARS

A Royal Warrant (cd. 9041) dated April 17, 1918, and effective as from May 1, 1918, sanctions the increase of these awards by the following provisions—

1. **Disabled Men.** The pension paid under the warrant of 1911, or under former war warrants, to a man discharged as unfit for further service on account of wounds or injuries in former wars due to Military service, and who by reason of the disablement is now or shall hereafter be totally incapacitated from earning a livelihood, may be increased by the difference between his present rate of pension and the minimum pension which he might have received according to his rank at the time of discharge for the highest degree of disablement under the warrant of March 29, 1917, or any warrant amending it.

2. These increases are subject to the same conditions as the original pensions.

3 **Widows' Pensions.** The pensions which at the date of this warrant are being paid under the warrant of December, 1914, or under former warrants to the widows of warrant officers, non-commissioned officers and men, may be increased by such sums as will ensure to the widow by way of pension or allowance a total sum of 13*s.* 9*d.* a week, including therein any pension or allowance she may be receiving from the funds of the Royal Patriotic Fund Corporation, or from any other fund or funds which, in the opinion of the Minister of Pensions,

may have been raised by public subscription. When the widow attains the age of 45, the pension or allowance may be further increased by the weekly amount of 1*s.* 3*d.*

The foregoing is applicable only to such pensions as come within the provision of the warrant dated March 29, 1917, or amending warrants.

4. **Children.** Allowances for children which may be in course of issue may be continued under former arrangements in addition to the widow's pension.

# APPENDIX IV

## NAVAL CHEVRONS

An Admiralty Order sanctions the wearing of chevrons for service overseas or at sea since August 4, 1914, which are to be worn on uniform.

The following are eligible—

Officers and men of the Royal Navy, Royal Marines, naval forces of the Dominions, Royal Fleet Reserve, Royal Naval Reserve, Royal Naval Volunteer Reserve, and Royal Naval Auxiliary Sick Berth Reserve.

Officers and men of the Royal Naval Air Service up to April 1, 1918.

Officers and men of the mercantile marine serving under special Naval engagements in H.M. ships and auxiliaries.

Queen Alexandra's Naval Nursing Service and Reserve, members of the Women's Royal Naval Service.

Officiating ministers and civilian medical practitioners and dental surgeons who have given whole-time service.

Canteen staff borne on the books of sea-going ships.

The service for which the award is eligible is defined as follows—

'Service at sea is service in sea-going ships of war and auxiliaries; it does not include service in hulks and harbour vessels, nor in harbour craft which are tenders to such vessels, except in those which are employed in mine-sweeping. The service of men as gun's crew in defensively armed merchant ships counts as qualifying service for the award. Service oversea includes all service outside the United Kingdom, except in the case of officers and men of the Dominions Naval Forces serving

in their own country. In the case of the latter it includes all service outside their own country. Officers and men of the late Royal Naval Air Service who, although serving in the United Kingdom, were liable for service in the air for offensive or defensive purposes, may count such service as qualifying service. Service in kite balloons when embarked in ships will also count.'

The date for the award of the first chevron will be August 5, 1914, in the case of those serving at sea or abroad on that date, and in other cases the date on which the individual began or begins qualifying services defined.

Additional chevrons are to be awarded as follows—

From January 1, 1915, to December 31, 1917, inclusive, on a calendar year basis, that is, one chevron and not more than one for each of the years 1915, 1916 and 1917. The individual must have an aggregate of three months' qualifying service in the calendar year to entitle him to the award for that year. An additional chevron is not to be given for the calendar year in which the first chevron is awarded. Service cannot be added from one calendar year to another. Periods in prison, detention, or in captivity as a prisoner of war, are not to count towards the three months' qualifying service. *Note*—Should an individual have been wounded on active service and not have the necessary three months' qualifying service for the calendar year in which he was wounded, he is, nevertheless, to be awarded the chevron for that year, subject, however, to the condition that more than one chevron cannot be obtained in any one calendar year.

From January 1, 1918, onwards, one chevron for each successive aggregate period of twelve months' qualifying service. This service need not be continuous. It will include short periods of leave where the individual returns to service at sea or overseas at the conclusion to such leave. Periods of absence without leave, in prison or detention, in hospital from sickness due to avoidable causes, or in captivity as a prisoner of war, are to be excluded in calculating the twelve months required to qualify for an additional chevron. *Note*—

No service prior to January 1, 1918, is to count towards the twelve months' qualifying service.

The chevrons will be ¼ in. in width, the arms 1¼ in. long. They will be worn inverted on the right forearm. Chevrons for officers will be of silver or gold braid. The first chevron, if earned on or before December 31, 1914, will be silver; if earned on or after January 1, 1915, it will be gold, and all additional chevrons after the first will be gold. The silver chevron will be worn below the gold one. For ratings they will be of worsted embroidery of two colours—red and blue. The first chevron, if earned on or before December 31, 1914, will be red; if earned on or after January 1, 1915, it will be blue; and all additional chevrons after the first will be blue.

In the case of officers they are to be worn on the blue undress coat only.

There will be no posthumous award to fallen officers or men. The chevrons may be worn in plain clothes by officers and men who have left the service, but who would, had they remained in the service, have been entitled to wear them on uniform. In such cases application for authority to wear the chevrons must be made.

# APPENDIX V

## RATES OF CONSOLIDATED FAMILY ALLOWANCE

Rates of consolidated family allowance are considerably varied by recent amendments.

Army Order 2/1918 applies only to those soldiers who are in receipt of the ordinary rates of pay as laid down in the warrant of 1914 and subsequent warrants.

It does not apply to men in receipt of special rates of pay, i.e., men who enlisted under the terms of Army Orders 282 and 283/1914. This means that the increased rates are only applicable to the men in receipt of the ordinary rates of pay (Army Order 3/1918).

A soldier above the rank of private and below that of serjeant is classed as a private and now receives 21*s.* 6*d.* a week, and not 20*s.* 6*d.* nor 21*s.* 2*d.* as shown in Army Order 3/1918 (Army Order 39/1918).

A soldier holding the rank of serjeant receives 23*s.* 6*d.*, and not 22*s.* 6*d.* (Army Order 3/1918).

Paragraph 185 of the Separation Allowance regulation provides that the deduction made from the Civil pay of Civil servants and Government employees should be at the rate of the separation allowance issued.

This paragraph was amended by Army Order 141 of 1917, which provides that the deduction should be, in the case of a private soldier, 13*s.* 5*d.* per week from October to May, and 12*s.* per week from June to September. This amendment has now been cancelled by Army Order 2/1918, which provided that the deduction shall be 13*s.* 6*d.*

It should be noted that these figures are applicable only in the case of a private soldier; corresponding rates are applicable to men of higher rank.

When a soldier is living at home, but messes necessarily away from his home, the rates issuable in the case of the soldier and wife only continue to be those as previously issued in paragraph 175 (B) of the Separation Allowance regulations.

# APPENDIX VI

## THE MINISTRY OF NATIONAL SERVICE GRADING

Having regard to the scope of the Military Service Act (Session 2), 1918, the general directions for the guidance of Commissioners and members of Medical Boards as given in R. 24 are of vast importance.

The work of these Boards, and the purpose of their examinations, is to grade men according to their physical and mental fitness.

It is instructed that attention must be paid to—

(*a*) The man's previous health,

(*b*) His actual physical condition, and

(*c*) The work he is doing.

The grading is as follows—

**Grade 1.** This grade comprises men of the normal standard of health and strength and are capable of enduring physical exertion suitable to their age.

They must not suffer from any organic disease, with certain exceptions specified hereafter, and must have no grave physical disability or deformity. Minor defects, such as of the teeth and of eyesight, which can be removed or compensated for by artificial means, will not be regarded as disqualifications.

Grade 1 men are considered fit for general Army service.

The older men will be placed in Grade 1 if they possess the full normal physical fitness to be expected of their age. The physical training for the older men in this grade will be carried out under special medical supervision.

**Grade 2.** Men are placed in this grade who, because of some disability, do not reach the standard of Grade 1.

They are considered to be capable immediately for service at home or garrison duty abroad, and sooner or later for general service.

The older men fit for Grade 2 will possess the normal physical fitness of their age. They must not suffer from progressive organic disease, and the physical defects which prevent such men from being placed in the higher grade must not be of such a nature as to diminish seriously their physical activity. They must be able to undergo a considerable degree of physical exertion of a nature not involving severe strain.

**Grade 3.** Men in this grade will be those who, at the time of examination, are not considered fit to undergo Military training as fighting men, but will be fit for one or other of the auxiliary services connected with the Army, or to continue within the Army work on which they are already employed or its equivalent. Examples of men suitable for this grade are those with badly-deformed toes, severe flat-foot, and some cases of hernia and of varicose veins. Other instances of those who should be placed in this grade are indicated later under the headings of the various diseases and disabilities. The third grade will also include those who are fit only for clerical and other sedentary occupations, such as tailoring and boot-making.

In this grade will be placed older men with marked physical disabilities or who show evidence of disease which is not active nor of a progressive character at the time of examination. Although not fit to undergo military training they may be called upon to perform duty in Military establishments under conditions approximating to their home life and surroundings.

The correspondence between the National Service grades of fitness and the classification of men by medical categories is as follows—

| | |
|---|---|
| Grade 1 . . . . . | Category A |
| Grade 2 . . . . . | Category B (i) |
| Grade 3. Fit for auxiliary service with troops | Category B (ii) |
| Grade 3. Fit for labour . . . . | Ditto |
| Grade 4. Fit for sedentary occupation . | Category B (iii) |

**Grade 4.** In this grade will be placed those older men whose physical disabilities owing to defects or progressive disease are of such a nature as to render them totally and permanently unfit for any form of Military service.

Subject to Military requirements the older men will be posted as follows—

1. Combatant service: Home Defence Infantry, and Garrison Battalions at home and abroad. Royal Field Artillery and Royal Garrison Artillery at home.

2. Auxiliary services at home and abroad, such as: Royal Army Medical Corps, Army Service Corps, e.g., Motor and Horse Transport, Remounts, Supplies, etc., Army Ordnance Corps, Army Veterinary Corps, Inland Water Transport, and Dock, Railway Troops, Roads, and Quarries.

Men are required for the following, among many other non-combatant services—

1. 'Auxiliary service with troops.' This will include those Grade 3 men who are sufficiently active physically and mentally to accompany troops and act, for example, as Sanitary Inspectors, Batmen, Cooks, Storekeepers, Butchers, Clerks; or for various non-combatant duties such as Mechanics, Packers, and with Balloon Parties, Grooms, Drivers, Bakers, Loaders, Accountants, Storekeepers, Dispensers, Cutlers, Operating Room Attendants, Orderlies, men accustomed to the care of horses, Farriers, Shoeing Smiths, etc., etc.

2. 'Labour.' This will include the less mentally alert or older men who are fit rather to work in camps than with moving troops. These men should be able to walk a distance of five miles and be in every respect fit to do the ordinary work of a labourer. Men to be employed as Bricklayers, Masons, Carpenters, Joiners and Navvies would be included in this grade.

3. 'Sedentary Occupations.' These will include men who for any reason are unable to walk a distance of five miles. If they have had a fair education and can write legibly they can be made use of as clerks.

Appendix IV to this paper provides that the statement that a man has—

(*a*) Received treatment in a sanatorium under the National Health Insurance Commissioners or a responsible medical authority, or

(*b*) Been notified to a Medical Officer of Health under the regulations of the Local Government Board as suffering from consumption, will not in itself disqualify him from being accepted for Military service.

# APPENDIX VII

## THE SPECIAL GRANTS COMMITTEE: OFFICERS' REGULATIONS

The following regulations should be carefully noted:—

**Supplementary Grants.** Where the exceptional circumstances of the case require it the retired pay of a married, disabled officer may be supplemented by an allowance in respect of each of his children not exceeding £24 a year in addition to any educational allowance, provided that the disability is assessed at more than 50 per cent. as shown in Schedule 1 of the Royal Warrant.

Where the exceptional circumstances of the case require it, a pension payable out of public funds to the widow or dependant of an officer may be supplemented by an amount which when added to the State pension (but excluding any educational allowances granted) does not exceed the sum of £150 a year for a widow and £120 a year for a dependant.

**Educational Grants.** Awards may be made—

(*a*) In the case of a child over 5 and under 13 years of age attending a day school, of the school fees to an amount not exceeding £20 a year and a sum not exceeding £5 a year for travelling and necessary expenses.

(*b*) In the case of a child over 13 and under 21 years of age attending a day school, of the school fees to an amount not exceeding £25 a year and a sum not exceeding £10 a year for travelling and necessary expenses.

(*c*) In the case of a child under 21 years of age attending a boarding school or college necessitating residence away from home, of a sum not exceeding £50 a year.

Providing that (1) any scholarship or exhibition held

by the child shall be taken into consideration in determining the amount of any such grant; (2) attendance shall only be sanctioned at a school or institution providing higher education recognized by the Central or Local Education Authority as efficient or specially approved by such authority or by the Special Grants Committee for the purpose; (3) the payment of the grant should be conditional upon satisfactory reports being received upon the industry and conduct of the child; and (4) that the amount of any State education allowance shall be deducted from any such grant.

**Training Allowance.** Where the widow, child, or dependant of a deceased officer can be assisted by training for some employment, a grant may be made towards the expenses incurred not exceeding in any one case the sum of £75.

An education or training grant may be given in addition to any supplementary or special allowance, although the limit of amount of pre-War income specified may be exceeded.

**Where no pension is Issuable.** Where no pension is payable out of public funds, or where the pension granted is discounted on grounds other than the unworthiness of the applicant or the unsatisfactory service of the officer, and where the case is one of hardship, an allowance may be granted—

(*a*) To a disabled officer not exceeding £90 a year, with an allowance not exceeding £20 for each child.

(*b*) To a widow not exceeding £75 a year, together with an allowance not exceeding £20 for each child.

(*c*) To the dependants or dependant a sum not exceeding the amount of pre-War dependence, or the estimated amount of post-War dependence, as the case may be, with a maximum of £50 a year where there is one dependant and £75 a year where there are two or more dependants.

**Exceptional Cases.** Cases not coming within the terms of these regulations may be considered and allowances made, but no allowance may exceed the maximum which might be granted under the regulations.

In cases where the circumstances of a sailor, soldier or airman were similar to those of officers, an allowance may be granted to his widow, child or dependant, or to the man if disabled, upon the scale applicable to officers.

**Unmarried Wives and Illegitimate Children.** To the illegitimate child of an officer an allowance not exceeding 5*s.* a week may be made in addition to any education allowance that may be granted under the regulations. Provided that—

(i.) No case shall be considered unless the death or disablement of the officer was due to circumstances arising from service during the present War.

(ii.) That in considering the amount of any grant the earnings or earning capacity, the annual value of any gratuity that may have been granted, and any other income shall be considered.

**Emergency Grants.** In exceptional cases grants may be made to meet cases of temporary distress or emergency, but in no case may such grant exceed a sum of £25.

**Advances.** Advances may be made in cases of real necessity not exceeding £10 per month for more than six months. The sum advanced is recoverable from the accrued arrears of such pension or from gratuity when paid, but not otherwise.

Application for allowances or grants should be headed S.G.O., and should be addressed to The Secretary, Ministry of Pensions, Westminster House, Millbank, London, S.W.1.

# INDEX


PAGE

Absentees . . . . . 403
Addresses . . . . . 115, 409–418
  Paymasters' . . . . . 419–428
Administration, The Present . . . . 15
Advances . . . . . 56, 57, 58
Allowances:
  Attendants . . . . . 133
  Boys in Military Schools. . . . . 123
  Children, Illegitimate . . . . . 150
    Motherless . . . . . 149
    Officers' . . . . . 95
  Officers' . . . . . 109
  Temporary . . . . . 134, 434
  Separation (Army):
    Advances . . . . . 56, 57, 58
    Allotments . . . . . .71, 72
    Allotment necessary . . . . .32, 43
    Appeals . . . . . 79
    Application Forms . . . . . 40
    Birth Certificates. . . . . 32
    Children, Birth of . . . . . 42
      Dependants' . . . . . 69
      Motherless, etc. . . . 35, 49, 52, 59
      Rate-aided Institutions . . . .37, 50
    Civil Employment . . . . . 52, 56, 58
    Civil Servants . . . . . 37
    Claims, Belated . . . . . 41
    Colonial . . . . . .63–66

PAGE

Allowances, Separation (Army)—*continued:*
Composite . . . . . 52
Death of Payee, on . . . . . 40, 72
Dependants. . . . . 67–79
Disagreement, in case of (Claims). . . . 42
Discharged and Missing Men . . . 47
Family Allowance . . . . 59–63, 443
Families in Public Quarters . . . 57, 58
Furlough . . . . . 54
Hospital, Men in. . . . . 53
Increase of . . . . . 50
Invalided Soldiers . . . . . 56
Issued, when and how. . . . 31, 32, 37, 74
London . . . . . 39
Maintenance Order . . . . . 50, 70
Married Establishment, The. . . . 32
Marriage, Intention of . . . . 41
Misconduct, in case of. . . . . 39
Overpayments . . . . . 43
Payments, where made . . . . 65
Promotion . . . . . 54
Rate-aided Institutions . . . 37, 38, 50
Regulations. . . . . 55
Reserve Units . . . . . 52, 56
Scales:
Colonial . . . . . 63–66
Present, The . . . . . 33
Pre-War, The . . . . . 33
Wives and Children . . . . 34–36
Stoppages, Authorized by Army Act . . 46
Transfer on Death of Payee . . . 72
Wives, Children and Step-children . . 48
Wives in India . . . . . 55
Separated . . . . . 49
Separation (Navy) . . . . . 80
Family (Coastguard) . . . . . 90
Regulations. . . . . 84–90
Wives and Children, Scale A . . . 81
" " " Scale B . . . 82

PAGE

Allowances, Special:
Age of Soldier . . . . . 245
Aliens. . . . . 238
Billeting . . . . . 233
Canteen Committee Employees . . . 240
Cadet Units . . . . . 243, 244
Civil Employment, Soldiers . . . . 237
Clothing . . . . . 236, 351
Discharges . . . . . 244
Disturbance . . . . . 235
Families in T.F. Quarters . . . . 234
Fuel and Light . . . . . 241
Funerals . . . . . 235
Furlough . . . . . 242
Gratuities . . . . . 245
Passage Abroad . . . . . 234
Purchase Money . . . . . 236
Merchant Seamen interned, etc. . . . 234
Old Age Pensions . . . . 239, 240
Rankers . . . . . 234
Railway Warrants (Medical Exam.) . . 239
Ration . . . . . 237
Remittances, Soldiers' . . . . . 240
Supplementary:
Advances Recoverable . . . . 256
Alternative Pension (Assessment) . . 287–297
Civil Liabilities' Grants . . . 247–254
Conditions . . . . . 275
Dependants. . . . . 258, 271
Employment, Treatment and Training. . 298
Grants—Educational . . . . . 273
Emergency . . . . . 263
Etc., Regulations . . . . . 255
Gratuities . . . . . 245
Officer's, Promotion from old Army . . 254
Post-War Dependence . . . . . 271
Pensions refused or discontinued . . . 272
Rent . . . . . 257
Special Grants Committee's Reg. . . 255, 267

PAGE

Allowances, Supplementary—*continued:*
Special, where no State S.A. granted . . 260
Supplementary . . . . . 258
Treatment and Training . . . . 282
Volunteer Force . . . . . 237, 239
Widows' . . . . . 270
Wife's Allowance. . . . . 258
Artificial Limbs, Pay awaiting . . . . 136

Bounties A.O. 86–1916 . . . . . 351
A.O. 209–1916 . . . . . 352, 357
A.O. 398–1914 . . . . . 350
A.O. 409–1914 . . . . . 351
Class W. Reserve . . . . . 365
Condition of Service . . . . . 349
Men enlisted for Duration of War . . . 357
Men in Naval Units . . . . . 357
Men re-enlisted . . . . . 356
Men retained . . . . . 355
Method of Payment . . . . . 355
National Reserve . . . . . 349
Regulations . . . . . 358
Scale, The . . . . . 353
T.F. Attestations . . . . . 356
When Issuable . . . . . 352
When not Issuable . . . . . 353

Cadet Units . . . . . 243
Canteens . . . . . 240
Chelsea Commissioners . . . . . 9
Chelsea Hospital . . . . . 9
Chelsea Pensioners . . . . . 10
Children's Allowances. . . . . 149
Illegitimate . . . . . 150
Motherless . . . . . 149
Re-marriage of Mother . . . . 150
Colonial Pensions and Allowances . . . 201
Australia . . . . . 215

PAGE

Colonial Pensions and Allowances—*continued:*
Canada . . . . . 201
Newfoundland . . . . . 224
New Zealand . . . . . 219
S. Africa . . . . . 223
Commissions after Re-enlistment. . . . 109
Committees:
The Joint . . . . . 12
The Local . . . . . 12
Special Grants . . . . . 13, 255, 267
The Statutory . . . . . 11
Commutation of Pensions . . . . . 123
Compensation or Injury, Volunteers' . . . 146
Conduct, Unworthy . . . . . 123

Deductions . . . . . 327, 392
Dependants' and Widows' Pensions . . . 147
Disability, Increasing . . . . . 28
Discharges. . . . . 137, 246

Field Punishment . . . . . 394
Furlough, S.A. . . . . 54

Grants:
Civil Liabilities . . . . . 247
Educational . . . . . 273
Emergency . . . . . 263
Officers', etc. . . . . 96
Regulations governing Issue of . . . 255
Gratuities . . . . . 245
Officers (Army) . . . . . 104
,, (Navy) . . . . 168, 170 182
Widows . . . . . 148
Wound . . . . . 103
Graves, Registration of . . . . . 240

Hospital, Admission of Discharged Men . . 325
Deductions (Army) . . . . . 327

PAGE

Hospital, Admission of Discharged Men—(*continued*):
Deductions (Navy) . . . . 198, 321, 327
Furlough from . . . . . 326
Men in . . . . . 325
Payment on leaving . . . . . 326
Treatment . . . . . 326
Visitors to Men . . . . . 326

Insurance:
A.S. 183 . . . . . 310
Benefits, where not issuable . . . . 318
Contributions . . . . . 303, 305
Contributions, Civilian . . . . . 305
Discharged Men, Death, etc. . 305, 308, 312, 317–320
Maternity Benefits . . . . 307, 316, 320
Membership . . . . . 317
Munition Workers . . . . . 305, 320
Naval Ratings . . . . . 314, 315
Reserve Officers . . . . . 304
To whom the Act applies . . . 303, 315

Lunatics . . . . . 145

Medals and Distinctions . . . . 379–381
Chevrons (Naval) . . . . . 440
Chevrons for Over-seas Service . . . 383
Silver War Badge . . . . . 381
Munition Workers . . . . . 344–347

National Reserve:
A.C.I. 2429–1916 . . . . . 368
Classification . . . . . 359, 360
Class "P" . . . . . 364
Class "T" . . . . . 367
Class "W" . . . . . 365–371
Class "W" Miners. . . . . 368
Class "W" Munition Workers . . . 368

PAGE

National Reserve—*continued*:

Pay, etc., on Mobilization . . 360, 362, 364
Extra . . . . . 362
Flying Corps . . . . . 364
Reserve Units, Additional . . . 364–391
Special Reservists . . . . . 361
National Service, Concessions to Discharged Men 396
National Service Grading M.S.A. (Session 2–1918) 445
Naval Pay, Increase of . . . . . 333
Naval Pensions (Men) . . . . . 189
Compassionate Allowances . . . . 177
Educational Allowances . . . . . 177
Dependants' Allowances . . . . . 191
Fleet Auxiliaries . . . . . 190
Hospital Deductions . . . . . 198
Injury . . . . . 190
Mercantile Marine . . . . . 194
Naval Discipline Act . . . . 187, 198
Naval Notes . . . . . 200
Royal Naval Reserve Trawlers . . . 197
Service . . . . . 171
Nurses and Women's Work . . . . 226
Allowances, Nursing Service . . . . 229
Disablement Pension Scale . . . . 227
Cooks . . . . . 231
Q.A.I.M.N.S. . . . . 228–231
V.A.D. . . . . 229

Officers (Army):

Allowances . . . . . 109–112
Commutation of Pension. . . . . 114
Demobilization . . . . . 113
Disablement, First Schedule . . . . 102
Gratuities . . . . . 96, 104
Wound . . . . . 103, 104
Pay, Increase of . . . . . 115–122
Retired . . . . . 102–106

PAGE

Officers (Army)—*continued:*

Pensions (Army), The Warrant . . . 92
Allowances for Children . . . . 95
Definitions . . . . . 101
Dependants. . . . . 97–101
Ministry of, Instructions . . . . 92
Recalled to Service . . . . 107,108
Re-enlisted Men commissioned . . . 109
Special Grants Committee's Regulations . 449
Treatment, Grants during . . . . 96
Widows . . . . . 122
Widows and Children, Second Schedule . 103
Widows, Information for . . . . 122
Officers (Navy) . . . . . 155–188
Allowances, Compassionate . . . . 177
Educational . . . . . 177
Compensation Scheme (Merchant Service) 192–195
Disablement Schedule and Children's Allowances 159–167
Deductions . . . . . 181
Dependants . . . . . 155
Desertion . . . . . 187
Marine Officers . . . . . 169–176
Pay, Retired . . . . . 166
Rank, Acting . . . . . 189
Recalled. . . . . 175
Regulations . . . . . 179–187
Retiring . . . . . 187
Royal Naval Reserve . . . . . 186
Royal Transport Service . . . 180, 181
Scales . . . . . 176, 181, 188
Schedule . . . . . 170
Service . . . . . 184–188
Taxation . . . . . 187
Warrant. . . . . 177–188
Warrant Rank . . . . . 161
Widows and Children, etc. . . . 155–159
Widows' Scale . . . . . 167

Pay and Allowances: PAGE
Agricultural Companies . . . . 336, 339
Artificial Limbs, awaiting . . . . 136
Engineering Quarrying Companies . . . 337
Increase of (Army) . . . . 329–333
(Naval) . . . . . 333
Military Police . . . . . 343
Non-Combatant Corps . . . . . 340
Munition Workers . . . . 344–347
Proficiency . . . . . 333
Special Rates of . . . . . 341–343
Transfers . . . . . 337, 338
Transport Workers Battalion . . . 336, 338
Working . . . . . 336
Pensions and Allowances:
Adequacy of . . . . . .18–30
Appeals. . . . . 147
Attendants . . . . . 133
Alternative . . . . 126, 148, 287, 295
Artificial Limbs awaiting . . . . 136
Colonial . . . . . 201
Chelsea . . . . . 10
Children's Allowances . . . . . 149
Motherless . . . . . 149
Re-marriage of Mother . . . . 150
Claim to . . . . . 135
Classification . . . . . 125
Date of Award . . . . . 134
Dependants . . . . . 151–154
Disablement . . . . . 124–136
Scale . . . . . 127
Discharged Soldiers. . . . . 137–142
Financial Instructions . . . . . 143
Former Wars, Increase of . . . . 438
Gratuities . . . . . 133
Lunatics . . . . . 145
Ministry of . . . . . 10, 14, 15, 22
Naval (Men) . . . . . 184
Officer's (Army), The Warrant . . . 92
(Navy) . . . . . 155

PAGE

Pensions and Allowances—*continued :*
Paupers . . . . . 145
Permanent . . . . . 126, 135
Retiring . . . . . 189
Service . . . . . 135, 142, 143
Treatment, Teeth, etc., Discharged Men . 126, 137
Volunteers . . . . . 146
War Department Vessels. . . . 195, 197
Warrant, The Old and New, a Comparison . 129
Widows and Dependants. . . . 147, 148
Pre-War Earnings . . . . . 270
Prisoners . . . . . 270
Purchase Money . . . . . 236

Re-engagements and Retentions :
Army Act, Section 84 . . . . . 372
D Section Reservists . . . . . 373
Leave of Absence . . . . . 376
Long Service and Good Conduct Medal . . 375
Rank on Re-enlistment . . . . . 375
Service with the Colours. . . . . 373
Service Pension . . . . 374, 376, 377
Time-expired Men, Furlough . . . . 374
Reforms needed . . . . . 16–30
Re-marriage, Children . . . . . 150
Re-marriage, Duration of Pension . . . 153
Royal Air Force . . . . . 429
Regulations, Special . . . . . 238
Taxation, Naval Pensions . . . . 187
Training of War Widows of Soldiers and Sailors 231
Treatment and Training . . . . . 276
Allowances . . . . . 282
Aural Board, Special . . . . . 301
Demobilization . . . . . 302
Employment of Disabled Men . . . 298
Institutional Treatment, Committee on. . 302
Neurasthenics, Home of Recovery for . . 300
Sir Henry Norman's Report . . . 297
Tuberculosis, Men suffering from . . 238, 239

PAGE

Tuberculosis . . . . . 143

Volunteers, Compensation for Injury . . . 146

War Department Vessels, Crews of . . 195, 197
War Organizations and Committees . . 401–418
War Legislation :
Absentees . . . . . 395
Army Act, The . . . . . 392
Courts Emergency Act . . . . . 386
Death Duties Act . . . . . 392
Debts . . . . . 392
Execution of Trusts Act . . . . 391
Field Punishment . . . . . 394
Increase of Rent, etc., Act . . . . 388
National Service, Concession to Discharged Men 396
Retentions in Time of War . . . . 394
Warrant, The Amended . . . . 431–437
The New Pay . . . . . 16
The Old, a Comparison . . . . . 139
Royal 1914 . . . . . 20
Widows and Dependants . . . . 147–154
Allowances, Children, etc. . . . . 149
Gratuity . . . . . 148
Officers' and Warrant Officers' . . . 122
Pensions . . . . . 147
Army, Alternative . . . . . 148
Temporary . . . . . 148
Naval. . . . . 191
Training. . . . . 231
Allowances . . . . . 148
Women's Work and Nurses . . . . 226
Allowances . . . . . 229
Cooks . . . . . 231
Disablement Pension . . . . . 227
Q.A.I.M.N.S. . . . . 229
Women employed abroad . . . . 320

*Printed by* Butler & Tanner, *Frome and London.*

**RETURN TO: CIRCULATION DEPARTMENT**
**198 Main Stacks**

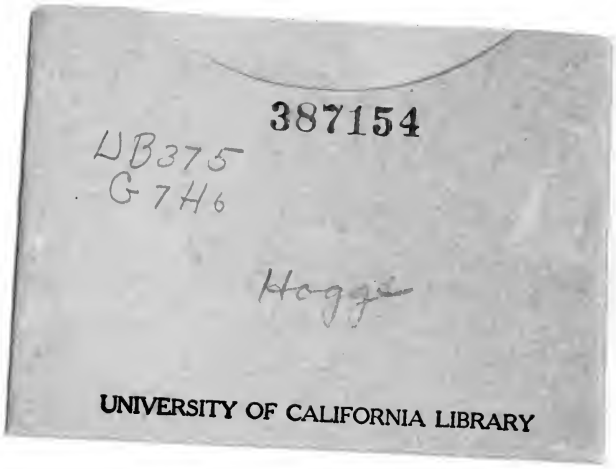
| LOAN PERIOD 1<br>Home Use | 2 | 3 |
|---|---|---|
| 4 | 5 | 6 |

**ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS.**
Renewals and Recharges may be made 4 days prior to the due date.
Books may be renewed by calling 642-3405.

**DUE AS STAMPED BELOW.**

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| | | |
| OCT 2 8 2002 | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |

FORM NO. DD6
50M 5-02

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, BERKELEY
Berkeley, California 94720–6000

YB 04172